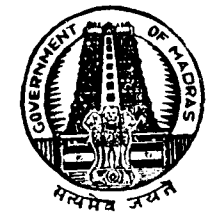


THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL



©

GOVERNMENT OF MADRAS
1959



JANUARY - MARCH 1959

VOLUME X, No. 1

Telegrams : VASANTA

Telephone : 25

THE VASANTA MILLS LIMITED

REGISTERED OFFICE:
SINGANALLUR COIMBATORE DT.

Authorised Capital ... Rs. 30,00,000

Paid-up Capital ... Rs. 25,50,000

SPINDLES: 44,424

LOOMS: 270

Managing Agents:

R. K. SHANMUKHAM CHETTY & BROS.

SPINNING:

Ring yarn of all counts ranging from 20's to 40's

SINGLE

CHEESES

STAPLE FIBRE

AND

DOUBLE

CONES

MERCERISED

MANUFACTURING:

GADA

MULLS

LONGCLOTH

AND

DHOTIES

TOWELS

TERRY TOWELS



THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

(Issued under the authority of the Inspector-General of Police, Madras)

Editor:

G. V. Narayanan, M.A., I.P.S.

Assistant Editors:

S. Murugan, B.A.

P. Seetharaman

M. V. Seshadri, B.A., B.L.

69358.

FOR EVERYTHING IN:

**Electrical Electronic and Technical
Equipment**

TELEPHONES—TELEGRAPH INSTRUMENTS
RADIO COMMUNICATION—RADIO
BROADCASTING EQUIPMENTS

TEST INSTRUMENTS FOR EDUCATION
RESEARCH AND INDUSTRIES

MOTWANE PRIVATE LTD

INCORPORATING

**CHICAGO TELEPHONE & RADIO CO
PRIVATE LTD**

(Established 1919)

PIONEERS OF RADIO SOUND SYSTEMS
LOUDSPEAKERS AND ELECTRONICS

196 Mount Road

MADRAS 2

P. O. Box No. 396

Telephone: 85357

Telegram: "CHIPHONE"

**Speech delivered by the Home Minister, Govern-
ment of India on 21-12-1958 at "Raj Bhavan,"
Guindy**

(Introductory Speech by the Inspector-General of Police)

YOUR EXCELLENCY, HON'BLE PANTJI, HOME MINISTER TO GOVERNMENT OF
INDIA, HON'BLE MINISTERS AND FRIENDS,

We are most grateful to our beloved Home Minister for kindly meeting us today immediately after an arduous journey. It only exemplifies the interest he takes in our welfare as well as in our activities. The Police in Madras has done its best during the last year and a half. Political parties had tried to twist facts and misrepresent them as a means to charge the administration. Indeed many individual failings of the Police Officers were exaggerated and publicised in order to malign the Department and to some extent also to blackmail it. I must say that with the personal support of the Home Minister and the Government of Madras and with determined efforts by all the officers of the State to act correctly irrespective of the wishes of the vociferous section, we have been able to win the confidence of the public, who have now realised that the Madras Police is trying its best to serve them efficiently and honestly.

band of officers. The younger ones who man most of the districts now in the State, with experience and correct orientation, I am sure, will do well. Our work in the maintenance of law and order, crime control and intelligence collection has been indeed very good during the last year and is an improvement over the previous year's achievement.

In this connection I must mention that there is a feeling among the Police of all ranks, and more so, among the I.P.S. Officers that their hardships have not been understood, and that there is no general appreciation of the arduous nature of their duties and their emoluments and conditions of service have not been improved. I, on my part, am conscious of the personal efforts made by the Home Minister to improve the service conditions of the Indian Police Service. I am sure that with his personality in the Union Cabinet and his popularity among the public, our interests

We have a keen and enthusiastic

CONTENTS

	PAGE
1. EDITORIAL	1
2. SPEECH DELIVERED BY THE HOME MINISTER, GOVERNMENT OF INDIA, ON 21ST DECEMBER 1958 AT "RAJ BHAVAN," GUINDY	3
3. SPEECH DELIVERED BY SRI S. BALAKRISHNA SHETTY, I.P., I.-G. OF POLICE, MADRAS, ON THE OCCASION OF THE FOREST DEPARTMENT CENTENARY CELEBRATIONS	10
4. POLICE AND THE PRESS (F. V. Arul, I.P.)	19
5. POLICE AND THE PUBLIC (E. K. Swamy, Ph.D., J.P.)	31
6. PIDANERI MURDER CASE (T. S. Sivanandam, B.A.)	34
7. THE COAL SELLER MURDER (K. Sreekumar Menon)	40
8. TRAFFIC PROBLEMS (P. Paramaguru, M.A., B.L.)	48
9. THE DISTRICT POLICE FORCE, CHINGLEPUT DISTRICT (K. Chenthamarai)	55
10. PHOTOGRAPHY IN CRIME DETECTION (P. Seetharaman)	60
11. VI—ALL-INDIA POLICE DUTY MEET	63
12. INDO-AMERICAN ATHLETIC MEET	70
13. LEGAL NOTES : (4)	71
14. CRIME STATEMENT	

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

Vol. X

JANUARY - MARCH, 1959

No. 1

EDITORIAL

We announce with pleasure the sanction by Government for the supply of one copy of the *Madras Police Journal* for each Police Station in the State at Government cost. The copies are meant for the education of the constabulary. In the new pattern of our force, a broadened outlook on the part of every member of the force is a prime necessity. We trust that our Sub-Inspectors and Inspectors will educate the average Police Constable and Head Constable with the help of the material contained in the *Journal* and inculcate progressive ideas in them, so that they may learn to discharge their duties towards the public as friend, counsellor and guide in the best manner possible and in the best traditions of our force.

The Centenary celebrations of our Force are fixed for the last week of August 1959 and the first week of September 1959, so as to mark exactly one hundred years from the coming into force of the Madras District Police Act Act XXIV of 1859). We are happy to announce that to commemorate the occasion there will be a special number of the *Madras Police Journal*. Contributions of articles and photographs for the special number are solicited from leaders.

SPEECH DELIVERED

BY

SRI S. BALAKRISHNA SHETTY, I.P.,

Inspector-General of Police, Madras, on the occasion of the Forest Department Centenary Celebrations

MR. BHADRAN AND GENTLEMEN,

I am indeed very happy to be with you on this memorable occasion. As you all know, we the Police are also celebrating the Centenary of the Madras Police administration this year. This perhaps only shows that the two services came to be organized simultaneously in this State and that they have grown side by side during the last hundred years. It is also significant that the first senior official in charge of the forests was a Policeman. Thus, the Forest Department and the Police have been very closely connected from the earliest days in the effective enforcement of Forest Laws. Even now it is necessary for the two services to work jointly for the preservation of forest wealth. It is, therefore, imperative that the Police and the Forest Officers know the organisational set-up and powers of officers at different levels in order to have effective and prompt liaison.

2. In this talk, I will deal with the general command, organisational and administrative set-up as well as the

functions of the officers at different levels, their relationship with the other departments and the international Police Organisation, in that order.

The chain of commands: Under the Constitution of India, Law and Order is essentially a State subject, but the powers are also concurrent with the Central Government. Each of the States has a legislative assembly, elected on adult franchise and a State Cabinet responsible to the assembly. The President of India, the chief executive head, appoints a Governor to each State who in effect is only a constitutional head of the State. The State Ministry, for all practical purposes, is the real executive power and the Chief Minister is responsible for law and order in the State. He is at times assisted by a Home Minister. The executive head of the Police under the Home Minister is the Inspector-General of Police. He is a professional Police Officer. The entire Police force within the State is nationalised and is under the single command of the Inspector-General of Police. He has

the full power to deploy the forces, recruit officers upto the rank of the Sub-Inspector of Police, order promotions, etc. He is assisted in administrative work in the headquarters by one or two officers of the rank of Superintendents of Police known as the Assistant Inspectors-General of Police.

Besides, he has under him Deputy Inspectors-General of Police in charge of conveniently arranged ranges—groups of 4 or 5 districts. The Deputy Inspector-General of Police mainly supervises the work of the Superintendents of Police, without in any way interfering with their authority and at the same time ensuring that the standard of work is maintained at a high level and the relationship between the Police and the magistracy is cordial. He frequently visits the districts and ensures that the work is conducted satisfactorily. He has the power to transfer any officer below the rank of an Inspector. He hears appeals for all the ranks who are punished by the Superintendents of Police. The Deputy Inspector-General's work is a very responsible one because it is on his guidance, help, advice and support that the Superintendents of Police are able to meet the varying situations. The Deputy Inspector-General of Police also maintains a close supervision over the training of young sub-divisional officers as well as newly promoted or recruited Inspectors or Sub-Inspectors. When any serious situation develops in a district, the

Deputy Inspector-General of Police usually makes that district his headquarters till the trouble is over. The number of ranges in each State depends on its size and requirements. The Deputy Inspector-General of Police has under his control one or more battalions of the Provincial Armed Reserve also.

In the States of West Bengal, Bombay, Madras and now in Hyderabad, the Inspector-General has a Commissioner of Police in charge of the capital city. He is usually the seniormost Deputy Inspector-General and is also the District Magistrate for the city. He can therefore correspond directly with the Government on routine matters.

The Inspector-General also has a Deputy Inspector-General of Police, C.I.D. at his headquarters. This Deputy Inspector-General of Police has some three or four Superintendents of Police who are responsible for the collection of intelligence, investigation of difficult, extensive and complicated crime, enquiry into cases of corruption by the State Government officials, collection of intelligence regarding prohibition, etc. He has also at times the Railway Police and the Police wireless grid under him.

The head of the District Executive Police is the Superintendent of Police. He is responsible technically to the District Collector for maintaining law and order in the District but really he

is controlled and directed by the regular chain of command, i.e., the Deputy Inspector-General of Police and the Inspector-General of Police. He has under him 6 or 7 Subdivisional Officers, either members of the I.P.S. or of the State Police Service. The sub-division is a compact unit in the District. The subdivisional officers whenever possible, investigate cases of a grave nature, visiting scenes of crime and supervising the enquiry. They also investigate important cases of lesser gravity which may occur near their camping places.

The Subdivisional Officer has under him 3 or 4 Circle Inspectors who are responsible for the supervision of the work of 4 or 5 Sub-Inspectors of Police each. Each Sub-Inspector is in charge of a Police Station and is assisted by a few Junior Sub-Inspectors, Head Constables and about 20 to 30 Constables. The Sub-Inspector and his staff are fully responsible for the investigation of all crimes occurring in the station limits and for maintaining law and order.

Thus, in an average State, the Inspector-General of Police has under him six or seven Deputy Inspectors-General of Police, about 20 Superintendents of Police, 120 Subdivisional Officers, 300 Inspectors, 1,800 Sub-Inspectors and about 35,000 policemen besides about 70,000 village police. At the present moment this force is not fully activated. The Superinten-

dent of Police has under him 6 or 7 Subdivisional Officers, about 15 Circle Inspectors, 60 to 70 Sub-Inspectors and about 1,800 to 2,000 lower ranks.

Administrative Set-up: After the recent reorganisation of States, we have fourteen States and 6 other units directly administered by the Central Government. The officers in different States with the same rank have the same status irrespective of the size of the State or the strength of the Police Force under them. This, however, does not apply to the centrally administered units.

Criminal administration under the Indian law is centred round the Collector. Each district is divided into several police stations, the number depending on the size of the district, population and the criminality of the area. While an odd district may have only 8 or 10, most of the districts have about 50 to 60 police stations. In Madras State, the districts are big and so the average number of Police Stations in a district is about 50 to 55. The population in the jurisdiction covered by a Police Station varies from 20,000 to 1,30,000. An average sized Police Station has normally a population of about one lakh and its jurisdiction extends to about 100 square miles. The Police Station is the smallest independent unit in the police administration of a district. It may, however, have attached to it

a few outposts of varying strength to give protection to outlying areas. All preventive and other police work emanate from the Police Station. The officer in charge is usually a Sub-Inspector while some stations in Bihar are manned by Inspectors of Police. Each village has a village munsif with one or more Talayaris. They are part-time Government servants and are responsible for reporting all the happenings in the villages such as commission of crime, movements of suspicious characters, deaths, etc., to the Police Stations.

The set-up of Police Administration in India works from bottom upwards in a pyramidal form. The criminal administration in a district is practically autonomous. All cognizance, investigation and trials of the crime are completed by the Police, Magistrates and the Judges in the district. There is no distinction between the Judicial and Law and Order Police and the entire police force in a district is in uniform. The personnel in Police Stations are responsible for both the investigation and the prevention of crime. In each district, there is separate prosecuting staff, sometimes recruited from among the police and sometimes from the Bar. They are responsible for the prosecution of cases before the Magistrates and Judges. In most districts there are separate traffic staff trained for the purpose. All the branches of the Police however

operate under the officer in charge of the station. The entire Police in a Police Station are fully armed but do not normally carry their arms with them. In addition to this law and order police, every district has an Armed Reserve depending on the size and requirements of the district. On an average, a district has about 4 to 5 companies totalling about 4 to 500 men. These forces carry 303 magazine rifles. The officers carry revolvers. Each district has its own transport of about 20 jeeps, pick-up vans and bigger vehicles. There is also a separate police hospital at most of the District Headquarters to look after the policemen and their families.

The policing of Railways within the State is a responsibility of the State Government and therefore that of the Inspector-General of Police. Usually, there is a Superintendent of Police for every 1,200 miles of the Railway covered by about 15 to 20 police stations. The jurisdiction of the Railway Police cuts across the boundaries of several districts. Preventive work in this area is now done by a separate force called the Security Force which is under the Central Government. In port areas, there is a separate police which comes under the Commissioner of Police or the Inspector-General of Police. This, in short, is the general set-up of the State Police. There may be slight variations from State to State according to local requirements.

BHAWOO KASHINATH & Co., (Madras)

No. 4, PATULLA ROAD, MADRAS-2

Government & Railway Clothing Contractors,

Suppliers of Waterproof Garments,

all kinds of Head Wears,

metal buttons etc.

FOR ALL YOUR REQUIREMENTS OF HOSIERY GOODS SUCH AS

Jerseys, Socks, Stockings,
Gloves, Vests, Hosetops etc.

PLEASE CONTACT

The Swadeshi Mfg. Syndicate Ltd.

HIGH CLASS HOSIERY MANUFACTURERS
GOVERNMENT & MILITARY CONTRACTORS
CIVIL LINES, LUDHIANA

Tele { Gram : "SYNDICATE"
Phone : 46

DALMIA CEMENT

THE BRAND OF QUALITY

USED EXTENSIVELY IN CENTRAL &
STATE GOVERNMENT PROJECTS

BOTH BIG & SMALL

DALMIA CEMENT

HAS ESTABLISHED A REPUTATION AND DURABILITY



Other quality products :

Insulators
Refractories
Sanitary Wares (Highly glazed)
Stoneware Pipes (for underground drainage)
Reinforced Cement Concrete Pipes



Dalmia Cement (Bharat) Limited
DALMIAPURAM
(Tiruchirapalli District)

Managing Agents :

M/s. Hari Brothers Private Limited New Delhi

The Inspector-General of Police has under him the Provincial Armed Reserve. The Provincial Armed Reserve of Uttar Pradesh is 14 Battalions strong and of Madras is 5. This Reserve is usually distributed in various ranges and is meant to be deployed in times of emergencies where the district administration breaks down and is unable to cope up with the particular situation with its normal complement of officers and men. The standard of training of the Provincial Armed Constabulary is really high and this force often acts in support of the army and has been praised for its efficiency. It is armed with 303 magazine rifles, Sten and Bren guns. It has its own wireless unit and transport.

Recruitment to the State Police is done at 3 levels, viz., constables, Sub-Inspectors and Deputy Superintendents of Police, the last being a commissioned rank. Appointment to the rank of Head Constable or Inspector is made entirely by promotion. There is good prospect for good educated constables to be promoted to the rank of Sub-Inspectors and Inspectors. Appointments as Deputy Superintendents are made by the State Government on selection in consultation with the Madras Public Service Commission. 66% of the posts are usually filled up by promotion from the rank of Inspectors, again in consultation with the Public Service Commission. All recruits to the rank of constables

must have passed middle school examination, must have good physique and should be free from any disease. Constables to be promoted to the rank of A.S.Is. and S.Is. must be matriculates. For a directly recruited S.I., the minimum educational qualification is Intermediate. The directly recruited S.Is. and constables are trained in the Provincial Training College. Constables on recruitment are usually sent to the school for a period of 6 to 8 months during which period they are trained in drill, musketry and police duties. Constables are also eligible for promotion as Head Constables after a period of 3 to 5 years of service. The Sub-Inspectors and Deputy Superintendents of Police are trained for a year in the school and then for about 6 months in the field before they are given independent charges. There is a little variation in the pay of all ranks in different States and efforts are being made to bring them on a par. All Police Officers above the rank of Dy.S.Ps. such as A.S.Ps., S.Ps., D.Is.G., and C.P. and the I.-G. belong to the I.P.S. which is one of the two All-India services—the other being the I.A.S.

In some States, the Fire Service Branch is also controlled by the I.-G. of Police, though in bigger cities like Calcutta, Bombay and Delhi there is an independent organisation either directly under the Government or under the Corporation. In all areas where

no properly constituted Fire Service Branch exists, the Police are responsible for fire-fighting. Often prohibition work is also entrusted to the Police. Besides the normal work of prevention and suppression of crime, the police in India has also the responsibility of enforcement of social laws such as the Suppression of Immoral Traffic Act. They are also to deal with the various problems created by natural calamities like floods, cyclones and collaborate with the activities of social service units.

The Special Branch which works under the D.I.G., C.I.D. deals as I stated earlier, mainly with political matters. Though the officers are all drawn from the ranks of the ordinary police, this branch does not do regular police work and the officers do not wear uniform. It takes over the investigation of all political offences and keeps the Government informed of important political developments. In short, the C.I.D. acts as the eyes and ears of Government. This branch takes completely an independent and objective attitude about the political parties, whether it be Congress, which is the ruling party in all States except Kerala or the Communist party which is the main opposition party. Any change in the Government will not affect the work of the police force in anyway.

There are two awards—the President's Police Medal for distinguished

service and the Police Medal for meritorious service. These medals are also given for gallantry. The President's Police Medal for gallantry is given for the highest acts of bravery, and for distinguished services is awarded for outstanding work extending over a period of 20 to 25 years. The police medal for meritorious service is awarded for exceptionally meritorious work for 15 years or more. A special pay is attached to the awards for gallantry for the lower ranks. The Government of India have got special rates of pension for persons incapacitated due to injuries received in the execution of duties and for widows and dependants of police officers who are killed on duty. The total stipendiary police force all over India numbers 4,51,000. The average works out to one policeman per 790 of the population and to 2.5 square miles. This is perhaps the lowest proportion anywhere in the world. In Madras the proportion of policemen to the population is still lower and the average number of offences investigated by each policeman is 14.49, which is twice as much as anywhere else in India.

The Intelligence Bureau at Delhi is a Central Co-ordinating Unit for police work. The officers of the I.B. are on loan from the State Police. The I.B. is the link between the Indian Police and the United Nations Social Services Division and it initiates work on juvenile delinquency and social

work and aftercare of prisoners as well as suppression of immoral traffic. The Central Police Training College at Mt. Abu and the Central Detective Training School in Calcutta and the Central Forensic Institute for medico-legal studies are the other police establishments run by the Government of India. The Special Police Establishment deals with the investigation of corruption among Central Government employees. Our work both in the intelligence field and the investigation side of international crime has received approbation from the highest quarters both in India and outside. The strength of the police force, and communication and other facilities at its disposal have not yet come to the same standard as in western countries. Until we attained Independence, the Indian Police Force however was the organ of a foreign Government and had to execute its policies. During the freedom struggle, the Police had to clash with the nationalist forces and had therefore acquired a certain amount of unpopularity. Police officers recruited in England also were comparatively less educated and therefore their approach, conception and execution of duties left much to be desired. The present Indian Police, as has been mentioned earlier, is completely nationalised and works solely for the nation. Its officers are selected in the same competitive examination along with the other All-India Service, the I.A.S. The efficiency of our police

force and the standard of its investigation with limited sources at its command are comparable to that of any in any of the advanced European countries. A large number of officers have been deputed from time to time to be attached to the Scotland Yard and other Police establishments in the U.K. and the Prefecture in France and other advanced organisations in various countries and improvement is carried on where necessary on the basis of such study.

The Indian Police is a member of the I.C.P.O.—the International Confederation of Police Organisations of the World. Contributions by our representatives have been held in very high esteem by the other members of this august body and some of our units have earned their unstinted praise for tracking down international smugglers and narcotics traffickers.

So much about the police set-up. Now let us see how the Forest and the Police departments could collaborate for mutual advantage.

I have been told that in the early days, the function of the Forest Department was mainly the preservation of the forest wealth. Since then, however, the Forest Department has undertaken development, regeneration and other aspects of forestry. The police, no doubt, are responsible in general for the maintenance of law and order. They are jointly responsi-

ble with the officers of the forest department for the enforcement of forest laws. While for the police, detection and prevention of violations of forest laws is one of the several branches they have to deal with, it is perhaps the main duty of the forest department to deal with such offences. We feel that the violators of forest laws are not professional habitual criminals and do not normally extend their operations beyond the forests. As such we consider that they are not such a menace to the society at large as the other criminals. So the police, understaffed and overworked as they are, usually give priority to the more important, professional and more heinous crimes over the investigation of forest offences. The enforcement of the forest laws, therefore, it should be clearly understood, gentlemen, is mainly your responsibility. When your department wants any help due to the enormity of the crime or the aggressive nature of the criminals, we will be very willing to come to your assistance. If forest laws are to be enforced effectively, corruption among the officials in the forest department and the police has to be eradicated. It is common knowledge in the villages that forest offences cannot be committed without the active connivance of the forest officials and the approbation of the police. So it should be our endeavour to eradicate corruption. It is also necessary to make the local officials fully responsi-

ble for the successful enforcement of forest laws. They should be made to understand that if large scale offences take place in an area, it is a reflection on the efficiency of the local enforcement staff. We also know that these laws cannot be enforced without the active co-operation of the people and therefore we should jointly strive to make them conscious of their responsibility and to enlist their support. We realise that both these tasks are by no means easy. We, the police, have been trying for long to implement these two tasks and we know that the progress has been very slow and results achieved comparatively small. But that should not deter us from pursuing our objective.

Once again, gentlemen, let me in conclusion thank you for giving me this opportunity to explain our set-up to you. I hope that this clarification will not only help both our departments to maintain the extremely cordial relations that has existed between the officials of the two departments, but also will make mutual departmental co-operation easier. You must have read the reports of various eminent personalities including that of the Hon'ble Mohamed Ebrahim and his colleagues from the U.P., cataloguing the handicaps of the Indian Police, such as lack of adequate manpower, poor pay of the constabulary, poor housing, hard conditions of work, continuous public accusation, etc., and how in spite of

all these handicaps they have been turning out exceptionally meritorious work. You should also have known by now how understaffed and ill-equipped we are, compared to the police forces in the more advanced countries of the West.

But I can assure you that the work turned out by the Indian Policeman can compare favourably with the best in the world. I am not making this assertion merely for the purpose of morale-building. I have been working in close collaboration with the various forces in the advanced countries of the West and I know how favourably our men compare with them. I am told by those in authority that the standard of work turned out by the Forest departments of India

and particularly of Madras is also as good as in any other country.

Gentlemen, let me once again assure you that the police will always come forward with any assistance that you may require in enforcing forest laws effectively and I am sure that the development of forestry in Madras will not suffer for want of co-operation between our departments. With the long traditions of efficiency that the two departments have built up in this State and with the new spurt of enthusiasm on either side by the enthusiastic and well-meaning staff, the proper enforcement of forest laws in this State, I assert, is fully assured.

Thank you.

REQUIESCAT IN PACE

We are grieved to learn that Mr. E. S. TREASURE, M.B.E., late of the Indian Police, died about two years* ago while out in Nigeria.

Our sympathies go to the family of Mr. TREASURE.

Gone, But Remembered.

Don't spend your life in anticipation, in determining to do great things when you have the time. The present time has an advantage over the future because it is our very own. We may lay in a stock of pleasures as we would lay in a stock of wine; but if we defer the tasting of them too long, we find that both are soured by age.

POLICE AND THE PRESS

A lecture delivered at the Police Training College, Vellore

BY

SRI F. V. ARUL, B.A., I.P., (Commissioner of Police, Madras)

It is axiomatic to say that the police purpose cannot be achieved without public support and co-operation. In order to secure and maintain good public relations the police must establish satisfactory contacts with the individual citizen and also seek to influence the large majority of the people with whom it may not be possible to come into personal contact. It is the latter function with which we are concerned today, and the only satisfactory way in which the general public can be contacted is through the press. Our subject today therefore is "The Police and the Press."

The point arises immediately whether the police force which has the best press relations is the most popular and conversely whether the police force which is popular with the public has achieved that position merely by maintaining good relations with the press. For example, the British Police is without doubt one which enjoys the greatest amount of public support and good will. Is this due to the fact that the British Police maintains excellent relations with the press? The answer is yes and no. Good press relations is only part of the

answer. Why then is the British Police so popular with the public? A certain official has stated that the excellent relations which always prevailed in England between the police and the community are due in large measure to the fact that the police are drawn from the people and have as their duty to serve the people. This explanation does not get us very far for it is difficult to see from whom the police could be drawn but from the people and many officials who have as their duty to serve the people are not popular. A historian has sought to give an explanation by saying that the British Police are popular because they are kind and helpful. It is true that the British Police have a long and splendid tradition of patience and courtesy but the explanation is not completely a satisfactory one because it does not explain how the British Police can afford to be kind. The truth is that the popularity of the British Police is due to the fact that they enforce laws which are acceptable by and large to the majority of the people. This in turn is due to two causes. Firstly, the laws have been enacted by a democratic process in a

country where the common man understands what is being legislated and, secondly, the police do not enforce unpopular laws such as the Fuel and Price Controls, the enforcement of which is undertaken by special officers of the Ministries concerned. The third reason for the popularity of the British Police is that the British people are law-abiding with a fairly high sense of social responsibility. Thus it should be clear to you that good press relations is not the only answer to the matter of popularity. It is at the same time a very important factor because it is the mass medium which can be used to influence the large majority of the public with whom the police may not come into contact. The press has undoubtedly a tremendous capacity for moulding public opinion and it is therefore necessary for the police to contact the press consciously and continuously.

I do not wish to convey the impression that you must maintain relations with the press promiscuously. I must straightaway bring to your notice that you are members of a disciplined force and that you are governed by the Madras Subordinate Police Officers Conduct Rules which has been published as an annexure to the Police Standing Orders. You will find that according to Rule 16, no police officer shall except in accordance with any special or general order of the Government or any instructions of the Inspector-General of Police or Com-

missioner of Police communicate directly or indirectly any official document or information to the press. Rule 17 also lays down that no police officer shall except with and during the continuance of the previous sanction of the Government own in whole or in part or conduct or participate in the editing or management of any newspaper or other periodical publication. I also draw your attention to Rule 18 which stipulates that no police officer shall in any document which he publishes anonymously or in any anonymous communication to the press criticise the policy or action of Government intemperately or unreasonably, that a police officer shall in respect of any such publication or communication be subject to the provisions of Rule 16 and that a police officer may not become an accredited correspondent of a newspaper without the permission in writing of the Inspector-General of Police or Commissioner of Police. Rule 19 lays down that no police officer shall have any document published under his own name or in any communication make to the press under his own name any statement of fact or opinion which is capable of embarrassing (a) the State Government in its relations with the Union Government, (b) the Union Government in its relations with any foreign country. It is also enjoined on every police officer who intends to publish any document under his own name or to make any communication to the

press under his own name containing statements in respect of which any doubt as to the application of the restrictions imposed by Sub-Rule (1) may arise shall submit to the Inspector-General of Police a copy or draft of the document which he intends to publish in the press and shall thereafter act in accordance with such orders as may be passed by the Inspector-General of Police. I quote these rules in order to refresh your memory so that you may not default in this respect when you go out to start your careers in the districts.

Let us now get down to the subject proper of "The Police and the Press." The press in its search for news has its eyes fastened closely on the work of the police. News is the bread and butter of the press. By giving news it attracts the interest of the public, sells its papers and gains circulation. Broader coverage means higher advertising rates and these bring in the really substantial revenue of the press. Nothing is more fascinating to man's curiosity than the stories of human interest uncovered by the police. They are the stories of the plots, incidents, feuds, successes and passions of mankind. Criminal offences occur in all social and economic classes. In their investigations the police lay open the secrets of private lives for the curious and morbid public to feed on. These are the dramatic stories which boost circulation. Every newspaper reader feels he has a right to such stories and

it is this thirst for news which has produced the characteristically aggressive and competitive policy of the press.

You will therefore find that press reporters try to establish contact with the police at all levels. The point arises as to the manner in which news of police incidents should be purveyed to the press and how it should be channelled. Should a beat constable or an investigating officer be permitted to answer questions or release information about a police incident? It is felt universally by police administrators that they are not sufficiently qualified to deal with representatives of the press. The press for their part are reluctant to accept this point of view for the following reasons:—

- (1) Such a policy prevents the reporters from obtaining a first-hand account of police incidents.
- (2) It prevents the reporter from getting correct answers to all his questions.
- (3) It causes the reporter additional work and very often keeps him from getting the story on time.
- (4) It often causes the reporter to give the credit for good work to a supervisory officer when actually the credit belongs to a subordinate.
- (5) Many good stories of human interest are lost to the press

because they are matters of official record and the source of such stories has been blocked.

These disadvantages to the press may result from the policy of prohibiting the lower ranks from communicating with the press. On the other hand it will result in the policy of the top officers of the Police Department being safeguarded. It will also eliminate the possibility of stories which are derogatory to the police not being printed and circulated. In this connection I am reminded of a story which was given banner head-lines in the local press sometime ago which reflected badly on the police. The news was given by an investigating officer to the press without realising the damage which it may cause to the department as a whole. The incident related to the escape of a prisoner who had been arrested smartly by two night beat constables with a gunny bag containing stolen properties. The beat constables duly handed over the prisoner with the properties to the Section Head Constable in the station. The latter failed to register a case immediately and merely handed over the accused to the station sentry without making any entry in the sentry relief book. The station sentry for his part hand-cuffed the thief to the Sub-Inspector's chair in the station which had no lock-up. A little later while the station sentry was dozing, the culprit got up, carried the Sub-

Inspector's chair on his head and walked out of the station to his freedom. This was flashed in the local press with such head-lines as "Hand-cuffed Thief walks out of Police Station with Sub-Inspector's chair on his head." Such a publication naturally caused a lot of embarrassment to the department as a whole. You must also have heard of the case of the death of a thief in the Kodambakkam Police Station in Madras City. A magisterial enquiry was held which was given tremendous publicity in the press. This again caused a lot of embarrassment to the City Police Department as a whole. It also caused very unfavourable public comment and also affected the morale of the lower ranks of the City Police. Thus damage was caused all-round. It is not my case that wrong acts or mistakes should be hushed up. Any remissness on the part of the police should certainly be taken cognisance of and disciplinary action instituted where necessary but publicity tending to adversely affect the whole department which in turn hampers public relations should be avoided.

You will thus see that in the field of crime investigation there is an inescapable conflict of interest between the police and the press. The sole business of the police is to trace the criminal and bring him to justice. They are not concerned with the popular taste for sensational stories. In fact

public interest is in many cases a hindrance rather than a help. The Press Reporter's business on the other hand is to secure stories—the juicier the better. Competition amongst papers and amongst reporters is keen. In the case of a sensational murder, the reporter's very existence depends on his success in presenting the public with a steady supply of information on every aspect of the case. He must watch the movements of the investigating officers. He may sometimes interview relations and friends of the victim and he is sometimes tempted to indulge in a certain amount of investigation on his own account. This inevitably embarrasses the officers engaged on the case who have to expend all their energies and ingenuity in eluding the attentions of the reporters when they should be concerned solely with their problem. Another more important point is that a certain degree of secrecy is necessary in many instances as it may be highly undesirable that a criminal who is trying to evade capture should be informed of what line of enquiry the police are following, what places they have visited and who they have interrogated.

How then is this conflict of interests to be resolved? What should be the policy of the police in reference to withholding information from the press and what procedures of news release should the police adopt to implement this policy? On the whole, the police should adopt an attitude of complete

frankness with press representatives. They may however withhold information relating to—

- (1) Subversive activities.
- (2) The names of juveniles under any circumstances short of murder.
- (3) Names of female victims in sex crimes when the victim is not guilty or has no bad reputation or was not guilty of conduct that provoked the attack.
- (4) Facts the publication of which would interfere with crime investigation or the apprehension or interrogation of suspects or which would affect the department as a whole, thereby impairing public relations.

I am sure that if these principles of withholding information are enunciated to the press they will readily agree that they are in the public interest. The press will thereafter co-operate with the police in not publishing such information. In this way one phase of the conflict referred to by me earlier can be resolved. Let it be understood that on the other hand, if the police are secretive without taking the press into their confidence, leakage of information as is bound to happen in human affairs will be capitalised by the press, both to the discomfiture of the victims and to the embarrassment of the police. I therefore reiterate that it is

With the best compliments of

STANVAC

The Name that stands for Progress

**IMPROVE
YOUR STANDARD**

WITH

FLAX GOODS

Flax is the world's strongest
natural fibre and Flax goods are
today manufactured in India only
by us

FLAX FIRE HOSE

(Shrunk & Burnetised)

"VARUNA"



Bursting pressure 600 lbs. per sq.
Inch • conforms to Government
Specification No. G/Misc/57C •
Approved by Insurance Associa-
tion of India.

FLAX DELIVERY HOSE

Conforming to the Government
Specification No. G/Misc/58C.

**FLAX THREADS, TWINS &
CORDS**

For Leather Industry, Sports
Goods Industry & Textile
Industry, For Heavy Textile
Fabrication, Sack Sewing,
Fishing Net, Upholstery, Book
Binding, Packing, etc., etc.

**FLAX CANVAS &
TARPAULINS**

Of unusual strength and durability
Tarpaulins fully Waterproof,
Rotproof, made to actual sizes
with eyelets & corner pieces.
Stitched with strongest FLAX
threads. Twice as strong &
durable as cotton paulins.



**COTTON & "FLAXOCOT"
(Cotton Flax Mix) CANVAS
& TARPAULINS**

Admirable for Civil Military use
"FLAXOCOT" a speciality
in strength and pliability.

JAYSHREE TEXTILES LTD

RISHRA :: WEST BENGAL

necessary for the top police administrator in the city or in the districts to enunciate the aforesaid principles and to secure the approval of the press thereto.

We shall now consider the technique of news release. In doing so, it will be profitable to examine what is being done in other advanced countries. It is seen that as early as 1835, only six years after the Metropolitan Police Force in London came into existence, the Commissioners of Police discovered the value of press contact. We read of their establishing friendly relations with the Editors of responsible newspapers and supplying them with facts relating to the many false accusations which were being made at that time against the police. It was however only in 1919 that a press service was formed in the development of public relations. It was the result of discussions between the Newspaper Proprietors Association and the Metropolitan Police on the desirability of having some central source where newspapers could check facts and information which had come into their possession. This arrangement was greatly expanded in scope in recent years and in 1945 the post of Public Information Officer was created. The emphasis in the aforesaid designation is on the word 'information' in order to emphasize that the object of the new appointment was the distribution of information and to avoid the criticism levelled at

Public Relations Officers that their sole job was to praise or excuse their departments. The Press Bureau in the Metropolitan Police now comprises, under the Public Information Officer, of a Press Officer, 4 Assistant Press Officers and 2 Clerical Officers. The function of the Public Information Officer, which post was filled up by a journalist of mature experience, is to advise the Commissioner of Police on matters relating to publicity as also to supervise the Press Bureau at Scotland Yard, cultivate personal relations with Newspaper Editors, News Editors, Newsreel Executives and with officials of the British Broadcasting Corporation. Liaison with the press is maintained largely through the Press Bureau. A room near the Bureau is set aside for Reporters and is open normally from 8-30 a.m. to 11 p.m. National Daily Papers, London Evening Papers and two News Agencies are usually represented there. After 11 p.m. urgent information is dealt with by an Inspector of Police on duty in the Commissioner's Office who, when necessary, contacts the Public Information Officer by telephone at his residence. Police messages about crime, accidents and other similar matters are sent to the Press Bureau by teleprinter and telephone from all the 23 Divisions and 176 Police Stations in the Metropolitan Police District and after being edited are given to the pressmen on duty in the adjacent room. The Press Officers

working in the Press Bureau are always available to answer individual enquiries from newspapers, to arrange interviews with police personnel and also to arrange visits by press and photographic agencies, newsreels, broadcasters and authors to various police establishments. The Press Bureau is also responsible for police advertisements in the National and Provincial press. It is also responsible for the issue of Police Identification Cards to press and radio reporters and to photographers which carry a request to any officer to whom they are presented to give the holder any reasonable assistance. In this way the Press Bureau of the Metropolitan Police has been able to build up good will between the police, the press and the public to a very marked degree.

You will thus be able to appreciate that the technique of news release in London is very advanced. We in Madras State have a great deal to learn from these procedures. Let us at the same time remember that, whatever procedures are adopted, inaccuracies will inevitably appear in the press from time to time. It is well known that newspapers work under great pressure. There is a continual fight against time and therefore it may be too much to expect them to check every item for publication. A mere inaccuracy, however gross, is of no consequence to anybody except the paper and unless it could be shown

that damage was done to the police themselves or to the course of justice or in some other important way there does not appear to be any occasion for further action. In recapitulation, I would say that the best procedure of news release is to set up a central source of information instead of news being given to the press at all levels in the Police Department. This central source would have the help of all stations and units of the police force and also the advice of the top administrator whose policies would be subserved by the aforesaid central source of information.

It will thus be seen that the police and the press are vital to each other and there should never be a rift between the two. Of course the path to be traversed by us both will not be smooth always. By the very nature of our respective functions there is too much emotion and fighting against time to expect perfect relationship. But by constant vigilance we can develop better relations between the police and the press and eliminate many of the petty differences that sometimes lead to dangerous discord. In these circumstances it would be better to adopt a single code of ethics by both the police and the press. This common code may consist of the following points :—

- (1) Be tolerant, patient and understanding of each other's problems. Weigh every factor

carefully before jumping to a conclusion.

- (2) Be honest in imparting news to the press and when forced to withhold information in the public interest, take the editor and reporter into your confidence and ask for their support and understanding. But do not overplay this practice and resort to it only when essential.

- (3) Never ridicule the police. It is the quickest way to tear

down public confidence. Be careful in handling light-hearted stories and do not unnecessarily hold up the police to public scorn and ridicule.

- (4) Both the police and the press should build a solid bridge through personal relationship and fair treatment.

In other words, the common ethical code could be boiled down to a few simple words—justice, fair play, integrity and understanding.

HOW TO HANDLE GRIEVANCES

Step 1. Listen Open-mindedly

1. *Willingness to listen opens the aggrieved worker's mind.*
2. *Listen patiently.*
3. *Listen, no matter how trivial the grievance.*
4. *Encourage him to tell his story completely.*
5. *Show sincere interest in his complaint.*
6. *Discuss, don't argue.*
7. *Even the small grievance is important to the man.*

Step 2. Get all the facts straight

1. *Encourage the man to repeat the details of his grievance.*
2. *Question him carefully.*
3. *Talk to others and consult records when necessary.*
4. *Take time to get all the facts straight.*
5. *Don't jump to conclusions. Avoid snap judgments.*
6. *If need be, consult the man above you.*

Step 3. Act promptly and fairly

1. *Don't delay action, or give a man "the run around."*
2. *Don't "Pass the buck."*
3. *If the answer must be "No", give all the reasons why.*
4. *Handle an imaginary grievance with all tact and fairness.*
5. *Try to save the man's face whenever he is in the wrong.*
6. *Be ready to give the man the benefit of the doubt.*
7. *Don't use your authority to force a decision.*

Step 4. Report

1. *Report all grievances to the man above.*
2. *Report grievances which you settle satisfactorily as well as grievances on which you must consult with higher authority.*
3. *Take care of the little grievances and the big grievances may never develop.*

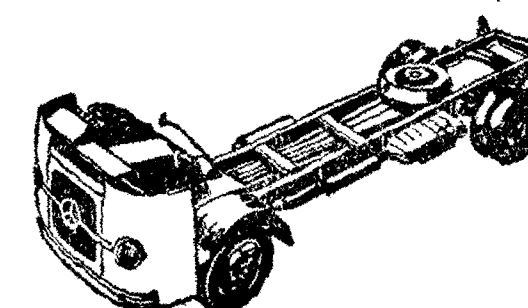
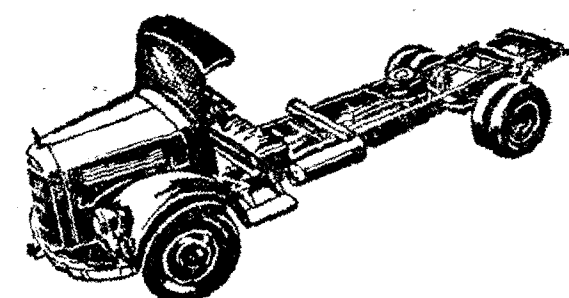


IT'S

TOUGH

POWERFUL

ECONOMICAL



TATA

MERCEDES

BENZ

DIESEL BUSES & TRUCKS

V. S. T. MOTORS PRIVATE LTD

MADRAS • SALEM

FOR

Radio and Amplifier parts: Philips, Telefunken Transistors
and Diodes, Transistor Radios at Competitive prices

VISIT

ALPHA RADIOS & NOVELTIES PRIVATE LTD
9 MOUNT ROAD Opp: Mount Road Post Office MADRAS 2
(Phone No. 84771)

Authorised Dealers for MURPHY RADIOS

Showroom at:
177/179 MOUNT ROAD, MADRAS 2
(Opp: Casino Theatre)

ALWAYS CONTACT

M/s. LAKSHMI HOSIERY (Regd)
WATT GANJ, LUDHIANA

FOR MILITARY & POLICE, COTTON & WOOLLEN GARMENTS

(i.e.,) BANIAN COTTON WHITE, JERSEYS-SOCKS HOSE-TOPS ETC.

POLICE AND THE PUBLIC

BY

DR. E. K. SWAMY, PH.D., J.P.

The great need of today is to focus the attention of the people on the work of the police and to appeal to the public for their co-operation. Without good relations between the police and the public, any force will work at a grave disadvantage. It is therefore most important to foster the good relations in every possible way by explaining to the public through the press, exhibitions and the radio how the police do their work and what the public can do to help them. The force behind the policeman is the force of public opinion and not the policeman's lathi or arms.

The peace and happiness of a welfare state depend to a very large extent on the type of police it has and how they do their work. The primary function of the police has been the "protection of life and property." Every member of the police force must remember that his duty is to protect and help the members of the public no less than to apprehend guilty persons. A policeman must look on himself as a servant and guardian of the general public and treat all law-abiding citizens, irrespective of their social position, with unfailing courtesy.

The policeman, being an important member of the society, is vested with greater authority than that possessed by an ordinary citizen. To ensure that this authority, which touches the life of the community at almost every point, is exercised with propriety and restraint, police officers of all ranks are subject to a stricter code of discipline. It has long been recognised that an efficient police force, trusted by the public to perform its duties with integrity and justice, is at the root of all good government.

A policeman's duty compels him to do things which are distasteful to some members of the community. He has to arrest the criminals and has to charge the traffic offenders. He has to raid gambling dens and the houses of prohibition law-breakers. A percentage of these inconvenienced persons are prepared to pay for immunity and they are sometimes able to find a police officer, who is willing to be 'squared.' A police officer, however, cannot bury his mistakes. The lime-light of publicity will be on them sooner or later, and a minor lapse or error of judgment or lack of decision may have disproportionate consequences.

The argument is often put forward that the moral standards of the police will worsen unless their pay and conditions of service are improved. Material comforts, above a certain minimum level, however seldom have anything to do with the moral standards of the individual who is being tempted. Even if policemen were paid full value for their services, it could still be claimed that they were open to temptation.

The policeman's hours of duty are really taxing, though the regulations desire him to work eight hours a day for six days in a week, Sundays and public holidays counting as normal days of the week. The policeman's time is at the disposal of the police service. He is frequently required to work additional hours, sometimes to give evidence in court, but more often because of the nature of some particular case on which he might be employed. For such extra work he is paid "overtime" rates, but this is a poor compensation for being called out, say, on a public holiday as a reinforcement for traffic patrols.

The pay and conditions of service of the police have to be bettered. An increase in the salary, a slight improvement in the chances of promotion, and the provision of better housing and welfare facilities, if attended to by the Government, will certainly contribute to a general raising of the living standards of policemen.

It is the decline in general standards of honesty that presents the gravest problem to the police today. The causes are many and various. As World War II drew to its close, consumer goods became scarcer and scarcer, prices tended to rise and controls and rationing limited, rightly enough, the amounts which any individual citizen could lawfully obtain. This led to the development of blackmarket in goods of all kinds which has had a lamentable effect on the general level of public honesty. Evasions of regulations also led on to petty acts of dishonesty.

The war has brought about considerable changes in the distribution of population. People from the villages have migrated to the city in the hope of getting better jobs and more money than they could earn by working in the fields. Those among them who were unable to get work became a half-starved people, led a miserable life and slowly drifted to the criminal underworld.

The carelessness of the public in regard to their own possessions is alarming. House-holders frequently do not secure their premises properly but keep heavy amounts and rich valuables in them. And the toughest of all the problems that a policeman faces is the lack of sympathy and support from the fellow-citizen.

Unfortunately, sometimes, the police and the public don't go together.

Sometimes serious misunderstandings arise and the people are ready to believe any shocking story of police high-handedness and vehemently demand "enquiry" or "reform." The public cannot expect to be served, as it would wish, by men who know that, whether they do well or ill, at the first breath of calumny the very people to whom they give of their best are those who are most ready to believe anything that malicious detractors choose to allege against them.

During the British rule in our country, the police force was considered to be a real threat to national aspirations and legitimate liberties. The Nationalists considered them as spies under the control of the authorities. Police actions stimulated a suspicious attitude in the minds of the nationalists who genuinely and honestly felt that the policemen were unwanted beings. They considered that the police

were a lot of corrupt, oppressive perjurers who delighted in applying third degree methods to innocent persons.

Even after the advent of Independence, the impression created in the past among the people about the police still continues. Many people still have the belief that the police are even now the agents of the political party in power and their function is to compel citizens to obey the Government of the day, rather than to administer the law impartially.

What is wanted is a better understanding between the people and police. The policeman should be regarded not only as a guardian but as a comrade. In his fight against crime, he must have the active support of the citizen, even if it involves grave personal danger. The old distrust must disappear and the public give their full co-operation and friendliness to the police.

Golden Words to Remember;

It isn't what you start that counts—it's what you finish.

"PIDANERI MURDER CASE"

BY

SRI T. S. SIVANANDAM, B.A.

Assistant Commissioner of Police, Law and Order, Egmore, Madras.

Sri K. M. Munshi, ex-Governor of Uttar Pradesh, in his inaugural address at the All-India Identification Experts Conference held at Lucknow in 1955 said :—

"The Investigating Officer has been guilty of three faults : first, of haphazard observation ; second, of perfunctory collection of evidence ; and lastly, of failure in reconstructing the incident in his imagination before evidence was placed before the court." Haphazard observation has been held to be the primary fault of an investigating officer. It is essential that a successful investigating officer should have keen observation and this is proved by the following case.

2. I was Inspector of Police, Sri-vaikuntam Circle, in Tirunelveli District from 1942 to 1945. On a cool September morning in 1943, shortly after I had returned from another investigation, a Police Constable turned up at my house and handed over to me an Express F.I.R. relating to a case of murder in Alwar-Thirunagari Police Station limits. The F.I.R. mentioned that a dead body was found, with 18 injuries on it, lying on dry land

near the Nazareth-Santhankulam road at Pidaner.

3. I left for the scene to investigate the murder case. While on my way near Nazareth, I found the dead body concerned in this case being taken in a cart, escorted by a police constable, to the hospital at Alwar Thirunagari for post-mortem examination. I stopped the cart and examined the dead body. I noted the injuries and found to my surprise that there was a letter on the person of the deceased. The letter purported to be from one Vedamanickam Nadar of Pillaimanai addressed to the V.M. of Pidaner alleging that Pandara Thevar and 3 other Maravars of the village (I have forgotten the names) were regularly threatening him and that he was afraid he might be murdered. He also prayed in his letter for action against the Maravars. The letter contained a thumb-impression, purporting to be the left thumb-impression of Vedamanicka Nadar. This was obviously an important document and I recovered it on a Mahazar attested by the P.C. and the cart driver. I questioned the P.C. how the Sub-Inspector

failed to notice the letter during inquest and he replied that the Sub-Inspector did not search the person of the deceased but had only noted the injuries on his head, back and chest. I sent the body to the hospital and proceeded to the scene where I found the Sub-Inspector conducting investigation into the case. The first thing I did on arrival was to get and read the inquest report of the Sub-Inspector. I found, against the particular column which should give the list of properties found on the person of the deceased, an entry, reading, 'Nil'. Then I showed to the Sub-Inspector the letter which I had recovered from the corpse en route to the hospital and the Sub-Inspector stood aghast. I asked him whether he searched the dhoti, etc, of the deceased and he replied 'No.' I then personally took over the investigation of the case from the Sub-Inspector.

4. In the F.I.R. there was absolutely no clue regarding the name of the deceased. From the information got from the letter recovered from the deceased, I proceeded to Pillaimanai (a neighbouring village, referred to in the letter) and traced the house of Vedamanickam Nadar. Nadar's wife was a picture of worry when I saw her. I asked her about her husband and she replied that her man who left the house three days prior for Santhankulam had not returned and that she was much worried

over the same. I immediately took her to Alwar Thirunagari Hospital where she identified the dead body to be that of her husband. Then I asked her whether the deceased knew to read and write and she replied in the negative. Then I secured from her a document which contained the left thumb-impression of the deceased. I sent the recovered letter and the document to the Finger Print Expert to find out whether the thumb-impressions found on both the documents were identical, and, to my surprise, I got a reply from the Finger Print Expert that the two impressions were not identical. This gave me some more food for thought and I directed my attention towards the four Maravars of Pidaner mentioned in the letter. After a thorough enquiry, I learnt that these Maravars had absolutely no motive against the deceased who was said to be a very good man, much loved by other villagers. On further investigation, I learnt that one Muthumalai Thevar, the Thalayari of Pidaner village, was a deadly enemy of these four Maravars. I then had the movements of Muthumalai watched. His conduct, before and after the murder gave rise to suspicion and I thought that Muthumalai probably had some hand in the murder. Persistent and continuous interrogation of Muthumalai Thevar brought out no useful information. At length, I took his left thumb-impression despite his severe protest and

sent the same to the Finger Print Expert along with the letter recovered.

5. The result of the examination of the thumb-impression sent was to the effect that the two impressions were identical ones. This confirmed the suspicion against Muthumalai Thevar and the latter was then arrested and sent for remand. Muthumalai Thevar was an illiterate, desperate type. After locating the author of the impression found in the letter, I wanted to detect the author of the letter itself. My further enquiries disclosed that Muthumalai Thevar was in illicit intimacy with a local woman whose son was studying in the Third Form at the Nazareth High School. I rushed to the school, took the boy by surprise and asked him whether he was willing to join the police force. It may be said in this connection that though the boy was in the third form, he was aged about 19 and had a good physique. The boy was very happy to join the police force and to test his knowledge, I gave him a dictation in Tamil. I narrated to him the contents of the letter recovered, and after one or two sentences, I could observe on the face of the boy the reflections of emotional changes. By the time the dictation was concluded, he looked completely blue. After securing the dictated piece from him, I took him to the police station and had him interrogated as it was obvious to me that the writings in the two letters were similar. The

boy made a clean breast of the whole affair and stated that about a fortnight back, Muthumalai Thevar, the Thalayari, who used to visit his house often, asked him to write a letter to his dictation, telling the boy that he had to send the petition to the authorities as his friend Vedamanicka Nadar was oppressed very badly by the Maravars of the village, and that he was doing it in his capacity of the Thalayari of the village. The innocent boy believed the version of the thalayari and obliged him by writing the letter.

6. I sent the recovered letter and the letter written by the boy to the State Examiner of Questioned Documents for comparison, and the latter opined that the handwriting in both the letters was very probably by the same writer. It is to be mentioned in this connection that Muthumalai Thevar, the Thalayari, who was a deadly enemy of the four Maravars mentioned in the letter recovered from the deceased, went to the extent of murdering an innocent good man for just no other motive than to foist a case on his foes. He thought that the letter which he had planted on the deceased would lead to the police pouncing on his enemies. But, being an uneducated rustic, he never thought that his own thumb-impression affixed to the letter, would betray him. There was absolutely no eye-witness to the occurrence except the circumstantial

evidence of the thumb-impression of the accused found in the letter recovered from the person of the deceased and the testimony of the boy who wrote the letter. With the available materials the case was charged and during the course of the trial, the advocate for the defence argued that there was only the evidence of the thumb-impression against his client and that too on a letter recovered from the dead body of the deceased, not during the inquest, but later on the way to the hospital. When the Sessions Judge questioned the advocate whether he suggested the planting of the letter by the Inspector, the advocate replied that "it was never his suggestion but he only brought it to the notice of the Court that a responsible officer like the Sub-Inspector who held the inquest had clearly said in the concerned column of the inquest report that there were no properties found on the deceased.

Some of the enemies of the accused person might have thrust the same on the person of the deceased when, probably, the P.C. who followed the body was behind at some distance. It was easy for such planting to be done as the cart driver (who was the only one on the cart beside the dead body) was facing the front while driving the cart."

7. When I was in the box, the first question the Judge asked me was whether the Sub-Inspector continued to be in the force and I replied that for his slipshod, superficial and perfunctory investigation, he was being dealt with for reduction, and then only the Judge proceeded with the rest of the hearing. After a long and protracted trial, the accused was given the benefit of doubt and acquitted. It is easy to see what a costly error poor observation on the part of an Investigating Officer can prove to be !

Most people believe in law and order as long as they can lay down the law and give the orders.

A man is always as young as he feels, but seldom as important.

THE COAL SELLER MURDER

BY

K. SREEKUMAR MENON

Deputy Superintendent of Police

Chidambaram in the District of South Arcot is a famous place, well-known for its temple of Lord Nataraja. Like all temple towns it has developed on all four sides of the temple. Around the temple run four main roads, and some smaller roads branch off these and end up in dirty streets and lanes on the fringes of lush green paddy fields. Almost every day there is much activity in the town owing to the visit of pilgrims from far and near. January 15th, 1958, was more than usually active because 'Mattu Pongal' was being celebrated on that date with much eclat. Vermillion-painted cattle roamed the streets with garlands on their necks. Children were busy eating sugar-cane and fried rice that were being sold in the streets. There was a feast in every household.

It was an auspicious day for all except 52 year old Bangaramma, the childless widow who sold charcoal in a shop in Elamayakinar street and lived as a tenant in the house of Vajranarayana Chetty, 100 yards away.

For 15 years Bangaramma had trudged the streets, selling coal, and had just become rich enough to rent a small room owned by Vajranarayana Chetty for a shop. This room was wedged in on either side by rarely-used godowns, and had only one door. Bangaramma used to cook her food and come to her shop daily at about 8 a.m. and return to her house at 8 p.m. She used to earn about Rs. 150 in a month. She also dealt in silver laces from old clothes. Like all others, on 15th January 1958, Bangaramma also was clad in her festive best and, as was her daily custom, was wearing on her person all her gold jewels. There were a two-row gold 'Kanchikamani' chain, a gold 'gadigara' chain, two pairs of gold bangles and a pair of gold ear-rings, each set with seven white stones, on her on that day, and these were worth about Rs. 800.

At noon on 15th January 1958, Bangarammal had her food at her sister (Nagalakshmi's) house and left for her shop. Nagalakshmi and her sons Devedran and Natesa Chetty, were the last to see Bangaramma alive and in possession of all her jewels. As Bangarammal

did not return home by 9 p.m. on 15th January 1958, Vajranarayana Chetty who had to bolt the main door of the building in which Bangarammal's shop was situated grew impatient. He went to the shop and found it locked. At 12 midnight he went to Nagalakshmi's house, and was told that Bangaramma had left at 2 p.m. after food and that she might have gone to the temple after locking up her shop. On the morning of 16th January 1958, Natesa Chetty enquired of Vajranarayana and on learning that Bangaramma had not yet showed up, searched for her in the temple and the temple tank in vain. He came to the shop of Bangaramma where, by now, a crowd had collected. The door was locked. Natesan peeped in through the crevice of the door and was horrified to see two legs stretched out. As tapping the door did not meet with any response he quickly went to the Chidambaram Town Police Station, 3 furlongs away, and informed the young S.I. there. The latter registered Cr. 31/58 (Death in a locked room) in this connection and immediately came to Bangaramma's shop for investigation. He broke open the lock and found Bangaramma lying dead and without any jewels on her person.

An inspection of the body showed bruise marks round the throat and chest and scratch marks on her wrists. Blood was oozing from her nostrils and mouth. A small gold bit was

found sticking to her left forearm and a small gold screw lay near the body. The cash box and a hurricane light were also missing. A cursory glance was sufficient to show that she had met with foul play. The S.I. held an inquest and the Panchayatdars were emphatic that Bangaramma was murdered for her jewels. The body was sent for post-mortem examination. Searches for foot prints and finger prints proved futile. Nor did the scene indicate any signs of a violent struggle. This was probably an indication that more than one person had overpowered the poor, defenceless woman. It also appeared likely that some one should have gone there on the pretext of buying coal, closed the door, strangled the woman, removed the jewels, locked the door and got away. The case was then altered to one under Sections 302 and 392, I.P.C. The post-mortem indicated asphyxia due to manual strangulation and the medical officer was of opinion that the woman had died at about 8 p.m. on 15th January 1958.

Investigation disclosed that at 2 p.m. on 15th January 1958, after lunch, Bangaramma left the house of her sister, Nagalakshmi. At about 5 p.m. Ammaji, a girl who had lost a four anna bit and was searching for it saw the deceased sitting in her shop. At 5-30 p.m. the deceased went to the laundry of one. Nallappan, and informed him that a consignment of fresh

coal had arrived in her shop. At 6 p.m. the deceased visited the shop of Pawn-broker Joharilal and paid him Rs. 2-12-0, being the daily instalment of the loan of Rs. 275 she had taken from him. At 7 p.m. Devendran, son of Nagalakshmi, saw Bangaramma going along the bazaar street. Thus it was clear that Bangaramma should have met her end between 7 p.m. and 9 p.m. on 15th January 1958.

The complicity of local bad-hats was checked and no clue was got. The same Bangaramma was once the victim of a robbery in 1948, and two Muslim youths were convicted in that case. Their present whereabouts were not known, and one was rumoured to have died. There were also no known criminals of this M.O. in the district. This only meant that even if there were murders for gain in the district in the recent past, none were detected. The possible complicity of the man who sold charcoal to the deceased on 15th January 1958 as well as that of Nallappan, the launderer, was checked up, and these persons were cleared. Thillai, a Harijan servant in the house of one Ramaswamy Padayachi, who lived nearest to the scene, absconded from 16th January 1958. He was traced and he was also cleared of suspicion. The complicity of one Krishnamurthi who visited the house of Nagalakshmi and left on 15th January 1958 night for Trichy district was also verified and cleared. During

my investigation at the scene four days after the offence, a young man was standing aloof non-chalantly and attentively watching the proceedings, and on my asking the S.I. to check who he was, it was found that he was the younger brother of a notorious rowdy and K.D. of the town, one Krishnamurthi. No great importance was then attached to this, though the possibility of K.D. Krishnamurthy being one of the suspects was mentioned in the G.C.R. and Case Diary. It was learnt subsequent to the murder that Krishnamurthi's movements were suspicious. This was in no way sufficient for arresting him. Investigation continued methodically and vigorously for a month, and all the numerous leads were followed up, but there were no clues. A murder for gain if not detected in the first ten days is very difficult to detect, say the experts. The maxim that the murderer always leaves behind a clue also did not seem to apply in this case, or so we felt.

Luckily for the police, the murderer who never left any clue initially, let slip one a month later. K.D. Krishnamurthy who had all along been watched by the police made a sudden trip to Kumbakonam. This is how it happened. One Thiagaraja Pathar alias Mughavettu, a goldsmith, had a boy, Alagiriswami, for a servant. This lad stole some gold and ran away to Kumbakonam in Tanjore District. Had K.D. Krishnamurthi and Mughavettu decided to keep quiet and let the

boy severely alone, the murder case might never have been detected. Afraid probably that the boy would leak out some secret, Mughavettu, a thick friend of K.D. Krishnamurthi, sent the latter to Kumbakonam to bring Alagiri back. Mughavettu in the role of a respectable goldsmith and aggrieved master, or perhaps to explain K.D. Krishnamurthi's trip to Kumbakonam, brought Alagiri to the Chidambaram Town Police Station on 18th December 1958 with a complaint. Crime 63/58 under Section 381 was registered against the boy. The police felt suspicious and wondered why K.D. Krishnamurthi should have been so expeditiously sent to fetch back the boy. When Alagiri was questioned, the answer was got. He gave out that after Pongal, K.D. Krishnamurthi had given his master Mughavettu gold on three occasions and also 14 white stones for making ear-rings. Alagiri even fetched biriyani for his master and K.D. Krishnamurthi one night. This bit of information was the first break in this case, exactly 33 days after the offence. Only now it was clear why the brother of K.D. Krishnamurthi was so much interested in the police investigation of this case.

Mughavettu was immediately got at and when confronted with the evidence of the purchase of gold, he admitted that K.D. Krishnamurthi gave him the gold and 14 white stones a few days after Pongal. He also

stated that K.D. Krishnamurthi and one Natesa Asari were concerned in the murder case. Bangaramma, at the time of her death, was wearing ear-rings with 14 stones. It was almost clear that the 27 year old K.D. Krishnamurthi was our man. At 4-30 p.m. on 18th February 1958 he was arrested. Starting on Mughavettu the police cleverly and in an amazingly short time worked back and got at details of the entire series of transactions involving sale of the stolen gold in this case and traced 11 goldsmiths who had purchased it. When confronted with the overwhelming evidence the accused broke down and gave a detailed confession. According to him, Natesa Asari had called him and they went to the coal shop on the pretext of buying coal. There they throttled the woman, removed her jewels and went away locking the door. On the way, they met one Jabbar, a petty mechanic, and Krishnamurthi asked him for a beedi. The latter gave Krishnamurthi an anna for buying beedies with. Krishnamurthi got all the jewels melted through Kaliyaperumal, another goldsmith, on the night of the murder itself. He threw the cash box of the deceased into a tank and took the hurricane light to his father's house. Krishnamurthi also admitted that he and Natesa Asari (who worked for him during Pongal) sold sugarcane together near the shop of one Kamalam and that some 6 years prior he had once given some stolen

articles to Natesa Asari. This statement was recorded in the presence of respectable witnesses. The accused led the police to the local tank from where divers fished out the cash-box which was identified by the relations. The green-painted hurricane light was recovered from the house of the father of the K.D. The accused then took the police to the house of Mughavettu and gold ingots and the 14 white stones were recovered from the latter.

Further investigation showed that on the night of 15th January 1958 Kaliyaperumal melted all the jewels which had been worn by the deceased. Kaliyaperumal, his son Natarajan and brother Krishnamurthi admitted that K.D. Krishnamurthi brought a gadi-gara chain, a two-row kanchigamani chain in three bits, two pairs of gold bangles and a pair of ear-rings with 14 white stones. Kaliaperumal also stated that he sold the gold to various persons and that he returned some gold and the 14 white stones to K.D. Krishnamurthi. Mughavettu admitted that K.D. Krishnamurthi gave him the gold and the 14 white stones which were seized by the police. Kaliaperumal effected 6 different sales through a goldsmith by name Krishnamurthi to Lakshmana Chetty, Murugesan, Sadayan, Ganapathi and Rajavelu. He sold some gold direct to Baluswami and, through Ramaswamy Pathar (who died), to Rajavelu and through his own son, Natarajan, to the same Rajavelu. Natarajan and

Krishnamurthi admitted that Kaliyaperumal gave them gold which they sold. Lakshmana Chetty and Rajavelu produced six bills to prove that they had purchased gold from Kaliyaperumal, Natarajan, Krishnamurthi and Ramaswami. Mughavettu also admitted selling gold given by K.D. Krishnamurthi and paying him money. The total sales of gold tallied with the weight of jewels of the deceased. Though the jewels were worth Rs. 800, K.D. Krishnamurthi got only Rs. 409.

All this while, the search for A-2, Natesa Asari, continued and he was arrested on 19th February 1958. He too admitted his complicity but stated that A-1 had called him to commit the offence. The confessional statement of A-2 was also recorded and he stated that he had thrown a bag containing charcoal and the keys of the shop in a tank. In spite of vigorous searches by divers, the keys could not be recovered. On inquiries it was learnt that one Kari Natesan and Natarajan, watchmen of the tank, had some days after Pongal, recovered a bag with charcoal in it floating in the tank, and had given it to one Annamalai who threw the whole thing away as the bag and charcoal were useless. This cement bag could not be recovered. A-2 admitted selling sugar-cane for A-1. Jabbar who was a petty mechanic and whose shop was opposite to the coal depot

of the deceased, admitted that A-1 and A-2 used to work for him off and on. He confirmed that A-1 met him on 15th January 1958, night, and asked him for a beedi and that he gave him an anna. Kamalam whose shop was near where A-1 was selling sugar-cane spoke about seeing A-1 and A-2 near her shop at about 7 p.m. on 15th January 1958, and of A-2 having a charcoal bag in his hand.

As the accused were in a mood to confess they were both sent before a Magistrate who recorded the confessional statements of A-1 and A-2 on 21st February 1958 and 22nd February 1958 respectively. The chargesheet in this case was laid on 4th March 1958 and the case was committed to Sessions on 26th March 1958. In the Sessions, from 14th July 1958 to 18th July 1958, 32 witnesses were examined for the prosecution. The accused were given State aid and they did not have any defence witnesses. On 22nd July 1958, six months and a

week after the murder, A-1, K.D. Krishnamurthi was sentenced to death under Section 302, I.P.C., the Judge observing that "there can therefore be no room for any doubt that the first accused must have committed the murder." A-1 was also sentenced to 10 years' R.I. under Section 392 I.P.C. read with Section 75 as he was an old offender. A-2 was acquitted as there was insufficient corroboration to his confessional statement.

The accused preferred an appeal to the High Court making the usual allegations against the police of coercion and threats in getting him to make the statement that they wanted. He complained that the police bore a grudge against him in an old murder case—that the police gave him some drugged coffee and halva before they took him to the Magistrate and that all the witnesses had a motive to depose against him. All these pleas were of no avail, and on 7th October 1958 the High Court confirmed the conviction of A-1.

A rural road-sign reads :

"Drive careful if you'd rather be than was." Ungrammatical but logical.

HALLO! COLD WEATHER IS HERE-

FOR THE COMPLETE RANGE OF BINNY'S QUALITY WOOLLEN GOODS

Please Contact

MISRILALL PARASMALL

Mamulpet

BANGALORE 2

Sole Selling Agents for **SOUTH INDIA & BOMBAY**

Coronet, Chancellor, Tourist, Everyman, & Coarse
Quality Rugs, Mufflers, Angola Shawls, and Varsity
Suitings are our Seasonal Specialities.

Show Room:

GRAMS:

'KATRELA'

Avenue Road, opposite
Raja Market, Bangalore 2

PHONE:

2691

Kalwindra Hosiery Factory
LUDHIANA (PUNJAB)

Manufacturers of

WOOLLEN JERSEYS, CARDIGANS, SOCKS, STOCKINGS
AND ALL KINDS OF OTHER HOSIERY GOODS

SPECIALISTS IN

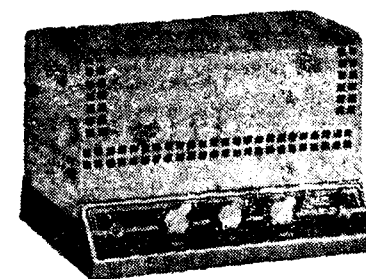
WOOLLEN KNITTED PUTTIES

APPROVED CIVIL & MILITARY CONTRACTORS

Known for Quality and Reliability

★ ESCO AMPLIFIERS

★ ATLAS
TRANSFORMERS
AND BATTERY
ELIMINATORS



★ PHILIPS VALVES
AND
COMPONENTS



★ UNIVERSITY UNITS
AND HORNS

★ BALKAR UNITS
AND HORNS



★ TURNER MICROPHONES

★ GLOBE BATTERY CHARGERS



Phone: 85564

Gram: LALRADIO

Branch

CONTACT:

180 Mount Road
MADRAS 2

LALWANI RADIO CORPORATION

37/38 S. J. Park Road
BANGALORE 2

Head Office: BOMBAY

Branches: CALCUTTA DELHI

Phone: 782

Grams: VIR HOSIERY

VIR HOSIERY FACTORY (Regd.)

RAI BAHADUR ROAD
LUDHIANA

Specialists in

High Class Woollen Hosiery Government and Military Contractors

for

Socks, Stockings, Hosetops, Jerseys Pullover, Caps Confolters,
Gloves, Balaclava Caps, Mufflers, Scarves, Mittens, Vests,
Drawers, Ribbed Jerseys, Vests Winter etc. etc.

You can see it in his eye, his bearing and the way he dresses. Such self-confidence often indicates the influence of strong family traditions of refinement and culture.

THIS YOUNG MAN WILL GO FAR

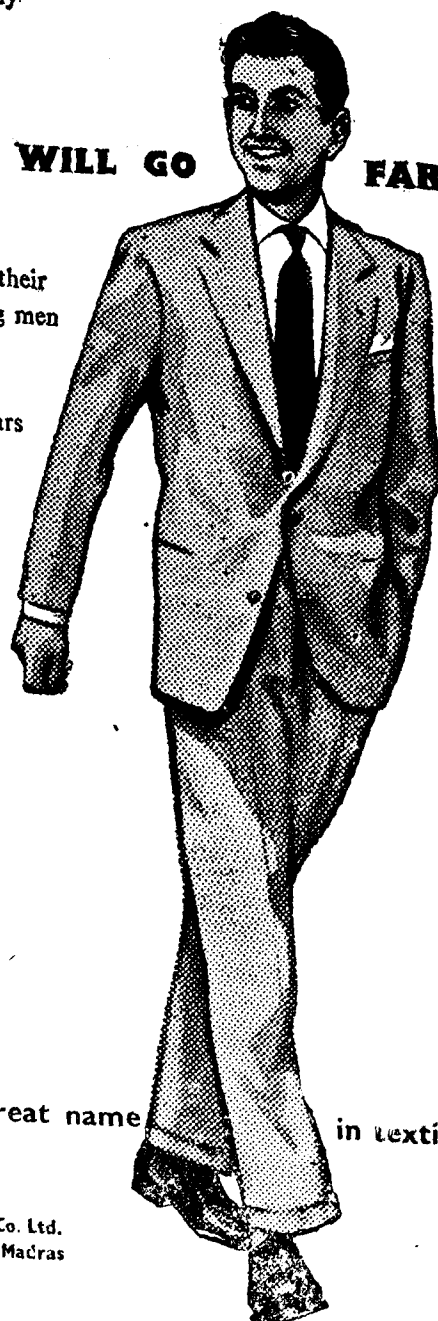
When BINNY'S started manufacturing their quality cloth nearly eighty years ago young men discovered a new standard in textiles, for here was variety in colour, design and texture undreamt of before. As the years passed, BINNY'S continued to pioneer new materials including antcrease suitings and union fabrics. Soon BINNY became a household word and buying BINNY'S a family tradition.

Today, more people are able to buy more cloth, but discerning people look for these reassuring BINNY'S trade marks on the cloth they buy:



BINNY'S — a great name in textiles

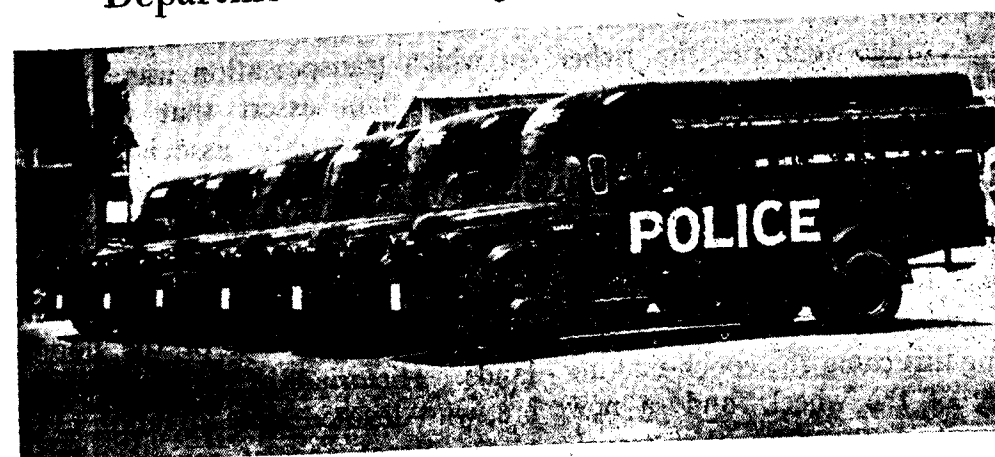
The Buckingham & Carnatic Co. Ltd
The Bangalore Woollen, Cotton & Silk Mills Co. Ltd.
Managing Agents: BINNY & CO (MADRAS) LTD., Madras



SRI RAMA VILAS SERVICE (PRIVATE) LTD KUMBAKONAM

We always count upon the satisfaction of our Customers.

We construct bodies on chassis for Buses, Lorries and all kinds of special type Vans as for the Police Department according to specifications.



The Inspector-General of Police states :

"THE CONSTRUCTION OF TWENTY-ONE CLOSED TYPE VAN BODIES BY YOUR FIRM FOR THE POLICE DEPARTMENT WAS FOUND TO BE SATISFACTORY AND ACCORDING TO THE SPECIFICATIONS FOR POLICE USE."

Our modern shellubrication service station has recently commenced night servicing of cars to cope up with the increasing demand from the customers' side.

TRAFFIC PROBLEMS

BY

SRI P. PARAMAGURU, M.A., B.L.

Deputy Commissioner of Police, Traffic and Licensing, Madras

In the earliest days, the only means of travelling from place to place was on foot and our ancestors tramped merrily from place to place carrying their household goods on their backs, accompanied by their wives and children and driving their cattle in front of them. As time went on, the richer people hit upon the idea of building a conveyance made of two stout poles with some kind of seat tied to them. These were carried on the shoulders of servants or slaves and gradually developed into the sedan chair of Europe and the palanquin of India. Following this came the epoch-making discovery of the wheel, and a new era dawned in the history of travel. Soon, the cart came into existence, drawn by bullocks, horses, camels or elephants. This was followed by the bicycle. The final advancement came with the invention of the internal combustion engine and the appearance of the motor car. The rapid growth of the population, the enormous increase in the number of vehicles and the limited expansion of the roads created many serious traffic problems.

2. In its very broadest sense, the traffic problem was recognised as far back as biblical times. There are several references in the Bible to traffic, although the word as we know it came much later. The French first used it to describe business dealings in which transportation was involved and scholars assert that the word traffic is correctly associated with hustle and bustle. The first traffic problem—really a parking problem—was faced by Noah, who had to find a place on Mount Ararat to moor the Ark after sailing out of the flooded lands. Historians of the pre-Christian era, who devoted some attention to the traffic ills of ancient countries, write that Julius Caesar prohibited vehicles from entering the commercial districts of large Cities during certain hours, because of congestion. The Romans even had off-street vehicles parks. Both the Romans and the Greeks had to cope with street congestion. Then, as now, traffic flowed from suburban and farm areas toward the city or market place at sun-up and at night fall the roads were clogged with returning throngs. They

had the problem of pedestrian safety too, and the city fathers of those times tried hard to meet the challenge posed by the carts and chariots. To combat congestion they devised the one-way road and for pedestrians' safety they established crude safety islands, generally small raised squares of bricks at intersections. The one-way artery is by no means due to the ingenuity of the twentieth-century traffic engineer. Pompeii had a whole network of one-way thoroughfares. Further, the centre line to separate opposing streams of traffic dates back more than three hundred years. Traffic historians agree that it is first known to have been used by the Mexicans in constructing a highway from Mexico City to outlying communities. Thus the Ancients too had tackled their traffic problems.

3. In modern times the traffic problems are complex. In New York it takes one more than half an hour to drive a mile; in Paris the motorist with guts gets the right of way; and in London one feels ashamed if he

does not respond to the courtesy extended by the users of the road. They have all their own problems and so have we. The principal purpose of the regulation and control of vehicular and pedestrian traffic is to give the pedestrian, the operator and the business interest the greatest possible use of the roads and side-walks, consistent with the law, public safety and convenience. Whenever a problem arises and action is required, public safety is the first consideration, common-sense second and good judgment the third.

4. Broadly speaking, the traffic problem is divided into what are popularly called the "three E's", Engineering, Education and Enforcement. There must be a skilful blending of the "three E's" to solve the problem. The basic problem of good traffic management has many ramifications and every one concerned with solutions should remember that the underlying objective is to do the greatest good for the greatest number. The "three E's" are :—

Engineering	Education of	Enforcement
Highway construction. Highway maintenance. Locating signs and signals.	Driver, Pedestrian, School, Public, On safe use of High- ways and car and observance of Rules and Regulations.	Road information. Signs and markings. Auto inspection. Laws and Rules. Licences. Penalties. Patrols.

5. Vehicles and pedestrians are increasing in number. Vehicles are wider, higher, longer and speedier, necessarily requiring more road space. But most of our roads and bridges have not been designed in the past to bear either the volume or the weight of the present type of transport. So we seek the aid of Engineering to tackle this problem.

6. Complicated intersections, blind corners and bad lighting constitute the main hazards to traffic on the road. Mr. William P. Eno, a well-known traffic expert, devised the rotary system of moving traffic around complicated intersections. So, to facilitate free flow of traffic, roundabouts should be constructed at intersections and the blind corners should be removed and remodelled. Underground subways or overhead bridges may be constructed at important intersections to remove traffic congestion. Proper lighting should be arranged.

7. Successful traffic control techniques run the gamut of engineering principles. The best idea in the world is valueless if it cannot be made understandable. Mr. Eno says that traffic regulations, to be effective, must be short or they will not be read; must be clear or they will not be understood; must be reasonable or they will not be obeyed. Significant advances in traffic safety and flow can be realized through the proper and judicious use of the basic tools of the

profession—signs, signals and markings. For guiding traffic a sign is worse than useless if it cannot be read quickly; it is actually dangerous. Movable signs have a very limited place in traffic control because they are good only for temporary conditions. The signal light is fast becoming a more efficient means of control and its design and mechanical features have progressed markedly since it was first developed as an outgrowth of the old railroad lantern. The increasing use of automatic relay controllers, known as “electric brain” traffic devices, is a tribute to the resourcefulness of the traffic engineer. The red light of the signal signifies a dead stop and no pedestrian or vehicle must move beyond the throat of the street in which the pedestrian or vehicle is; the amber light means wait till the signal to proceed is given and the green light is an indication to proceed. As regards markings every traffic engineer is fully aware that painted guide-lines increase road capacity and contribute to safety. It may not solve traffic problems wholesale, but it is something everyone can see and it shows up not only on the road but in the public consciousness. In addition to signs, signals and markings, the three technical methods namely the one-way route, the reversible-lane system and the median dividers are adopted to facilitate free flow of traffic. The reversible-lane system is one which employs an unbalanced use of a road

to move the maximum amount of traffic at peak hours. For example, a six-lane highway designed normally to carry three lanes of traffic in each direction can be made to carry four or five lanes in one direction and one or two lanes in the opposite direction, depending upon traffic needs at morning and evening rush hours. Reversible-lanes are used on thoroughfares which for physical or other reasons cannot be made one-way.

8. Road surface instead of increasing *vis-a-vis* increase in vehicular and pedestrian traffic, shrinks for various reasons such as the projection of shops into the road space, random garaging and indiscriminate parking, the springing up of wayside repair shops, continuous loading and unloading operations in front of transport agencies and warehouses in busy areas, the straying of cattle on the streets, the crowding of hawkers on the foot-paths, co-existence of slow and fast moving vehicles on the roads without rigorous adherence to the lanes of traffic meant for each; religious, marriage or political processions and the constant digging of roads by utility services. These hazards should be gradually eliminated by proper planning, engineering and propaganda.

9. We have heard that the first law of nature is self-preservation, but when it comes to the dealings people have with motor vehicles, this law

does not seem to apply. It appears that neither drivers nor pedestrians have developed a natural appreciation of traffic hazards. On an average about 4,000 motor accidents are reported in Madras City every year, of which about 50 prove fatal. A study of these accidents indicates that faulty or rash driving is the major cause. Mr. Eno, in his book ‘Simplification of Highway Traffic’ states that there are four classes of persons who operate motor vehicles, viz.,

those who know the regulations and are willing to obey them;

those who do not know them but who would be disposed to obey them if they knew them;

those who know them and are not disposed to obey them; and

those who do not know the regulations and would not be disposed to obey them under any circumstances.

It is the last three classes of drivers who need to be educated to behave better, realising their responsibilities as citizens, to use the highways and cars safely and to observe the rules and regulations of the road. The Golden rule of driving, “Drive unto others as you would have others drive unto you,” should be inculcated into their minds. Just as motorists must be educated to save their own lives and the lives of others, so must pedestrians. Traffic education and propaganda must be carried on in Schools

and Colleges; at intersections, in localities where accidents are rampant, by displaying posters, charts and photographs; through the medium of Press and pictures, radio programmes, safety conferences, Schools for drivers, Exhibitions and Demonstrations and voluntary Safety First Organisations. By such intensive and constant propaganda, the people should be made to cultivate correct traffic habits and develop better road behaviour.

10. The increasing demand upon our Highways from the growing population, the imposition of modes of transportation not contemplated when they were created, bring about congestion, confusion and conflict resulting in heavy toll of traffic accidents. Accidents are complicated events, the causes of which may be (a) direct, due to delayed perception, speed, careless movement of pedestrians and carelessly boarding or alighting, (b) remote, due to inexperienced driving, bad maintenance of road, inadequate arrangement, lack of enforcement of Traffic Rules and absence of traffic signs and (c) intermediary, such as weather condition, muddy, slippery road and sharp curves. The most harmful note in accidents of any type is their damage to people, because people are the one irreplaceable thing in the entire world. Property damage can be rectified, financial loss can be compensated for, but physical injury and death are offered no replacement. If we are to have safety and protect people,

there should be intelligent traffic-law enforcement. Records prove decisively that when traffic enforcement goes up, accidents go down. The enforcement is the job of the police. The police have the twin functions of controlling traffic by ensuring its free flow and of apprehending motorists who violate traffic laws. It is an accepted fact that traffic work like household work is monotonous, routine and continuous and that the control of traffic is a thankless job. So a policeman assigned to traffic duty should understand his responsibility and discharge his duties tactfully. A good traffic policeman should avoid the following common failings: Blowing the whistle and signalling with hand to change traffic when some old lady is on the cross-walk, failing to watch the traffic block and taking immediate action to release it, creating more breaches of the peace by a loud way of reproaching drivers for minor traffic violations than the drivers themselves, slackness and lack of alertness, sloppy uniforms and equipments, unshaven and unkempt appearance, irritable disposition and excitability, unpleasantness when spoken to and tendency to argue, general lack of interest and lack of knowledge of the fundamentals of his job, failure to form the habit of making his hand or whistle signals definitive and distinctive so that the motorist or pedestrian will instantly understand what he desires him to do and unnecessary conver-

sation with other policemen, motorists or pedestrians. Firmness tempered with courtesy should be the motto of the traffic enforcement staff. Improvement in mobile patrol, intelligent marking of pedestrian crossings, proper placing of road signs and proper maintenance of statistics and accident charts for scientific planning are the salient features of enforcement.

11. It would be of interest to have a bird's eye view of the traffic enforcement in Madras City. In Madras we have about 4,000 man-drawn rickshaws, 1,000 and odd cycle rickshaws and thousands and thousands of man-drawn handcarts and thousands of bullock carts all moving on our highways, where, among them, the fast moving motor vehicles also travel. The rickshaws and handcarts which are a relic of old times and are an uncivilised form of transport, contribute to most of our traffic problems. During the course of the past 10 years the number of motor vehicles has increased from 7,000 to 20,000 and the population has increased from 9 lakhs to 17 lakhs in Madras. New roads have been laid, new colonies have sprung up and traffic problems have extended to several new centres of the City.

12. The control of traffic in Madras City, which sprawls over about 50 square miles, is done by the Traffic Department under the supervision of the Deputy Commissioner of Police,

Traffic and Licensing, assisted by his two Assistant Commissioners of Police. This Department functions under the following sections for administrative convenience:

The whole city is divided into three Ranges, each under the control of a Reserve Inspector. There is a Traffic Investigation Section which works throughout 24 hours investigating into all accidents in the City. The Taxation Department besides checking the evasion of tax in motor vehicles, deals with the control of about 5,000 Hackney Carriages in the City. The Traffic Control is done by the following methods:

- (a) Hand signals by traffic constables at important intersections of roads.
- (b) Light signals at nights, viz., Broadway and General Hospital junctions.
- (c) Automatic light signal at the junction of Dr. Nair Bridge and the Egmore High Road.

Besides the above, there are fixed pedestrian crossings at important places like Nethaji Subhas Chandra Bose Road, Law College, Mount Road, Thousand Lights, General Hospital Road etc., manned by constables for the safety of public. In order to ensure free flow of traffic in congested areas like George Town and Kothawal Chavadi, certain restrictions are ordered, namely, (a) One-way traffic,

(b) No parking area, (c) Time restrictions on movements of certain vehicles in certain areas, (d) Prohibition of the movements of certain types of vehicles on busy roads and (e) No overtaking on Bridges and narrow streets. To minimise accidents, speed restrictions, traffic islands at junctions of roads, mandatory sign boards indicating different cautions etc., have also been introduced. The speeds of different types of motor vehicles at important parts of the City are being checked by laying traps frequently with modern equipments. Dual way and Double lane traffic have been permitted on Muthuswamy Iyer Road, Fortside Road and Mount Road respectively to ease congestion at peak hours. Concrete railings have been erected on pavements of important portions of certain roads, to segregate pedestrians from Highway traffic, providing crossings at intervals indicated by mandatory sign boards. On wide portions of main roads "Lay byes" for buses at stopping places have also been provided to avoid obstruction to free flow of traffic. To enforce efficient control of traffic, surprise checks by Police Gazetted Officers are regularly conducted and suitable action is taken against offenders. These surprise checks are in addition to the normal day-to-day checking by the controlling staff. All accidents, however minor they may be, are thoroughly

investigated and disposed of on legal merits by the Investigation Branch which works in 5 teams throughout 24 hours under the control of one Inspector. To educate the public on road safety and sense, regular propaganda machinery is set up in the Traffic Department, and it discharges its functions through

- (1) propaganda by mobile van ;
- (2) propaganda by Head Constables at important junctions with power mikes ;
- (3) display of slides in Cinema Theatres ;
- (4) instruction of school children during school hours ; and
- (5) education of motor drivers by way of instructions and showing the common faults committed by other drivers.

13. In short the traffic problem can be compared to the observation about the weather attributed to Mark Twain—"Everybody talks about it but nobody does anything about it." Everybody's business must not be allowed to become nobody's business. The efficient maintenance of traffic control is dependent on the co-operative effort by the public, the motorists and the policemen. There should, therefore, be all round co-operation to solve these all-important traffic problems.

THE DISTRICT POLICE FORCE. CHINGLEPUT DISTRICT

BY

K. CHENTHAMARAI

Deputy Superintendent of Police

Chingleput district adjoins Madras City and is bounded by the Bay of Bengal on the east, South Arcot District on the south, North Arcot District and Chittoor Districts on the west and Nellore on the north. The district which is 3,061 square miles in area acquires its importance by its proximity to Madras City which abuts it on the north, west and south. During 1947 a portion of Saidapet Taluk of this district, about 19 square miles in area was annexed to the City consequent upon the expansion of the latter's limits. At St. Thomas Mount are the Police Headquarters of the district and the Headquarters of the Commander of the Madras Area of Indian Army.

2. The Police Administration of this district was started with an Executive Force of one D.S.P., 10 Inspectors and 1,262 H.Cs. and P.Cs. in 1879. As years advanced, with reference to the varying conditions of crimes and criminals and law and order exigencies, the administrative efficiency warranted from time to time the reorganisation and expansion of the above Police

Force. The old station house officers of the rank of H.Cs. were replaced by S.Is. The D.S.P. who had to do all the supervision alone, came to be assisted by gazetted assistants viz., A.S.Ps. and Dy.S.Ps. The local Police were not able to quell disturbances and riots and so an armed striking Force, known as the Armed Reserve, was brought into existence at the District Headquarters in 1926. This A.R. also expanded gradually. The Table on the next page would show how the Police Force in the District was expanded by major reorganisations to meet the needs in the district.

3. The last reorganisation on 1st November 1955, was due to the Police taking over prohibition enforcement work. In its wake the jurisdiction of the District was reorganised with four Sub-Divisions, 11 Circles, 46 Police Stations and 10 O.Ps. In the A.R. there are now 9 platoons. The P.G.R. which was formed during 1930, was abolished in 1947 as the necessity for it ceased to exist. The D.I.B. which was formed in the year 1928 is now being manned by an Inspector

Dates of re- organisation	Sub.-Dn.	Insp's Circles.	Pol. Stns.	O.P.	D.S.P.	Dy.S.P.	C.Is.	S.Is.	H.Cs.	P.Cs.	S.M.	Sgts.	H.M.	H.Cs.	P.Cs.
9- 4-1926 ...	1	7	35	13	1	1	7	35	109	829	1	2	1	8	80
22- 3-1934 ...	2	8	37	10	1	2	8	59 1 Sgt.	127	950	1	5	2	16	172
30- 9-1953 ...	2	8	38	10	1	2	8	60	122	930	1	9	8	39	498
1-11-1955 ...	4	11	46	10	1	4	13	72 + 2 + 7 Sgts.	135 + 8	996	1	9	8	40	509

of Police. Similarly the Special Branch is also manned by an Inspector and 1 S. I. instead of 2 S.Is. as hitherto.

4. Besides the District being on the borders of the City, the existence of several Industrial Centres and other places of historic interest and centres of pilgrimage add to the importance of the district. The Civil Aerodrome at Meenambakkam, the T.I. Cycle Works at Ambattur, The Ashok Motor Works at Ennur, The Standard Motor Coy., at Vandalur and The Wimco Match Factory, are some of the important Industrial Centres. Kancheepuram, Tiruvotthiyur, Trivellore, Thirukalikundram etc., are important places of pilgrimage. The Seven Pagodas at Mahabalipuram attract several local and foreign visitors every year. These cast additional duties on the Police Force of this district.

5. Crimes are moderately heavy in Chingleput district. The bushhold-up cases which were a scare to the user of the Highway on the borders of the City and round about during the years 1951 and 1952 and the lorry hold-up cases during the end of 1954 were peculiar features of this district's crime history. Fortunately, the gangs responsible for such disturbing crimes were unearthed and the offenders brought to book. The repeal of the C.T. Act has had its effect on the level

6. The public of this district have been co-operating with the police to a commendable extent and the members of the V.V.C.s have rendered valuable services in the prevention and detection of crimes.

PHONE : 24.
GRAMS : 'DIAMOND'

MANUFACTURERS
OF
SURGICAL INSTRUMENTS
AND

MOON BRAND
(சந்திரன் மார்க்)
Stainless Steel
Goods



mithila metallic Industries
KUMBAKONAM.

Please Visit
for
Exquisite Workmanship & Guaranteed Gold Jewels & Silver Vessels

"RADHAKRISHNA JEWELLERY"
GOLD & SILVER MERCHANTS
BIG BAZAAR STREET, COIMBATORE
PHONE No. 1290
Propr. : S. T. RADHAKRISHNAN

Please Visit
for
Durable Guaranteed Fancy
Gold & Diamond Jewels

"SWARNAMALIGAI"
P. A. RAJU CHETTIAR & BROS.
BIG BAZAAR STREET, COIMBATORE
TEL : RAJA P. B. No. 139 PHONE : 268

PHOTOGRAPHY IN CRIME DETECTION

BY

P. SEETHARAMAN

Superintendent, Finger Print Bureau, Vellore

Photography is both an art and a science and it plays an important role in almost every field of activity. While to some persons the art of photography is a pastime, recreation or hobby, to some scientific pursuits it is an indispensable necessity. The Police, Engineering, Medical, Education, Registration and Survey Departments have recently been making increasing use of photography in their routine work.

2. Photography affords invaluable aid in the Police Department in the detection of crimes and identification of criminals. It is the best means for the preservation of evidence at scenes of crime or of traffic accidents. Comparison of finger-prints, foot-prints, tool-marks and marks on fired bullets and comparison of handwriting specimens are made possible by photography. Visual presentation of evidence is also facilitated through the medium of photography. It can be truly said that the camera is a silent witness that will never lie. The camera eye is more powerful than the human eye since it can exactly reproduce things which are seen for no longer

than brief moments—as it often happens when a crime is committed.

3. Though photography is a branch of Physics, yet in recent years it has developed to such an extent and has so much practical application in life that it can be justly called a science by itself. Astonishing results are achieved by the techniques evolved by the imagination, skill and experience of the modern photo-scientist.

4. The following case will amply illustrate the usefulness of photography in Police work. A document containing a highly smudged finger impression, which was disputed in a Court of Law was received in the Finger Print Bureau, Vellore, for expert examination and opinion. The document was purported to have been executed by an illiterate lady. She repudiated the execution of the document and denied the thumb print on the document. The Court recorded her sample left thumb-impression also and sent it as well as the smudge for comparison. The impression on the document was highly smudged, having been taken with cart-grease (Fig. 1). A casual

JAN.-MARCH '59]

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

61

examination showed that no opinion was possible, but when the impression was examined with light passed through it, the same smudged impression revealed the pattern and the characteristics. Thereupon the impression was photographed with light reflected on the back of the document at an angle

of 45°. The photograph so obtained showed very clearly the pattern and the characteristics of the impression (Fig. 2). It was of a whorl pattern. The specimen left thumb impression of the alleged executant (Fig. 3) is an entirely different pattern, namely a loop.



Fig. 1

Fig. 2

Fig. 3

This clearly indicated that the document was a faked one and the impression was a forgery. In this case, due entirely to the photographic technique evolved by the Madras State Finger Print Bureau, it was possible to present the real facts to the Court in a convincing manner. The opinion given by our expert proved the bogus nature of the document.

5. In another civil case, the plaintiff in the suit denied that the thumb-impression affixed on a receipt alleged to have been issued by him was his.

Thereupon the Court obtained his specimen left thumb-impressions and forwarded them together with the document containing the disputed impression to the Finger Print Bureau, Vellore, for comparison and furnishing an expert opinion.

6. The impression on the receipt was highly smudged and did not disclose sufficient clear details. A photograph of the impression taken by ordinary means (Fig. 4) was not helpful. The photograph taken by the Reflex method, as described in para 4 (Fig. 5) showed clear ridge

details and on a comparison of the print with the specimen left thumb-impression of the Plaintiff recorded before the Court (Fig. 6) they were found to be identical and to relate to the same person. Thus it was proved that the contention of the Plaintiff that he had not affixed his thumb print on the receipt was false.



Fig. 4

Fig. 5

Fig. 6

SPORTSFOLIO

VI ALL-INDIA POLICE DUTY MEET

Report from the Government of India, Ministry of Home Affairs,
New Delhi

The VI All-India Police Duty Meet was held at Jaipur, in Rajasthan, from the 4th to 7th of November, 1958.

2. The Meet consisted of the usual five sections in which competitions have been conducted every year, namely (a) Rifle Shooting, (b) Revolver Shooting, (c) First Aid and Ambulance Drill, (d) Police Wireless, and (e) Scientific Aids to investigation. The scope of the last competition was, however, further enlarged this year by introducing a test in Police Photography for amateurs. The following tests now comprise this competition :—

- (i) Medico-Legal test
- (ii) Finger Prints
- (iii) Foot Prints.
- (iv) Police Portraits.

- (a) 100 yards ... Application—Standing position.
- (b) 200 yards ... Application—Kneeling position.
- (c) 300 yards ... Application—Prone position.
- (d) 300 yards ... Snap Shooting—Prone position.

The standard service .303 rifle was used by all the competitors who brought their own arms and ammunition from their States. The standard of firing was higher than that exhibited last year in all the four practices. In two practices, out of a possible 100 points, 98, 96 & 94 were scored by competitors.

(v) Observation.

(vi) Photography.

3. The Meet this year was different from those held previously in the respect that for the first time, the Prime Minister's Police Medal for Life Saving, which was instituted this year, was awarded to eight Policemen from all over India in recognition of the outstanding work done by them in saving human life. This award has been a source of great encouragement to the Force.

Rifle shooting competition

4. This competition drew the maximum number of entries. All the States and the Union territories of Delhi, Himachal Pradesh, and Tripura took part in this competition, which consisted of the following four practices :—

Revolver shooting competition

All the States and Units which participated in the Rifle Shooting

competition also took part in this competition.

Each team had to fire the following four practices :—

- (a) Distance 25 yards ... Application—Standing position.
- (b) Distance 30 yards ... Attack—Standing position.
- (c) Distance 50 yards ... Application—Prone position.
- (d) Distance 15 yards ... Rapid firing—Battle Crouch position.

The weapon used by the competitors was the standard .380 service revolver. Competitors brought the weapons and ammunitions from their respective States.

Competitors from Andhra Pradesh secured two first prizes and a third prize. The first prizes in the remaining two practices went to Bihar and Kerala. Competitors from Delhi secured two second prizes. Competitors from U.P. secured one second prize and a third prize. A competitor from J. & K was a popular winner of a second prize, while the remaining third prizes were obtained by competitors from Orissa and C.R.P. The medal for the Best Revolver Shot was won by Reserve Inspector Mohammed Ashique Khan of Uttar Pradesh. The competitors achieved a very high standard of shooting.

First Aid and Ambulance Drill competition

As usual, this competition was organised by the St. John Ambulance Association, with the assistance of the Director, Medical and Health Ser-

vices, Rajasthan and his staff. It is a team competition. The following States were represented by their teams in this competition :—

- (1) Andhra Pradesh, (2) Bihar, (3) Bombay, (4) Delhi, (5) Madras, (6) Punjab, (7) U.P. and (8) West Bengal.

The Hardinge Police Ambulance Challenge Shield awarded to the winners of this competition went to the team from Andhra Pradesh. The runners-up trophy, the Straight Ambulance Challenge Cup was won by the U.P. team. The team from Bihar stood third. According to the Secretary-General of the Red Cross who attended on the final day, there was a big improvement in the standards exhibited at the competition.

Wireless Transmission, Receiving and Mechanics competition

The response to this competition from the States was particularly good this year. All the States and the centrally administered areas of Delhi and the Andaman and Nicobar Islands

JAN.-MARCH '59]

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL



The Madras State Hockey Teams which put up a plucky fight against the champion Punjab Team at the recent IX All India Police Athletic and Sports Meet at Calcutta. The Inspector-General of Police, Madras, is in the centre of the group.



The Special Armed Police Gymnastics Team which knocked off top honours at the recent IX All India Police Athletic and Sports Meet at Calcutta.

competed in this section. The winner's shield was annexed by the team from Rajasthan. The West Bengal team emerged as the runners-up, while the team from Madras came third. This competition was organised by the Directorate-General of Police Wireless of Home Ministry.

Scientific aids to Investigation competition

On account of the inclusion of the test in Police photography in this competition, the rules regarding the composition of the teams had to be revised. Accordingly, each team for this competition consisted of one Inspector, 2 Sub-Inspectors, 1 A.S.I. or H.C. and one Constable. The test in Police Photography was compulsory for the two Sub-Inspectors and optional for a Police Inspector. These officers were also required to take part in Medico-legal, Finger-print and Foot-print tests, while the A.S.I. or H.C. and the Constable were eligible for the remaining two tests. Ten States and the Union Territory of Delhi participated in this competition. J. & K. had sent a team of observers to watch this competition.

This competition was organised and judged by officers from the Central Forensic Institute, assisted by two officials of the Intelligence Bureau and one from the C.P.T.C., Abu. The problems set for the competitors were very interesting and required detective

ability and skill of a high order to solve them.

The shield for the team securing the highest marks in the aggregate was won by West Bengal. The shield for the runners-up team was won by Bihar. The challenge shields in four individual tests were won by Andhra Pradesh, Bombay, Delhi and Rajasthan. The shields in the remaining two tests were secured by the competitors from Bihar.

Miscellaneous

Teams consisting of over 500 officers and other ranks from all the States and other ranks from all the States and Delhi, Himachal Pradesh, Tripura, Andaman and Nicobar Islands and the C.R.P., Neemuch, attended this Meet. All the teams were accommodated in barracks in the Reserve Police Lines at Jaipur. The Rajasthan Police had also put up tents for the use of J.C.Os. The judges and gazetted officers were housed in the officers' quarters adjoining the Police Lines and in the local Circuit House and a Hotel. Three messes were run, one for the gazetted officers, one for the J.C.Os. and another for O.Rs. The arrangements made in the camp for the boarding and lodging of all ranks were very good and sanitation and medical facilities in the camp were excellent. All the teams had been provided with adequate transport for their use and Rajasthan went all the way to look after all their guests in the best traditions of hospitality.

The Meet was inaugurated on the morning of 4th November, 1958, by the Chief Minister of Rajasthan by firing the first rifle shot on the 61st Cavalry Range where the shooting competitions were conducted. The Rifle Shooting competition commenced after that and the other competitions were also started at the site adjoining the General Camp in the Reserve Police Lines. Officers and men of the Sikh Light Infantry and 61st Cavalry supervised the arrangements at the "butts" and in the statistical office at the Range and did a fine job.

On the 6th November, 1958, the Chief Minister and the Home Minister of Rajasthan went round the Duty Meet Camp and witnessed various competitions that were in progress.

On the opening day of the Meet the Governor of Rajasthan gave an "At Home" at the Raj Bhavan, in the evening, to the visiting teams. On the 5th November, 1958, in the evening, the Chief Minister was "At Home" at the Circuit House. This year the Rajasthan Police held the customary 'Bara Khana' at night on the 7th November, 1958. This function was attended by the Home Minister of Rajasthan.

The closing ceremony was held on the evening of the 7th November at the Maharaja's College Grounds, Jaipur. The Governor of Rajasthan presided

over this function and gave away the prizes. The persons to be honoured first at the prize distribution were the eight Policemen who had won the coveted Prime Minister's Police Medal for Life Saving instituted this year. After the prize distribution, the Governor of Rajasthan declared the Meet closed. A massed band display by the Rajasthan Police followed by the sounding of the retreat brought the function to an end. Later, the Rajasthan Police entertained the competitors and visitors to tea and the Rajasthan Armed Constabulary then put up a most effective and spectacular display of mass P.T. and "Camel Sowars" by flood light.

The Rajasthan Police had arranged cultural performances by local artistes as well as by Policemen in the Duty Meet Camp in the evenings after the day's competitions had come to an end. These cultural performances were greatly appreciated. Rajasthan handicrafts and other items were displayed at the Camp with the assistance of the local Handicraft Board.

The Press and the All India Radio gave very good coverage to the Meet.

The scope of the Scientific Aids Competition would be further increased next year and the possibility of bringing in the Frontier Protection Police to take part in the Meet is also being examined.

Last year, the Ministry of Home Affairs had issued a circular letter to all the State Governments impressing upon them the importance of their teams participating in the Duty Meet. The number of teams taking part in the competitions this year was considerably larger than in the previous years. While the shooting competitions and the competition in Wire-

less Telegraphy attracted the maximum number of entries, the response to the competition in Scientific Aids to Investigation is still not very good. M.H.A. may request all the States once again to send their teams to this Meet regularly and particularly for the Scientific Aids to Investigation Competition which is the most important section of the Duty Meet.

Phone: 115

Cable: "TANGAVILAS"

For Pleasure & Energy

USE

"THANGA VILAS TOBACCO"

THE SPECIAL QUALITY STANDS TOPMOST IN THE MARKET

Manufacturers: **M. A. RAJACK & CO**

THANGA VILAS TOBACCO FACTORY, KUMBAKONAM

தமிழ் நாட்டில்
எல்லோரும் விரும்புவது

"ஏ. ஆர். ஆர். சீவல்"



எங்களிடம் 10, 5, 2½, 1 பலம், அரைப் பலம், 1 அணு, அரையணு, காலணு
காலணுவிற்கு இரண்டு பொட்டலங்களும் கிடைக்கும். தேவைக்கு எழுதுங்கள்.

elephone: No. 41

Telegram: "MYDEENCO"

Always Use Mydeen Tobacco

E. S. MYDEEN & CO
KUMBAKONAM



INDO-AMERICAN ATHLETIC MEET

On 25th April 1959 the Indo-American Athletic Meet was declared open at the Rajaratnam Stadium, Madras, by Dr. Thomas W. Simons, the American Consul-General at Madras. Sri S. Balakrishna Shetty, I.P., Inspector-General of Police, presided over the function and Mrs. Balakrishna Shetty gave away the certificates.

The results of the Meet were as follows :—			Time
1,500 metres	... (1) Ike Matza ...	... 4 m. 10.1 s.	
	(2) Rayappan.		
100 metres	... (1) Ken Kave ...	... 10.8 s.	
	(2) Satyanarayana.		
800 metres	... (1) L. Stevens ...	... 2 m. 3.4 s.	
	(2) Ike Matza.		
200 metres	... (1) Ken Kave ...	... 22.5 s.	
	(2) Satyanarayana.		
3,000 metres	... (1) William Sawyer ...	... 8 m. 44.4 s.	
	(2) Rayappan.		
High jump	... (1) Denis ...	... 6 feet 4 inches.	
	(2) Dorairaj.		
Discus	... (1) Lazaro ...	... 120 feet.	
	(2) Ken Kave.		

The Madras discus champion, Lazaro, accounted for the lone victory by our athletes, with a throw of 120 feet.

Among the American sportsmen, the one who impressed the big gathering most was sprinter Ken Kave who had a stride very much reminiscent of that of Jesse Owens.

LEGAL NOTES

MADRAS WEEKLY NOTES No. 2, dated 2nd MARCH 1959

Cr. Revn. Case No. 876 of 1957

(Cr. Revn. Petn. No. 853 of 1957)

December 30, 1957

RAMASWAMI, J.

Parthasarathy

... Appellant

Vs.

The State

... Respondent

I.P.C. (XLV of 1860) Ss. 304A and 337—Motor accident—Driver—Liability—Negligence—Considerations.

Where the accused drove the bus at a speed which the circumstances existing at the time of the accident did not warrant, did not keep a proper lookout to avoid collision and failed to apply the efficient brakes, which he had, in time, which braking would have averted the collision, and injuries were caused to four persons two of whom died, held that the accused was guilty of the offence under Ss. 304A and 337 I.P.C.

The rate of speed which will be considered dangerous varies with the nature, conditions and use of the particular highway and the amount of traffic which actually is or may be expected to be on it. The driver of the vehicle must drive at a speed that will permit of his stopping or deflect-

ing his course within the limits of his vision and if he strikes a person or object without seeing that person or object he may in the circumstances be placed in the dilemma that either he was not keeping a sufficient lookout or if he was keeping a lookout he was driving too fast in view of the lookout that could be kept. It is the duty of the driver to drive his vehicle at a speed which will not imperil the safety of others using the road. The driver is under a duty of using whatever means are at hand to avoid a threatened collision. The most obvious means of avoiding the collision are the brakes with which the car must be equipped. It will constitute culpable negligence if a driver drives a vehicle with patently defective brakes or fails to apply the brakes in time.

(Petition under Sections 435 and 439 of the Code of Criminal Procedure,

1898, praying the High Court to revise the order of the Court of the Sessions Judge of North Arcot at Vellore, dated 7-12-57 and made in Criminal Appeal No. 98 of 1957, preferred against the order of the Court of the Sub-divisional Magistrate, Cheyyar, in C.C. No. 183 of 1957.)

MADRAS WEEKLY NOTES No. 3, dated 30th MARCH 1959

Cr.R.C. No. 487 of 1958

Cr.R.P. No. 462 of 1958

and

Cr.R.C. No. 988 of 1958

(Taken up as No. 13 of 1958)

RAMASWAMI, J.

Santhanam Iyengar

... Appellant

Vs.

The State

... Respondent

Madras City Police Act (III of 1888) Ss. 45 and 46—'Common gaming house'—What is.

Gambling by itself is not an offence and it becomes an offence only when the gaming takes place in a common gaming house or in a public place.

A common gaming house means a place of public resort where a number of persons are invited to congregate for the purpose of gambling. In order to constitute a common gaming house it must be shown that the owner or occupier takes a fixed commission which is irrespective of the result of the gaming. With a view

to convict a person for keeping a common gaming house it is necessary for the prosecution to prove that he owned the house or was the occupier of it and that the instruments of gaming were kept or used for the profit or gain of that person.

The game that is played must be a game of chance. The word 'mere' used in the phrase 'games of mere skill' stands for 'pure.' In each case it has to be determined whether the main element is one of skill or of chance. If the preponderating element is chance then it would come under the Act otherwise not.

MADRAS WEEKLY NOTES No. 3, dated 30th MARCH 1959

CrI. App. Nos. 126 and 127 of 1958,

(October 8, 1958 Asvina 16, 1880)

SOMASUNDARAM AND RAMASWAMI, JJ.

Muthukarunga Konar

... Appellant

Vs.

The State

... Respondent

Evidence Act S. 24—Retracted confession.

The accused were charged with the murder of deceased. The evidence of motive was strong and the prosecution had also shown that the accused alone had the opportunity to commit the offence. They were seen with the deceased near about the time and place of the murder. Accused one made a confession to P.W. 9, a respectable ryot and a close relative of the accused. After arrest the accused made confessions before the Subdivisional Magistrate and they were recorded after taking the legitimate precautions

laid down in the Criminal Procedure Code and the Criminal Rules of Practice. An aruval was recovered on the information of accused 2. The accused retracted the confessions and said that the confessional statements were tutored and enforced.

Held, that the confessions were admissible and true and can be acted upon without corroboration and further that on the evidence the confessional statements stood corroborated in material particulars.

Case law and principles on acceptance of retracted confessions discussed.

THE CRIMINAL LAW JOURNAL, VOL. 60 of MARCH 1959

1959 CH.L.J. 318 (Vol. 60 C.N. 96)—A.I.R. 1959, Calcutta 176 (V 46 C 49)

K. C. DAS GUPTA AND N. K. SEN JJ.

Jhagru Tewari

... Petitioner

Vs.

State of West Bengal and another

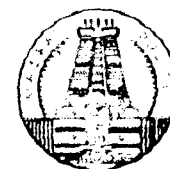
... Opposite Parties

Criminal Revn. No. 741 of 1958, dated 7th August 1958

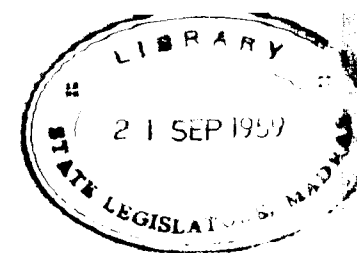
Criminal Revn. No. 741 of 1958, dated 7th August, 1958. False implication—Decision as to, on what depends.

(a) Penal Code (1860) S. 143—**Attack by persons not recognised—** It is undoubtedly true that if an attack is made by persons who are not

1859



1959



**THE
MADRAS POLICE
JOURNAL**

100

SPECIAL *Centenary* NUMBER

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

(ISSUED UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF THE INSPECTOR-GENERAL OF POLICE, MADRAS)



Editor :

G. V. NARAYANAN, M.A., I.P.S.

Assistant Editors :

M. D. EBENEZER, B.A.

P. SEETHARAMAN

M. V. SESHADRI, B.A., B.L.

NOTE

The views and opinions expressed in this Journal are solely those of the individual authors and contributors and do not necessarily reflect the views and opinions of the Editor.

69358

recognised there is often a chance of somebody who did not take part in the assault being falsely implicated. The decision whether an accused person has been falsely implicated or not has to be made by the Court on careful scrutiny of the evidence and on a consideration of all the circumstances.

Anno. A.I.R. Man. Penal Code, S. 148 N. 1.

(b) Criminal P.C. (1898) Ss. 161 and 173—person's name not included in police report nor his statement furnished—whether such person can be produced as witness by prosecution.

While the law no doubt requires that the report of the Police Officer

submitted under S. 173 should include the names of the persons who are acquainted with the circumstances of the case and also requires that the statements recorded under sub-section 3 of Section 161 of all the persons whom the prosecution proposes to examine as its witnesses should be furnished to the accused, there is nothing in the law that prevents the prosecution from producing or the court from examining as a witness in the case, a person whose name has not been included in the report made or whose statement has not been furnished.

Crime for the Quarter ending 31-12-1958 in Madras State

Serial No.	Name of District	Area in sq. miles	Population	Total number of crimes	Offences relating to coins	Offences relating to currency and bank notes	Murder	Kidnapping	Dacoity and preparation and assembly for dacoity	Robbery	House-breaking	Theft, ordinary and cattle	Criminal assault	Total number of juveniles concerned	Police men for 10,000 of population	
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)	(11)	(12)	(13)	(14)	(15)	(16)	
1	Madras City	49.4	14 lakhs.	1,859	...	...	3	8	...	...	3	52	1,293	38	58	26
2	Tiruchirappally Rly. Dist.	2,451.5	...	272	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	254	20	...	...
3	Chingleput	3,294.03	18,94,912	948	...	...	4	5	...	1	91	361	109	11	9	...
4	South Arcot	4,208	27,90,651	1,572	...	...	7	2	1	15	154	404	42	10	6	...
5	Tanjore	3,742.01	28,82,670	669	...	...	7	...	...	1	265	403	12	7	7	...
6	Tiruchirappally	5,571.13	26,95,071	1,175	...	...	9	8	1	6	163	545	...	...	8	...
7	Madurai North	3,099.24	16,22,989	806	2	...	6	8	...	7	66	204	6	12	6	...
8	Madurai Urban	1,769.76	12,68,828	527	...	...	7	2	1	...	53	275	18	24	12	...
9	Ramanathapuram.	5,919	23,09,938	3,513	...	1	32	24	3	4	151	603	50	18	8	...
10	Tirunelveli	4,337	24,45,967	851	...	25	5	2	1	7	119	364	53	23	7	...
11	Kanyakumari	646	8,24,000	443	1	1	6	...	...	2	41	89	1	...	8	...
12	Coimbatore	6,024	31,54,296	1,178	...	1	39	8	...	4	200	508	39	16	6	...
13	Nilgiris	1,098.14	2,79,359	120	...	...	1	...	...	...	57	40	22	5	13.1	...
14	North Arcot	4,654	28,65,235	1,229	...	...	9	5	2	...	224	448	...	46	5.3	...
15	Salem	6,894.8	30,97,220	517	...	...	12	2	1	1	126	379	1	3	6	...



DR. RAJENDRA PRASAD,
President of India.

Rashtrapati Bhavan,
New Delhi,
July 4, 1959.
Asadha 13, 1881 (Saka.)

On the occasion of their Centenary Celebrations, I send my greetings and best wishes to the Madras Police which, as the first regularly organised Police force in India, can look back with pride to this long and unbroken tradition of public service. I am sure they will also derive inspiration from that feeling so that they are able to give a still better account of themselves in the changed conditions of today.

I wish the Madras Police Centenary Celebrations all success.

DR. RAJENDRA PRASAD



DR. S. RADHAKRISHNAN,
Vice President of India.

Rajya Sabha,
New Delhi,
28th June, 1959

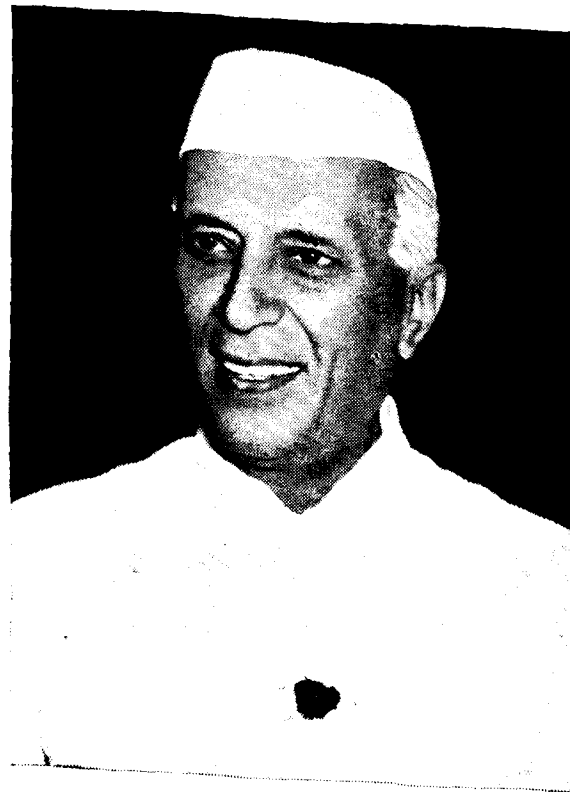
I am glad to know that this year marks the Centenary of the establishment of the Madras Police in 1859. In spite of troubles and changes of administration, the Police of Madras have done exceedingly well and it is my earnest hope that they will continue to serve our people with efficiency and integrity.

DR. S. RADHAKRISHNAN



CONTENTS

1. FIRST PAGE	...	...	...	...	1
2. MESSAGES	...	...	...	...	5
3. FOREWORD— <i>By the Inspector-General Of Police, Madras.</i>	...	...	...	...	33
4. IN MEMORIAM	...	...	...	...	35
5. EDITORIAL	...	...	...	...	37
5. SPEECH					
— <i>By the Home Minister, Govt. of Madras, on 25-8-59, over the A. I. R. on the occasion of the Police Centenary celebrations.</i>	...	...	...	...	41
6. POLICE AND THE PUBLIC					
— <i>By Sri P. V. Rajamannar, Chief Justice, High Court, Madras.</i>	...	...	...	...	44
ON POLICE— <i>By Dr Sir C. P. Ramaswami Iyer</i>	...	...	...	...	46
ON DOGS— <i>By Sri F. V. Arul, I. P.</i>	...	...	...	...	49
GREEN LEAVES.	...	...	...	...	52
HUMOUR IN THE POLICE— <i>By Sri A. S. P. Iyer, I. C. S.</i>	...	...	...	...	56
UNIVERSITIES AND THE POLICE— <i>By Sri N. Subramaniam, B. A. (Hons)</i>	...	...	...	...	58
MESSAGES	...	...	...	...	64
POLICEMAN, PART OF SOCIETY— <i>By Sri M. G. Rajaram, I. A. S.</i>	...	...	...	...	74
CRIMINAL INVESTIGATION					
— <i>By Sri H. N. Sircar, I. P., Inspector-General of Police, West Bengal</i>	...	...	...	...	76
THEY SAID SO IN 1903— <i>By Sri C. V. Narasimhan, I. P. S.</i>	...	...	...	...	79
HEREDITY & CRIME— <i>By Sri H. K. Ghazi, I. A. S.</i>	...	...	...	...	86
MESSAGES	...	...	...	...	90
MY EARLY POLICE TRAINING— <i>By Sri M. Singaravelu, I. P. S.</i>	...	...	...	...	93
HINTS TO YOUNG POLICE OFFICERS— <i>By Sri P. N. Ramaswami I. C. S.</i>	...	...	...	...	97



SRI JAWAHARLAL NEHRU,
Prime Minister of India.

Prime Minister's House,
New Delhi,
June 27, 1959.

I understand that the Madras Police is completing hundred years of its existence in September 1959 and is celebrating this centenary. I send my good wishes on this occasion.

I have sometimes criticised the police, but I have often wondered at the great responsibilities they have to carry and the quick judgments they have to make from time to time. Theirs is indeed a difficult and delicate task and we should sympathise with them. At the same time, they should remember that they are constantly before the public eye and in a democratic structure of society the police are a part of the public and not opposed to it. Therefore, the only way to work successfully and effectively is to have the confidence and cooperation of the public. If they have this, their work is made much lighter and their reputation is thereby enhanced.

JAWAHARLAL NEHRU



SRI BISNURAM MEDHI,
Governor of Madras.

I am happy to know that the Centenary of the Madras Police will be celebrated this year and that a special number of the Madras Police Journal and a Centenary Volume will also be published.

The completion of one hundred years of useful service is an important event and the Madras Police can legitimately be proud of their achievements during these years. The work of the police has in recent times considerably increased not only in dealing with problems relating to law and order but also in doing welfare work.

The days when the Policeman was definitely looked upon as a natural enemy are now happily gone. To-day, there is every sign of better cordiality between the public and the police. The Policeman has a right to expect understanding, sympathy and co-operation from the public. The citizen, on the other hand, expects not only protection and help, but also absolute impartiality and courtesy from the Policeman. The Police Force is a disciplined force and the members should avail themselves of all the opportunities that arise to work in their sphere of duty with a spirit of dedicated service.

On the happy occasion of the celebration of the Madras Police Centenary, I send my warm felicitations to all the Officers and men in the Police Department for all health, happiness and prosperity.

July, 29 1959.

BISNURAM MEDHI,



SRI G. B. PANT,
Union Minister for Home Affairs.

Home Minister, India,
New Delhi,
July 15, 1959.

Greetings to the officers and men of the Madras Police Force on this historic occasion when the Force celebrates its Centenary.

The history of our country during the last hundred years has witnessed momentous changes. After the attainment of Independence, the Police has assumed new responsibilities and duties. It is called upon to function as a guardian of the orderly processes of social living and a protector and defender of the fundamental rights and liberties of the citizens of a free and democratic country. I trust that the Madras Police Force which has over the years won a high reputation for efficiency and discipline will make this memorable celebration an occasion for dedicating itself anew to the service of the people and the maintenance of the dignity of the rule of the law.

G. B. PANT

No. 60, Bazlullah Road,
Theagarayanagar,
Madras - 17

The Madras Police on the whole is a first class organisation. May it long continue to maintain its quality.

Efficiency and honesty are the qualities required from top to the lowest bottom. I am glad to say that in these two respects the Madras Police have or at least seem to have beaten all other departments of Government.

We do not want totalitarianism. So the Police officers and men should refuse to think in terms of this political party or that—not even in terms of the ruling party. Their uniform must be a symbol of absolute honesty and fairness.

One word of advice more: I would like the common policeman to develop the great art of being kind in thought and word to poor people.

27th June, 1959

C. RAJAGOPALACHARI.

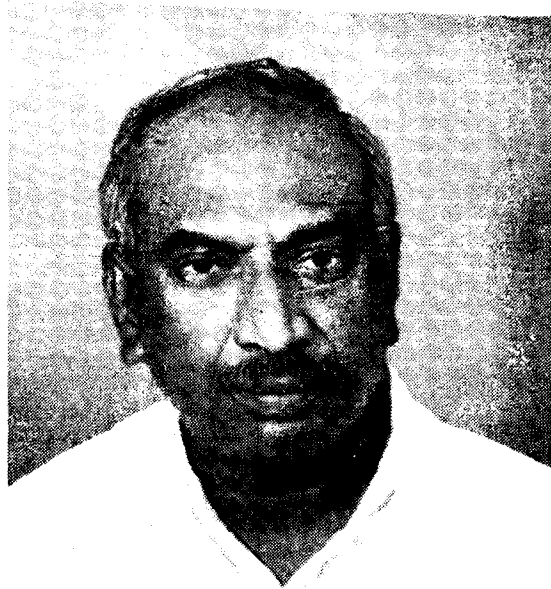
Chief Justice of India,
Supreme Court,
July 2, 1959.

I am glad to note that the Madras Police will celebrate its centenary during the coming months of August-September. The force has deserved well of the people they serve and may well celebrate its centenary with justification and pride.

Very onerous duties are cast upon the police to prevent and detect crimes, protect the lives and properties of the people and to preserve peace and tranquillity in the land. Apart from discharging these duties, the police also have, in a welfare state, to play an important role to foster and regulate the civic sense and responsibility of the people. While, therefore, they should be courteous and civil to the people, they should be firm in their determination to discharge their primary duties without fear or favour. They should be unconcerned with all political exigencies. In short, their duty should be to protect the people in every way. In the discharge of their duty, they would be entitled to expect co-operation and support from the public in general and I hope they will get the same in plenty. The members of the force should develop a sense of discipline and responsibility and recognition of their services by the people will not be long in coming in ample measure.

I wish the celebrations all success.

S. R. DAS,
Chief Justice of India



SRI K. KAMARAJ,
Chief Minister of Madras.

Fort St. George,
Madras,
June 26, 1959.

The functions of the Police have changed enormously since the attainment of Independence and I am happy to say that our Police have, with alacrity, adjusted themselves to the new demands and requirements of society. They are not only the custodians of law and order but active participants in the exciting endeavour of the building up of our nation. They have, of course, acquitted themselves creditably in their new role as well.

In this connection I should like to recall it was in Madras that the Police were properly organised first in our country 100 years ago, and they have justified this signal honour by performing their onerous and difficult task of maintaining law and order and protecting the person and property of the citizens in a praiseworthy manner.

They deserve all congratulations on their success, which I send most willingly, and they are in need of the best wishes of the people too, for their work is too delicate to be done without the co-operation of the people. My best wishes and greetings to the personnel of our Police Force on the occasion of the Centenary Celebrations.

K. KAMARAJ,
Chief Minister of Madras.

Chief Minister,
Madhya Pradesh,

Bhopal,
July 10, 1959,
Asadha 19, 1881 (Saka)

I am glad that the Madras Police completes 100 years of its distinguished career. An Institution is necessarily measured by its age, for age brings maturity and long traditions of fine selfless service to the community. In its long career, the Madras Police has been witness to many revolutionary changes in the country and the State. We are now in an era of freedom and progress. The Police is called upon to play a new role in the changed times when the people have become their own rulers, and the State has become a Welfare State. I am happy the Police has generally acquitted itself creditably throughout the country in the post-independence era. What is needed is a sense of deep patriotism and public spirit and close, intimate contact with the people at large, and the importance of winning public confidence in the highest degree.

I wish the Madras Police a continuing career of national service.

KAILAS NATH KATJU

Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan,
Chaupatty Road, Bombay-7.
June 29, 1959.

I wish the the Madras Police Centenary Celebrations every success.

It is a notable event, for the Police force in India is one of the greatest stabilising agencies which have enabled the country to make progress during the last century.

As Home Minister and otherwise, I had occasion to see the very excellent work that our boys were doing all over India. Also, when I was the Agent-General in Hyderabad, I had the opportunity of seeing the courageous and excellent work done by the Madras Police on the borders of Hyderabad.

I congratulate the Madras Police Force on maintaining the high tradition of the service in India and hope that it will continue to discharge its duties as the guardian of law and order, with loyalty, honesty and efficiency.

It is of the highest importance that the Police Force should be a neutral agency for maintaining law and order, without political or communal leanings. I realise that in the present conditions it is a very difficult task, but this is the testing time for us all and the future of this country will largely depend upon the manner in which the Police force discharges its duty.

K. M. MUNSHI

Army Headquarters,
New Delhi,
29th July, 1959.

On behalf of the Indian Army I would like to congratulate the officers and men of the Madras Police who are celebrating their Centenary this year. The Madras Police have a long record of good service and loyalty. They have undertaken some very difficult tasks requiring tact and courage. I have no doubt that this fine force will continue its good work in maintaining law and order in the State of Madras and would co-operate in any other national service in any part of India. I wish you all good luck and may you grow in strength and efficiency.

General K. S. THIMAYYA,
Chief of the Army Staff, India.

Air Headquarters,
New Delhi,
5th August 1959.

On the occasion of your Centenary Celebrations this year, I send to all the members of your force and you my very best wishes for every success in the future.

S. MUKHERJEE,
AIR MARSHAL,
Chief of the Air Staff, India.

Naval Headquarters.

New Delhi.

6th July, 1959.

The centenary celebrations of any organisation is an event and it is a particularly gratifying one for an organisation which has earned a name for itself for efficiency, honesty and non-partisanship. I am, therefore, very glad to note that the Madras Police are celebrating their centenary. Though the Navy does not come in such close association with the Police as the other two services do, it is always a great pleasure for us to work in co-operation with them when occasions arise. The members of both forces, disciplined and trained to fulfil their different roles, have one common aim, the security of the country.

The personnel of the Indian Navy join me in sending their warmest greetings to the members of the Madras Police and wish them continued success and fresh laurels in the future. I am sure the people of the Madras State will give a big hand and make the centenary celebrations a success.

Vice Admiral R. D. KATARI,
Chief of the Naval Staff, India.

“The Roshanara,”

Mercara, Coorg.

One hundred years of “Un-detected Crime” and still going very strong, there having been no “Crime” to detect at all, must justifiably give every rank in the Madras Police Force terrific pride and happiness to be alive today as the inheritors of high prestige and great traditions of one of the finest Police Forces in our country. The Madras Police Force, what a memorable year this is to you all—the year of 1959—which is the Centenary year of the life of the great “Family” you have the honour belong to.

I have seen the work of many members of your Force off and on, in many parts of Madras State, in the last forty-two years. Officers and men I have seen and met have always lived up to the highest traditions inherited from the past. I hope you, in service today, will dedicate your lives to serve your state working, yet harder, to keep up and enhance the great name of your Force, as good, honest friends of the people and as guardians of Law and Order, discharging your duties with a high standard of strict professional efficiency combined with humanitarian gentleness and kindness. Do not be rude, do not be a bully. All these will win for you the love and respect of the people.

You must all take a vow to-day that you will see the prestige of high standards in smart turn out, manly bearing, discipline, integrity and sense of duty left you by those gallant officers and men who have gone before you, will not be tarnished by your laxity, in the slightest degree, in these matters.

Fine officers and men of the Madras Police Force, let this Centenary Year inspire you all, every one of you, to give your best at all times, to leave for those who will follow you in future years, a finer and a greater Police Force. There is nothing impossible if you have the will to do it and I am sure you have it.

12th July, 1959.

General K. M. KARIAPPA

Speaker,
Madras Legislative Assembly.

I am glad to learn that the Madras Police will be celebrating its Centenary this year. It is indeed a very unique achievement. Completion of 100 years is an event of which any institution can be proud and much more so the Police Department, which, in its progress, has to encounter and overcome many obstacles and difficulties. The Police Department has survived these obstacles, which is a testimony to the devotion and selfless work of its officers and men. I am glad to be able to pay my tribute to the splendid work the Police in our State has been doing since Independence. I only wish that every citizen realises that the Police is as much interested in the welfare of the Nation as anybody else. I am sure the special number of the Madras Police Journal and the Centenary Volume will bring home this point to the citizens of Madras.

You have my congratulations on the completion of 100 years and my



SRI M. BHAKTAVATSALAM,
Home Minister of Madras.

M. BHAKTAVATSALAM,
Home Minister.

Fort St. George,
Madras.

It gives me great pleasure to associate myself with the Centenary celebrations of the Madras Police. The year 1959 marks a milestone in the history of the Madras Police, for it was in Madras State that the Police was first regularly organised in India in 1859. It will be completing the hundredth year of its existence in September, 1959. Under foreign rule, the Police had to function as a limb of repression. They were feared, but not respected. But after Independence, a change of outlook was called for and the process of reorientation has definitely set in so that the people are fast learning to look upon the policeman as a friend as well as the custodian of Law and Order. The ideal is for every member of the force to look on himself as a servant and guardian of the general public and treat all law-abiding citizens with unfailing patience and courtesy so that the people may trust the police as friend and protector. Only criminals need fear them.

The formation of 'MAY I HELP YOU SQUADS', the observance of 'Courtesy Weeks', the participation of the force in community service work such as Village Development Schemes etc., will be helpful in bringing the force into friendly contact with the public and in fostering good police public relations.

In 1949, the Fire Service was organised as a separate wing of the Police Force. The Police Organisation was further enlarged by the merger of the Excise Department consequent on the transfer of Prohibition enforcement work to the Police Department in 1955. A Women Police Wing will also be formed soon and employed on police duties as they will be particularly valuable for dealing with cases involving women and children.

Special mention must be made of the commendable work of the Police in maintaining law and order during the State-wide General Elections in 1952 and 1957 both of which were conducted unmarred by any untoward incidents. There have been times of grave stress and strain which have called forth from the men qualities of courage, forbearance, fortitude, unswerving loyalty, honesty and integrity and I must express my appreciation of the manner in which the men stood up to the demands made on them during these trying situations.

I hope that the high ideals of service, standards of efficiency and loyalty which have built up a worthy tradition in the past will continue to inspire the force to new levels of achievement in the years ahead in rendering service to the public in law enforcement and suppression of crime.

M. BHAKTAVATSALAM

C. SUBRAMANIAM,
Finance Minister.

Fort St. George,
Madras.

The hundred-year-old history of the Police Force in our State has been a tale of efficiency and achievement of which they can be highly proud. The Police who were first properly organised hundred years ago in our State have also played their new role after the advent of Independence very creditably. I am happy that they take part increasingly in the developmental activities too. It augurs well for our State. I send them my best wishes and greetings on the happy occasion of the Centenary Celebrations of the Police Force.

13th August 1959.

C. SUBRAMANIAM

R. VENKATARAMAN,
Minister for Industries & Labour,
Government of Madras.

Fort St. George,
Madras.

Foremost among a State's obligations to its inhabitants is the protection of life, liberty and property; and to have performed this function with credit and distinction for the past one hundred years is a record on which the Madras Police may well look back with pride. With the emergence of a Welfare State and the consequent shift of emphasis from exercising and enforcing authority over to gaining the confidence and co-operation of the people, it is hoped that the functions and powers of the Police will be construed with a breadth of vision and tolerance reflective of the transition from a Police State under foreign yoke to freedom and Independence, so that the Police may be regarded as the 'People's Friend'.

I have great pleasure in congratulating the Madras Police on completing its hundredth year of existence and useful service to the people of the State in maintaining Law and Order, peace, and in preventing and detecting crime over the century; and I am sure that the worthy traditions built up by its predecessors in the past will inspire the force to fresh endeavours and greater achievements in the years that lie ahead.

20th June, 1959.

R. VENKATARAMAN

SRIMATHI LOURDHAMMAL SIMON,
Minister for Local Administration,
Government of Madras.

Fort St. George,
Madras.

I heartily congratulate the Madras Police on completing the hundredth year of its existence. One Century of useful service in the enforcement of Law rendered to the people of this State is indeed a worthy record of which the force may well be proud. The Madras Police, known for its ability and integrity, has built for itself a worthy tradition by rendering valuable help to the general public and it is my earnest hope that in the present Welfare State it will make the people realise in a greater measure its importance and usefulness by its willing co-operation and readiness to serve the people of the land and thus inspire their confidence and trust in the Police. I am confident that the personnel of the force, encouraged by their past accomplishments, will carry their Service to new levels of achievement in the years ahead.

10th June, 1959.

LOURDHAMMAL SIMON

Fort St. George,
Madras,
24th August, 1959.

I am glad to note that the Police in Madras State are completing 100 years of public service.

After the dawn of Independence the role of the Police has become quite different from that of the one under the British regime. They are the watch-dogs of the people's welfare, and the Police are to be congratulated on the expansion of their activities, the latest of which is the 'May I help you squad'. On this happy occasion I wish them well and also appeal to the public to lend them their support so that the Police may serve them better and more efficiently.

P. KAKKAN,
Minister for Works.

DR. A. LAKSHMANASWAMI MUDALIAR,
Vice Chancellor.

University of Madras
Chepauk,
Madras.

On the occasion of the centenary celebration of the Madras Police, it is with pleasure that I offer my felicitations and hearty congratulations to the force. During this period the Madras Police have earned a name for themselves for diligence, efficiency and care in the detection of crimes and in the maintenance of law and order. Madras can well be stated to be a State which has, even under the abnormal circumstances prevailing everywhere in India and in the world at large, maintained a reputation for sobriety, a sense of discipline and the innate tendency to abide by law and order. This is not a little due to the influence of the Police force which has developed a high sense of responsibility.

With a large contingent, an occasional lapse must not make us feel prejudiced or biased, considering the grave dangers which the Police have to face on critical occasions. The London Policeman used to be a model for the whole world before the Second World War and, although occasional criticisms are levelled against some trends, it must be said to the credit of that disciplined force that they still maintain a high level of efficiency, of human understanding and of sympathy with the public. Likewise, I feel sure that the Madras Police will maintain its great traditions and will, on all occasions, prove to be a friend, philosopher and guide of man, woman and child. The centenary celebrations, while giving cause for jubilation, also demand an equal if not greater effort to continue to maintain the great reputation of this force.

May I, as one who has for half a century followed with great interest the activities of the Police in this State, extend to them once again my hearty felicitations and wish them continued success in their great national tasks.

A. LAKSHMANASWAMI MUDALIAR



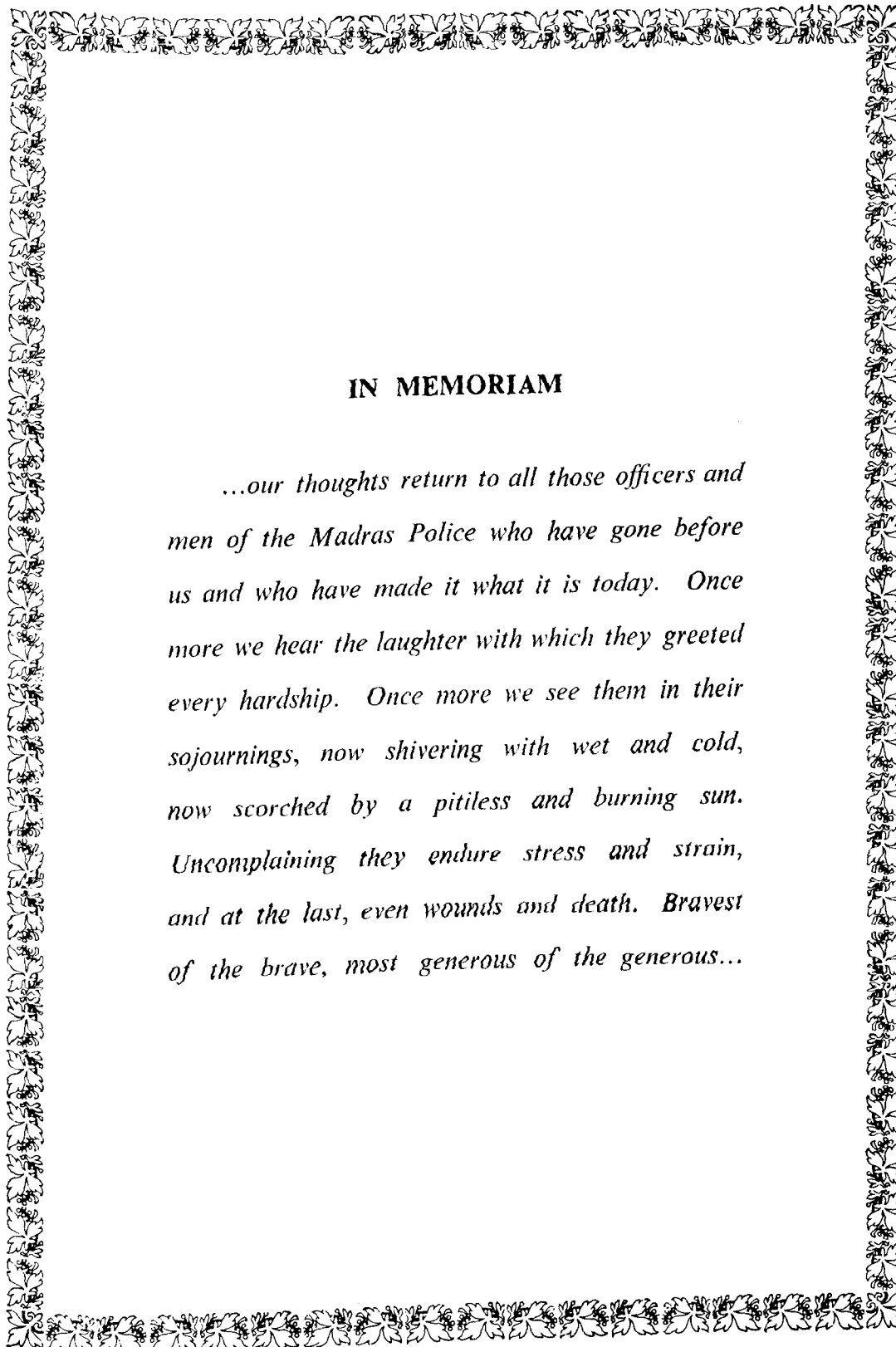
SRI S. BALAKRISHNA SHETTY, B.Sc. (Hons),
Inspector-General of Police, Madras.

Foreword

I have great pleasure in writing the foreword to the Special Centenary number of the Madras Police Journal. This issue, I notice, has been rightly dedicated to the people of Madras State, but for whose continued co-operation and lasting goodwill the force could not have achieved what it did during the hundred years of its existence. In crime detection, control of law and order, traffic control, the efforts to wean juveniles away from the path of crime, the after-care and rehabilitation of beggars and the fallen, service to the community by actually working in Community Development Schemes etc., the Madras Police is forging ahead. All its achievements have been possible only through the realisation that the citizen is its master and the firm belief that the actions, commissions and omissions of everyone of its members has always to be adjudged with reference to the citizen's rights and liberties. I am proud to be the head of such a magnificent force at this its supreme hour, and I assure the citizens that it will continue to work for their safety and welfare in the same dedicated manner as now, in the

Krishna Shetty

General of Police,
Madras.

A decorative border made of repeating floral and leaf motifs, forming a rectangular frame around the text.

IN MEMORIAM

...our thoughts return to all those officers and men of the Madras Police who have gone before us and who have made it what it is today. Once more we hear the laughter with which they greeted every hardship. Once more we see them in their sojournings, now shivering with wet and cold, now scorched by a pitiless and burning sun. Uncomplaining they endure stress and strain, and at the last, even wounds and death. Bravest of the brave, most generous of the generous...

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

VOL. X

APRIL - JUNE, 1959.

No. 2

EDITORIAL

Age is a doubtful virtue, as it may signify either maturity or senility according to what remains after Time and Nature have had their way. The immortal Shakespeare has it of charming Cleopatra that "age cannot wither her, nor custom stale her infinite variety." We feel with him that the criterion for maturity is that the subject still retains in it dynamism, variety and the sparkle of life. Judged this way, we must admit that the great age of the Madras Police is a sign of its worth and maturity. The Journal offers its humble salutations to this great force on the occasion of its Centenary Celebrations.

As Dr. C. P. Ramaswamy Iyer and Sri C. V. Narasimhan explain in their articles in this issue of the Journal, it is not as though the first police station in Madras State was founded in 1859 or that the Police idea came into being that year. What happened in 1859 was a total reorganisation of the system that existed, with the abolition of a police force which was mainly controlled by Zamindars and manned by Village Headmen and Kavalgars and the creation in its place of a Provincial unit consisting of professional officers of various categories and ranks and the passing of a statute to govern the organisation, discipline and control of the Police forces of the country. The mass upsurge of 1857, the assumption of direct governance of the land by the Queen, the passing of the Criminal Procedure Code and the Indian Penal Code into Acts of Government and the re-

organisation of the Police Forces of the various provinces in India were events which took place in quick succession of one another, and these together constituted a determined effort on the part of the then British Government to administer their Indian territories on a planned and constitutional basis. The ninety years of direct British rule in India were over in 1947. The circumstances leading to this event are of such recent occurrence and we have been so much directly concerned in them that we may not be competent to pass a verdict on them. It is significant however that the system devised by the British continues today, unaltered except in minor details. This is because the framework of administration fabricated by our former rulers for our country had been excellent in its basic structure. The details of this set up were got re-examined by the then Government through a Police Commission in 1902—1903 and many improvements were introduced into the system as a result of the Commission's report. The development of the force during the years subsequent to 1903 was more or less strictly on the lines envisaged by the commissioners except in the recent past when items of work, formerly considered to pertain only to Social Welfare Organisations has also come within the ambit of police duties.

Centenaries are usually celebrated by the people at large only in the case of those institutions which have had a purposeful existence.

We have noticed centenaries of Schools, Colleges, Universities and Charitable Trusts being celebrated with great eclat. Nobody celebrates the centenary of a scourge. The mere fact that the people of Madras State have chosen to celebrate the centenary of the Madras Police instils in us a deep feeling of pride and a sense of fulfilment. The citizens of this great State have come up, all on their own, with offers of scholarships to policemen's children on this occasion, and they have, through their elected representatives in the Assembly, voted thrice in the past three years for increase in the allowances to be paid to Policemen. We are deeply moved by these spontaneous, unsolicited and touching instances of good will on their part and we bow our heads to them in respect and gratitude at this our supreme moment. Our men have worked with them shoulder to shoulder, with spades and pickaxes in their hands, in the execution of Local Development Works in their villages, and then our men's hearts have throbbed in unison with theirs, in a silent symphony of mutual love and affection. Neither our policemen nor our people could, we guess, ever forget these hours of joint and fruitful labour. We feel that it is no strange thing that those very people should now show enthusiasm for our centenary celebrations!

Sir Charles Cunningham, one of our distinguished former chiefs, says, in his message on this occasion: "Embodied in 1859, the Force was the first Police Force to be organised on a provincial basis in India, and through all the years since its establishment, it has maintained its foremost position among the Indian forces. Even outside of India, too, it has shown the way in important branches of Police work..... Since then the Force has not only maintained the high standards of efficiency previously set, but has developed and improved upon them and has earned fresh laurels in almost every field of its work. It is also undertaking important new social welfare work, which may

improve the economic condition of certain classes, and operate in the reduction of crime."

Another officer, Shri Shiv Kumar Lal, the Additional Inspector-General of Police, Andhra, states in his message, "It has notable traditions of *esprit de corps* and discipline behind it and has always been known for its smartness and efficiency...Since Independence, they have quickly adapted themselves to the changed conditions and have dedicated themselves to a great devotion of service to the people. To-day the incidence of professional crime in India is the lowest in Madras State."

Two different authorities, from two different climes and times, have said these. It is not difficult to relate their observations and understand why professional crime is lowest in India in our State. Brilliant police work, dedicated service and intensive Social Welfare Work among those classes of people most given to crime have jointly resulted in weaning away professional criminals from crime. This is the foremost achievement of the Madras State Police over the hundred years of its existence so far. We have an enlightened public to co-operate with us and an enlightened set of administrators and chiefs to guide us on the correct lines. The wonderful results remarked on by these two vintage policemen are the natural consequence of this happy combination of factors.

We are proud to present in this issue of the Journal, a number of articles by eminent writers. The article, entitled, "Hints to Young Police Officers", by the Hon'ble Mr. Justice P. N. Ramaswamy of the High Court of Judicature at Madras, deserves particularly close study. The hints, it appeared to us, were for all Police Officers and all Magistrates and we were eager to redraft the title. On second thoughts we have let the title chosen by the

Hon'ble Judge stand unaltered. The result of a case, the writer points out in his article, depends not merely on the proper presentation of legal evidence by the Police, but also on the correct appreciation of the same by the Magistrates. Commonsense, he states in his inimitable way, should be the guiding principle in presenting and assessing evidence. This article, we expect, will give a great deal of food for thought to one and all concerned. There is in it much well-meant criticism, and if any one, Magistrate or Police Officer, should see his own fads and weaknesses highlighted in its brilliance, we plead of him to strive to eliminate these

defects rather than feel peeved. The Judge has certainly not minced matters or attempted any extenuation. The habit of concentrating on statistics is fortunately dying out. The Judge's powerful pen, we trust, will deal the final effective blow against the habit.

The Editor has great pleasure in dedicating this Special number of the Madras Police Journal to the People of Madras State but for whose sympathy, co-operation and appreciation our Force will not have grown to its present stature, and to whose continued good-will we look forward in ever-increasing measure in the decades to come.

CENTENARY GOLD MEDAL ESSAY COMPETITION

The Madras Police Centenary Gold Medal Essay Competition, open to students of all Colleges of the State, elicited very good response, and there were 52 entries for the English section and 91 entries for the Tamil Section. The subject for the Essay was, "The Ideal Policeman". The standard of the essays received was generally high.

Kumari S. V. Meera and Kumari E. Nishkanithi, both of the Ethiraj College for Women, Madras, won the first and second prizes, respectively, in the English section, and Sri B. S. Ramakrishnan of the Presidency College, Madras, and Srimathi N. Pankajakshi of the Ethiraj College for Women, Madras, won the first and second prizes, respectively, in the Tamil section.

The first prizes were gold medals worth Rs. 300/- each and the second prizes were gold medals worth Rs. 200/- each. Congratulations, winners.

POLICE PUBLIC RELATIONS

*(A talk by Sri M. Bhaktavatsalam, Home Minister, Govt. of Madras,
at the A. I. R. Madras, on 25-8-59.)*

I SPEAK to you on the memorable occasion of the Centenary of the Madras Police. As you may know, it came into existence by virtue of Act XXIV of 1859. One hundred years have passed since then, during which period the Madras Police has distinguished itself by selfless service to the public. Madras State today is renowned throughout India for its excellence of administration and all round development. This would not have been possible but for the maintenance of law and order by the Madras Police. It could be said without any fear of contradiction that nowhere in India is there greater safety for life and property than in Madras State. Therefore, on behalf of the Government and the people, I would like to thank the Madras Police for ten decades of splendid and loyal service.

If the Madras Police have been able to accomplish so much during the last hundred years, it is due in a large measure to the co-operation which they have sought and received from the public. It is axiomatic to say that the police purpose cannot be accomplished without public support. It therefore follows that the greater the measure of reciprocal co-operation between the police and the public, the greater the public weal. In this context I must appeal both to the police and to the public to establish closer and more cordial relations with each other. No longer should it be held by people in this country that the term "Police and the Public" is an antithesis, but that it is a corporate expression denoting very close relationship between each other.

As a matter of fact, the idea of making the policeman a friend of the citizen is more than a century old. The statement of this principle naturally poses a paradox, viz., how the policeman can engender feelings of friendship on the part of the public, while at the same time

maintaining law and order firmly. If this paradox is to be solved successfully everything depends on the method of approach adopted by the policeman. If an overbearing, rude and violent attitude is commonly adopted by him he will be continually giving offence to the public, thereby defeating the purpose of his calling. Therefore a policeman should so conduct himself that he always embodies the general will of the community. Whether in the detection of crime or in the normal maintenance of law and order, the policeman should realise that it makes all the difference in the world if the public react to his actions in a friendly way. Therefore, whether the policeman is dealing with an individual or a group or a crowd he must make a friendly approach as that is the only way in which he can draw out the best in that individual or group or crowd and can deal with the recalcitrant elements more easily; otherwise the anti-social elements get the sympathy of the crowd, leaving the policeman with a much bigger problem. Hence it is important for the policeman to remember the basic approach of friendliness to the people instead of ordering them about. Some policemen increase their own difficulties by a wrong approach to the public. It is the approach that counts.

It is at the same time of the highest importance that a policeman in charge of such heavy responsibilities should have the respect of the people whom he serves, for unless they respect him they cannot give him the co-operation which he needs. They will respect him only if they have faith in his integrity and friendliness. Therefore, even though great temptations may be placed in his way, he must overcome them. He must lead an exemplary life, as the public expects him to practise what he preaches and to conform to the regulations imposed on

others. He must not only avoid evil but he must also avoid the appearance of evil and corruption. In other words, the individual policeman should so conduct himself that it becomes apparent that he is nothing more than a citizen acting on behalf of fellow citizens and that therefore he is entitled to all the support that they can give him.

If such a happy rapprochement is to be achieved then the public too must fulfil their civic duties. As a matter of fact, an obligation is cast on them by the Criminal Procedure Code to report to the Police all cognizable offences committed or about to be committed. Whether it be the detection of crime or the maintenance of law and order or the implementation of social and reformatory measures such as the Prohibition Act and the Suppression of Immoral Traffic Act, the public must come forward and extend their hand of co-operation to the police. It should be understood that the police are not super-men and that they will be helpless if wrong information is given or vital evidence is withheld. There is therefore not the slightest doubt that the success of the police, on which the good of the community depends, is contingent on the whole-hearted co-operation of the public.

Police work is often subjected to censorious criticism from political platforms. Speakers on such occasions always put the police in the wrong regardless of facts and circumstances. They take up any little slip on the part of the police and magnify it hundred-fold, while at the same time ingeniously and maliciously interpreting facts which are entirely in favour of the police to their discredit. A certain kind of legislator never wearies of putting questions in such a way that even though they might relate to bonafide instances of mistake on the part of the police, they cast the most gross and unfounded insinuations on the name and character of the police. To these wanton traducers of the good name of the police, too meticulous a deference is often paid by the public. Far too much dirt is thus flung on the police by such people, and naturally a good

deal of it sticks. Those on whom it sticks very naturally dislike it, leading to exacerbation of ill-feelings between the police and the public.

Such a narrow-minded attitude is perhaps due to the feeling of distrust which some people entertain towards the police on account of their association with alien rule prior to independence. On account of this stigma their attitude towards the police is one of derision, apathy and hostility. This so called stigma is, in my opinion, a good assurance of the capacity of our police of loyally carrying out orders given to them by Government. I wish to assert that after Independence the police have re-oriented themselves rapidly and have lived down the so-called stigma. Therefore, the people should implicitly trust the police because any mistake on their part is immediately subjected to democratic checks.

In other words, there must be a reorientation in the attitude of the public towards the police. They must give up their old prejudices and regard the policeman as a fellow citizen who is trying to work for the good of the community. They must avoid carping and destructive criticism which tends to adversely affect the morale of the police as such criticism is usually based on half-knowledge. In this context, I am reminded of the maxim,

"Judge not, for what appears to your eye a stain may only be a scar brought from some well-won field where you would only faint and yield."

Therefore on this great occasion, I specially appeal to all sections of the public to shed old prejudices and co-operate with the police unreservedly, for that is the only way in which the interests of the community can be promoted. I address this appeal to the Press and to the producers of films also. I request them not to hold up the Police unnecessarily to scorn and ridicule as that is the quickest way of tearing down public confidence. I am quite sure that the police for their part will so work and conduct themselves that they will merit public confidence.

And so, on this unique occasion of the Centenary of the Madras Police, I send my cordial greetings and good wishes to all members of the Force. The Government is conscious of the great and varied service which the Madras Police has rendered to the State and to the people during the last hundred years, and they have the confidence that the Madras Police will render even greater service in the years to come.

Jai Hind

CASABIANCA

"The German Cruiser, *Emden*, was sighted in Madras between 9 and 10 clock last night, accompanied by the *Markamania*. It stood in the offing to the South-East of the harbour within the range of the beach and proceeded to direct its guns at the harbour. One of the very first shots fell in the bed-room of Mr. Ellis, the Manager of the B.O.C. Oil tanks, who was in the bed-room at that time. Subsequent shots set the petroleum tanks on fire. The oil in the tanks immediately blazed up, rendering the seaface of the town as brilliant as day, aiding, probably, in the subsequent short, sharp cannonade that took place.

"An Indian Police Constable on duty in the harbour was hit by a shell that had apparently passed through a barrel of tar, judging by the way he was bespattered with the stuff. His body was seen floating in the harbour by Messrs Harman Kelly & Hawkins..."

(From the *Hindu* of 23rd September 1914 with grateful acknowledgement).

"Every police officer may interpose for the purpose of preventing, and shall, to the best of his ability, prevent, the commission of any cognizable offence."

In emergent cases,

"A police officer, knowing of a design to commit any cognizable offence, may arrest, without orders from a Magistrate and without a warrant, the person so designing, if it appears to such officer that the commission of the offence cannot be otherwise prevented." (S. 151)

Likewise, under Section 152,

"A police officer may of his own authority interpose to prevent any injury attempted to be committed in his view to any public property, movable or immovable."

There are so many ways in which, by tact and realistic imagination, a police officer can prevent a breach of the peace. Just as it is more desirable to prevent a person falling ill than to cure him when he gets ill, it is more desirable to prevent crime than to punish the criminal.

It is impossible for the police to perform their duties satisfactorily and efficiently without mutual co-operation between the police and the public. The public should cease to think of the policeman as pursuing a hateful occupation and to look upon him as an enemy of the public. It is unfortunate that even today there is an indifference and unwillingness on the part of the majority of the people to help the police in the prevention of crime or in the detection of the criminal. In India the villages comprise the greater part of the country and some of the villages are far removed from public transport conveniences. It is impossible

to expect any State to provide a number of policeman to serve each village. It is the duty, therefore, of every honest and good citizen to give his fullest assistance to the police both in the prevention and in the detection of crime. Every citizen should look upon the policeman as his friend and as a public servant entrusted with the duty of protecting him. It is equally necessary that the policemen should realise his position as a public servant. He should inspire confidence in the public whose interests he has to serve. Robert Palmer wrote a long time ago that one of the great obstacles in policing the districts is the fact that people would never give evidence if they could help it and would often swear to the innocence of criminals whom they have actually seen committing a crime. I believe I am not unduly pessimistic if I say that the sense of civic responsibility is still not sufficiently developed.

I realise that time was when the policeman was considered to be a part of the machinery used by the foreign ruler to perpetuate his domination. All that has disappeared now. India is a Sovereign Republic and policemen are as much officers of the Republic as other civil servants. There cannot and should not be any antipathy between the different limbs of a State. No doubt much remains to be done both by the police and by the public to achieve a perfect concord. But I have every hope—and I am speaking with special reference to the Madras Police—that there will be in the years to come a far better mutual understanding between the police and the public which will ensure the maintenance of peace and order.



THE POLICE AND THE PUBLIC

By

SRI P. V. RAJAMANNAR,

(Chief Justice of the High Court of Judicature at Madras)

THE POLICE comprises the Executive Department of a State to which is entrusted the duties of maintaining public peace and order and the prevention and detection of crime. The maintenance of the tranquillity of the State and the security of the citizen has always been considered to be one of the prime functions of the Government of a country or State. This is generally done by the police force, though in special circumstances the assistance of the military has to be sometimes called in. One of the grounds on which an odium is attached to the police is an apprehension that the functions of the police, which in themselves are excellent, may be abused with the result that the liberty of the individual is unnecessarily curbed and in an arbitrary and tyrannical manner. European history abounds in instances when the police have been used as instruments for the suppression of opposition to a potent monarch and to put down the legitimate aspirations of the people. It is such instances that made a great French thinker remark:—

“The police by their nature are antagonistic to all liberty.”

This, however, is not a universal feature, though nothing can prevent an unscrupulous ruler from making use of good institutions to advance his own unlawful ends.

One of the beneficent legacies left by the British rulers is a perfectly organised and regular police system. The governments, both at the Centre and in the States in Free and Independent India have continued that system. Though there may be scope for improvement in certain directions, I am strongly of opinion that the system has served and is serving the country very well. In 1860 certain gene-

ral principles for the working of the Police Department were laid down which are worth following to this day. Among them are the following:—

(1) The Indian Police to be subject to the Civil Government and its duties to be civil and not military.

(2) Its functions to be (a) protective, so far as the public are concerned, and repressive as to the criminal, and (b) detective.

The police as such is not concerned with punishment. Even when a policeman catches a person committing nuisance in a public place, he cannot forthwith punish the culprit, though I personally have always felt that it may be better to invest the policeman with powers to punish such offenders on the spot. I suppose the real difficulty is to fix the standard of punishment. The policeman, when he actually sees the commission of a crime can, in many cases, arrest the person committing the crime; but it is only the Magistrate or the Judge that can punish him. The policeman more often has to detect the person or persons guilty of a crime. He is given powers to investigate. But even when he is able to trace the offender, he can only bring the case before a criminal court.

This aspect covers the cases where an offence is committed, or any provision of a law is contravened, when such contravention is rendered penal.

But to my mind the more important aspect of a policeman's functions is the preventive. The Code of Criminal Procedure confers powers on the police for the purpose of prevention of offences. Indeed Section 149 expressly enacts that



SRI P. V. RAJAMANNAR,

(Chief Justice of Madras.)

By

I HAVE readily acceded to the suggestion made by Sri S. Balakrishna Shetty that I should contribute an article to the Souvenir to be issued on the occasion of the Centenary of the Madras Police Organisation which was inaugurated in 1859.

It may be observed that originally the Judge of each district had also the powers of a Magistrate and the control of the Police. The Indian Police was originally officered by Indian Darogas each of whom was in charge of a Police Circle or Thana (about 20 miles square in area). It is interesting to note that the Daroga received a salary of Rs. 25/- plus Rs. 10/- for every dacoit or brigand convicted and a commission on the stolen property that was recovered. In the language of a historian, the Darogas were too often antagonistic to the well-disposed rather than to the evil-doer.

The present system of Police administration was brought into force from the year 1859 when the High Courts were founded and the Penal Code and the Code of Criminal Procedure were enacted. The Indian Police system was organised on the model of the Irish Constabulary. Lord Cornwallis had an extraordinary distrust of Indian Officials and in one of his despatches he asserted that all regulations for the reform of the criminal department would be useless while the execution of them depended on any native whatsoever. This attempt to exclude indigenous agency from key positions was the real origin of the distrust of the Police and their unpopularity. On the other hand, in England, far reaching measures were adopted for the reform of the police by Sir Robert Peel which were implemented by men like Col. Rowen and Sir Henry Maine; and the London Police and the Irish Constabulary became noted for their high discipline as well as their digni-

The term 'Police' is synonymous etymologically with a City or State and, of course, in the old days, the State was essentially a Police State, designed mainly for the purpose of enforcing law and order. The object of the police is primarily to protect and defend society from individuals who flout the general standards of conduct accepted by the law-abiding. The London Police has gone beyond this limit and, as already stated, has become justly celebrated for its sense of humour and its sympathy towards the friendless and the helpless, such qualities co-existing with inflexible discipline. In fact, it has been often stated that the London Policeman's mission is to be an active friend of the friendless or lonely woman and child and of the foreigner who does not know his way about in London. The aim of the Police in every State in the world should be to approximate towards the dignity, the firmness and the sympathy of the London Policeman.

In certain countries, the Police are employed to carry out inquisitorial or espionage activities and to the extent to which such activities engross their attention, they are likely to suffer in prestige and effectiveness. The policemen in large towns have at present extensive duties to perform. They are formed into motor squads, mounted police, narcotic squads and vice squads, especially in large American cities where flagrant law-breaking is not uncommon. In the conditions of today, one of the main functions of the policeman is the regulation of traffic and in this particular department, he has to develop qualities of quick decision as well as of initiative and sympathy.

During several years, I had a great deal to do with the administration of the Police Department in the Madras State and later in the Travancore State. I first came into official contact with the department when I became Advocate General of Madras in 1920. In 1923, owing to the resignation of Sir K. Srinivasa Aiyangar, a vacancy arose in the Madras Executive Council, as it was then called. Lord Willingdon was then Governor of Madras. I had first met him in Bombay when, as Governor, he tried to prevent me making a speech on behalf of the Home Rule League within his Province. He afterwards became an intimate friend and colleague of mine and, as Governor of Madras, offered me the position of Law Member in his Government and also asked me to take charge of the portfolio relating to the Police and the C.I.D.. This step caused, at that time, a great deal of stir in European circles, official and non-official, because during the years 1914 to 1919, I had been actively associated with the Indian National Congress and the Home Rule League led by Dr. Annie Besant which, at that time, was more militant than the Congress. The opposition to my appointment was, indeed, so acute that, without mentioning names, I may say that a civilian who later became my colleague in the Government as well as certain police officials who had been keeping a watch over my movements in my political days, threatened resignation. Lord Willingdon, however, was insistent and he carried out his intentions.

For over five years, in addition to the Police and the C.I.D., I also administered several other branches of administration including irrigation and hydro-electricity. But I may say that I took the greatest interest in irrigation and hydro-electric projects and next to them my attention was concentrated on the police department. At that time, the department was in disfavour with the public because a large number of regulations and orders relating to public meetings and the conduct of the Press had been promulgated as well as laws relating to sedition. Difficulties also arose as to the

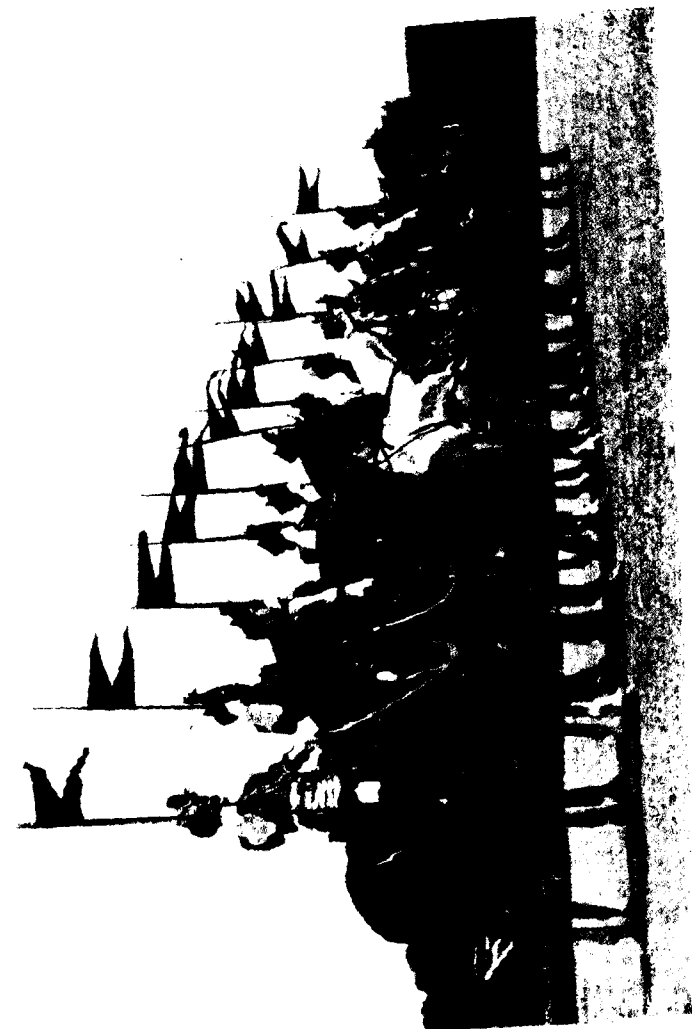
administration of troublesome districts like Malabar, Cudappah, Anantapur and Bellary and measures had to be taken which were resented by the people at large. However, on close acquaintance, I found that, in general, the police were to blame to a much less extent than was taken for granted by the people at large. One of the main reasons for the blame ascribed to them was that the superior staff at that time almost exclusively belonged to the European or Anglo-Indian communities who, excepting for certain remarkable and gratifying instances, never came into friendly contact with the public and did not endeavour to maintain comradely relations with the people around them. Even more than the I. C. S. officer, the English police officer kept himself somewhat aloof. As I have already stated, this however was not invariably the case and I have known of certain officers who were remarkable for their conciliatoriness and their friendly approach towards Indians. On the other hand, there was a particular Police Officer functioning in Madras who detested Dr. Besant and her associates to such an extent that when the Governor of the Province accepted an invitation to a social function in the premises of the Theosophical Society, the police officer concerned stationed men belonging to the C. I. D. practically behind every bush and tree in Adyar. As very often happens, the policeman in mufti is even more readily recognised by reason of his demeanour than when he is in uniform and the incident created a lot of stir at the time. Moreover, about the time I took charge as Police Member, the memories of the Moplah rebellion were still fresh in peoples' minds and the Malabar Special Police did not wear kid-gloves, neither did the Tinnevely Police who had to deal with the remarkable case of a dacoit who was protected by an enthusiastic missionary lady in the belief that he was turning over a new leaf and adopting the way of penitence and good life. Such exceptions apart, I found that those officials who had strenuously objected to my appointment co-operated with me with great zeal in my efforts to popularise the police. Also, with a

few exceptions, the spirit of the times had affected the superior police officers who began to deal with their Indian subordinates on the whole with sympathy. Some persons, nevertheless, had to be taught a lesson. It so happened at that time not only in Madras but practically all over India, that so long as the better type of Indian Officer occupied a subaltern position, his character and intellectual calibre were the subject of unqualified praise. But when the officer came near achieving top position, that is, the post of a District Superintendent of Police or any higher rank, his merits somehow vanished as by a miracle. In one such instance, the official superior who had reported generally favourably regarding a particular Indian officer, suddenly turned round when the question arose about giving him a district charge and stated that the Indian in question was deficient "in drive, in initiative and in presence of mind". Such a formula is easy to pronounce but difficult to verify or test. I knew that this was an exaggeration but I bided my time until the same official recommended a somewhat over-bearing and discourteous non-Indian Officer to a prize-post. When I got his recommendation, I said, "I am afraid that this officer is not only discourteous and ill-tempered but also lacks drive, initiative and presence of mind". And I added, "I take these words from your letter dated so and so relating to such and such an officer". I also stated that my description was as appropriate as his was. The gentleman concerned did not stay long at his post and asked for permission to retire, a permission which was readily granted. A few instances of that kind were sufficient to infuse a new spirit of comradeship among the higher and lower ranks of the Police; and I may say that I found the force extremely responsive as well as increasingly efficient.

One of the main difficulties of a Policeman arises from the lack of support that has to be extended to him by his political or administrative chief. For instance, in particular situations

like the Simon Commission boycott or political or religious demonstrations like Muhurram riots or communal disputes, the District Magistrate or the Member of Government in question finds it often necessary to order the Police to make a lathi charge or a tear-gas charge or to sanction firing on an unruly and violent crowd. The police officer is generally reluctant to take such measures and resorts to them only in the last instance. But if the superior Magistrate or Member of Government, in the face of actual or possible journalistic attacks or questions or debates in the legislature, gets cold feet and either disowns or minimises his own responsibility and makes haste to inculcate the police force and to order a judicial enquiry, the police lose their nerve and, on the next occasion when a similar contingency arises, they do not rise to the occasion. The Magistrate or the member of Government should weigh the consequences very seriously before taking extreme measures; but once his mind is made up, it is, in my opinion, his bounden duty to stand by those who are only carrying out his policy and his orders. So deeply have I felt it that on a particular occasion in Travancore, when I was Dewan of that State, I made up my mind that the aid of the Military was necessary to supplement the efforts of the police in putting down a series of violent demonstrations accompanied by the collection of arms. In order to infuse the right spirit of responsibility in the military and the Police, I requested the Ruler of Travancore to invest me with a military commission so that the responsibility for any measure that was taken may be directly attributable to me and was not shoved by me on to the shoulders of the Inspector-General of Police or his subordinates.

To sum up, it may be emphasised that the morale and behaviour of the police typify and are proportionate to the calmness, strength and sympathy of the Government in office and are also a reflection of the temper and law-abiding outlook of the public.



THE MADRAS MOUNTED POLICE

ON DOGS

By

F. V. ARUL I.P., D.I.G. of Police C.I.D., Madras.

AMONG the many animals befriended by man, the most faithful friend and companion is the dog. The origin of this relationship is lost in the mists of antiquity. Long before recorded history, the dog was tamed and domesticated. It is even said that his bones were found with those of Stone Age man. Early man developed dogs mainly for protection and hunting purposes. Even to-day dogs remind us of their wild ancestors by some of their mannerisms. The dog howls sometimes which is his ancestral habit of calling the pack together. He has, of course, learnt to bark after centuries of association with man. He turns round and round before lying down because his ancestors had to do so to prepare a comfortable bed from jungle grass or dried leaves. And even to-day he buries his bones, even if it be under the door-mat, in imitation of his wild forebears in order to prevent his enemies from stealing them. His wonderfully acute sense of smell has been developed over the centuries while foraging and hunting for food. It is this faculty which has endeared the dog to the hunter in the chase.

It has been said that the dog is the one animal which will follow man all over the world and adapt itself to every climate and to every use to which its master chooses to put it. The most hardy and useful of working dogs are those reared by the Eskimos and other northern peoples. These dogs are called huskies and are used to draw sledges. They have played a noteworthy part in many Arctic and Antarctic expeditions. In Alaska, Northern Canada and Northern Siberia, goods are hauled over the trails in winter by teams of huskies. A good team will pull a load of 300 lbs. for a distance of 20 or 30 miles a day according to the condition of the trail. As there is a strong strain of the wolf in huskies they are not treated as pets. When working they are fed

chiefly on frozen fish and in summer they are allowed to forage for themselves.

The sheepdogs of western countries are so knowing, hard-working and useful. They are very loyal and intelligent. When they have a flock of sheep to care for, they live with them and for them, gather them from the distant pastures, bring them back to the fold when needed, and will let no other person or animal meddle with them. At the sound of his master's whistle a sheepdog will round up his flock, guard it, keep it from straying or stampeding and finally bring it safely home. Sheepdogs can also trace and find sheep lost in snowstorms.

The aristocrats of the dog world are the hunting dogs. The Great Danes were used for hunting wild animals in Northern Europe. Bulldogs, remarkable for their courage and ability to hang on to their quarry, were used in olden times for boar-hunting and for the cruel sport of bull-baiting. Bloodhounds, greyhounds, foxhounds, pointers, setters, spaniels and retrievers of various sorts are among the staunchest allies of sportsmen. About the most curious-looking dog is the German dachshund (badger dog) which can enter a badger's hole and drag out his prey. He is also a plucky watch dog. Another curious breed is the Dalmatian, sometimes called the carriage dog for he used to run behind carriages and coaches in the days before motor-cars were invented. Quite handsome, with black spots on his white coat, he still likes to run behind a horse. Hunting men have been very active in establishing new breeds, and many varieties of dogs originate in cross-breeding to obtain special hunting qualities.

In western countries dogs are trained to lead blind persons. These dogs wear a kind of harness for the blind person to hold. These

guide-dogs for the blind learn to lead their owners everywhere, in crowds, through busy streets and traffic, stopping at the kerb and waiting until it is safe to cross. Thus to own a guide-dog will transform a blind person's life from complete dependence on others to freedom. Of all the work dogs undertake, this is perhaps the one which appeals most to kind and sympathetic people. In the same category are St. Bernard dogs which are used to rescue lost travellers on the Alps.

The faculties of smell, hearing and physical mobility are developed to a very high degree in certain species of dogs which render them extremely useful for war and police purposes. As a matter of fact, dogs took part in the First and Second World Wars as Red Cross dogs for feeding and aiding the wounded, as sentinels and messengers and as mine detectors. These war-dogs, as they are called, are given several months' training at a school where they are taught to scent out mines buried in the ground with a piece of meat beside them. Then they learn to find the mine alone, receiving a tit-bit as a reward. They are still much used for guarding air-fields and depots.

Dogs were first used for police work in India on the North-West Frontier in 1941. After Independence the Madras Police were the first to form and train a Dog Squad consisting mostly of Alsations. Fearless and intelligent, the Alsatian is admirably suited to assist policemen and watchmen to patrol large areas at night. It will scent, hear and see an intruder long before a man can do so and will hold him at bay until the handler, its human partner, arrives. Many big department stores in western countries are patrolled by dogs at night and the animals can be trained to ring a bell at certain points so that their position is indicated to a watchman. These dogs are trained to pull down and hold their quarry but not to bite except at the word of command unless their handlers are attacked by the criminal.

Police dogs are trained when they are about five or six months old and will be ready for

work at the end of six months of training. Their proficiency will thereafter increase as they gain more and more experience. Their training covers the following subjects:

- (a) Obedience,
- (b) Watching an object or person,
- (c) Tracing a hidden article by the sense of smell,
- (d) Tracking,
- (e) Arresting an escaping offender,
- (f) Protecting the handler,
- (g) Refusing food from strangers,
- (h) Jumping obstacles.

Each dog has its own handler and the partnership is never disturbed. The handler will take the dog out for a run in the morning and in the evening, will feed it, bathe it, groom it and look after it continuously thereby establishing mutual confidence of a very high order. Of course only those Constables who have a deep affinity for dogs are chosen as handlers.

The Madras Police dogs are becoming increasingly useful in the investigation of crime. They have some sensational successes to their credit. The following statistics gives some idea of their usefulness:—

Nature of offence	1957		1958	
	Total calls	Successful calls	Total calls	Successful calls
Murder for gain	29	19	35	23
Robbery	5	2	8	7
Dacoity	Nil	Nil	3	1
Burglaries	65	9	85	23
Miscellaneous thefts	17	5	5	1
Total	116	35	136	55

Adverting to sensational successes I must refer to instances in which the Police dogs picked up the scent after a delay of from 4 to 14 days. If this claim is made in western countries it will not be easily believed. The only rational explanation for this phenomenon is that criminals in India usually go bare-feet which

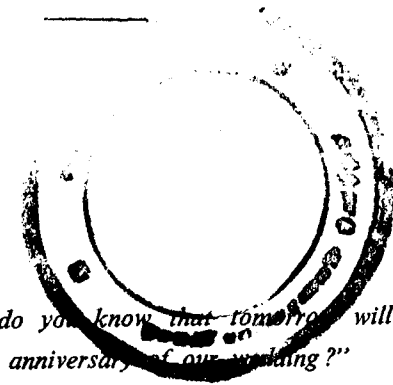


THE POLICE DOGS.

means that perspiration exuding from the pores of the feet will be left on the ground the smell of which apparently lingers on for many days. These astonishing successes have had a tremendous impact on the rural population and there have been instances of culprits surrendering themselves or abandoning stolen property merely on hearing that the police dogs are about to arrive. There have even been two cases of criminals committing suicide after having been

completely demoralised by the prospect of certain detection by the dogs.

The fame of the Madras Police Dogs has travelled round India with the result that many States have sent their handlers for being trained here. War-dogs of the Defence Department are also trained by the Madras Police. This is indeed a creditable record which should be kept up and improved in the coming years.



Aunt Jerusha: "Bildad, do you know that tomorrow will be the twenty-fifth anniversary of our wedding?"

Uncle Bildad: "Ye don't say so! What about it?"

Aunt Jerusha: "I thought, maybe we ought to kill them two Rhode Island Red Chickens."

Uncle Bildad: "How in tunket can you blame them two chickens for what happened twenty-five years ago?"

Green Leaves

THE ACCUSED in a murder case was the son of the most influential man of the village. For 36 hours we had failed to find a cart to transport the corpse for post-mortem. I got hold of a rope-cot and with the aid of the Sub-Inspector lifted the corpse on to it and, carrying it, we reached the next village where full co-operation was forthcoming.

Five years later, in a higher capacity, I was camping 26 miles from this village. It was a shandy day. That noon a small crowd collected. Enquiring their purpose, I was told that they learnt that the "Circle" who had carried the corpse was at the Travellers' Bungalow. They had come to have a look at him!

— C. J. P. PINTO.

2. My first inspection was at Tuni in the Pithapuram Circle of which I had the honour to be Inspector. After breakfast I found myself sitting on the station verandah before a table, covered with an embroidered cloth and a vase of flowers.

The Sub-Inspector, a dignified Raju, stood before me in his tunic, crimson and gold turban, a splendid moustache growing luxuriantly from his upper lip. He looked at me and I looked at him not having the faintest idea what to do next. At last I had a brain-wave. "Let me see your service-book," I commanded him. The command was transmitted to the Station Writer, who promptly brought the document. Opening it, I noticed that he had joined the Madras Police shortly before I was born; and here I was supposed to

be telling him how to run his station! I choked back my mirth. Then he tactfully produced the Visitor's Book and, by consulting it frequently, I was able to spend the next 3—4 days examining the records.

I have always looked back on that Sub-Inspector as symbolising the courtesy and imperturbability which are a mark of the Madras Police.

— J. R. de CHAZAL.

3. When a very young A. S. P., when inspecting a Police station, I always read the whole of the "Superior Officers' Visiting Book". In 1930, in a remote jungle Police Station in Bhadrachalam, I was reading an inspection report of 1861 by the then D. I. G. of Police, a Lt. Col. seconded from the army. The report was brief and to the point: "Visited the P. S. Present were.....S. H. O. and 6 P. Cs. Crime is increasing. The S. H. O. is dismissed!" "Autres temps, autres mœurs."

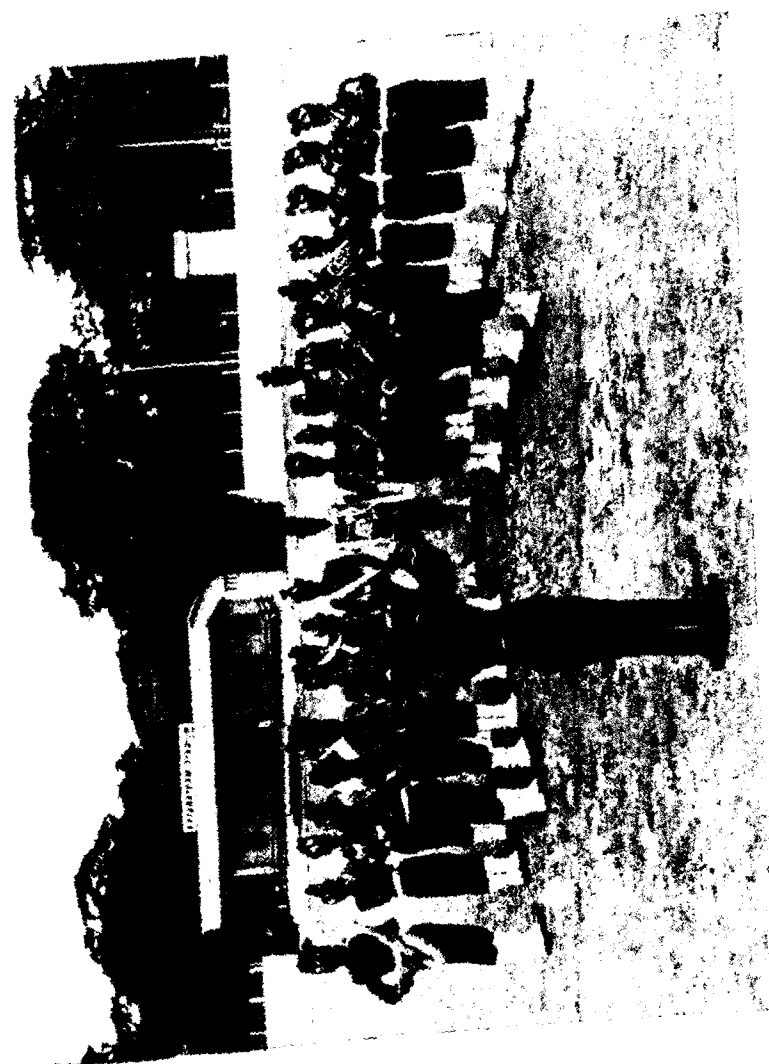
— W. F. A. HAMILTON.

4. Extract from a Station Inspection Book in Kurnool district dated about 1865:

"The Head Constable has done no good work. He is suspended until he does some."

— E. H. COLEBROOK.

5. I knew a Scottish Sergeant Major who when approached for casual leave by a constable often called to the Writer to supply a broom to the applicant alleging that he had no other work to do than apply for leave. The



THE STATION PORT BAND.

result was another man for store fatigue and less applicants for leave.

In another instance, while Principal, C. R. S. Anantapur, a recruit asked for leave on the grounds that his sister had gone to heaven and that he wanted five days leave to go there in order to make the necessary arrangements!

—J. A. LUCAS.

6. In 1932 the Assistant Conservator of Forests was having trouble with the villagers who insisted on collecting honey from trees objected to by the Forest Officials. The Assistant Conservator sought my help and with him I repaired to the village. The villagers claimed that the trees were assigned to them by the Forest Settlement Officer and produced an order passed in 1886. The signature was that of my grandfather! The Assistant Conservator readily agreed that my grandfather's order should be respected.

—C. J. P. PINTO.

7. It was a heavy district, I had been there only a few months. It was the hot weather, I had a Probationary A. S. P. from the P. T. S. for practical training during the School recess. It was a Sunday morning when I reckoned to clear up the remains of the week's tappal and then knock off for the day. A telegram came from an A. R. constable from a factious village some 15 miles away alleging that the local S. I. had murdered his mother. It must be a long time before the Dy. S. P. could arrive. We set out in the car before noon. It was hot, we had to walk a good deal and visit many places and houses. The probationer asked endless questions. We got home at about dusk to be met with an 'express' about rioting in a station about 20 miles away in the opposite direction. It must be a long time before the other Dy. S. P. could arrive. We set out over a foul road, the probationer still asking questions. The trouble was not so serious as it might have been and the village calmed down. We bumped back at about 10-30 P. M. I had had enough to last me

for a considerable time. As he got out of the car, the probationer remarked: "That's what I call a really good day."

I was too tired to hit him.

—E. H. COLEBROOK.

8. An A. S. P. went camping. It was in the days of tents and horses and he came to a river which he had to cross but could not because it was in flood. He therefore pitched camp on one side but still managed to carry out inspection on the other side. The weekly report then was roughly as follows:—

D. I. G. to A. S. P. I see that you camped on one side of the river to inspect your station which was on the other side. Why did you not camp nearer the station?

To D. I. G. The river was in flood.

To A. S. P. Then how did you cross the river?

To D. I. G. I swam.

To A. S. P. I thought that you told me that you could not swim.

To D. I. G. I cannot.

To A. S. P. Then how did you cross the river?

To D. I. G. I had a horse which could.

—R. R. B. TRUSCOTT

9. He was under training with me at Vellore in 1920, but just couldn't go the distance. Let us say the atmosphere was too heavy! However, I shall always recall with gratitude to him my 'First Time' experiences. I lent him a spot of cash which he could not repay. He gave me my first boxing lesson. Before leaving Vellore, he gave me his boxing gloves—the first set I ever owned. I was grateful. He also gave me his little pet dog, Lassie—my first pet.

I broke rules, for the first time, to see him off at Katpadi and wish him luck.

A month later he paid a flying visit to Vellore during class hours and vanished with Lassie—my first experience of theft!

—W. A. H. CRESSWELL.

10. I went to Australia in 1948 and en route passed through Colombo. Whilst I was there an important Race Meeting was held and as my old friends in India will understand, it was an event I could not miss. In one of the races, the Judge made a glaring mistake in naming the winner which he refused to rectify. It was before the days of the photo-finish camera and therefore the Judge's decision could not be upset. The actual winner of the race was the favourite whereas the declared winner was a rank outsider. The bulk of the spectators, having backed the favourite, were furious and a hubbub ensued. Encouraged by the people on the stands, the crowd in the central and free part of the course swarmed over the track and into the members' enclosure. By this time the horses engaged in the next race were being paraded in the paddock. The hoipolloi from the centre of the course, few if any of whom knew what the trouble was about, began to shout, whistle and throw stones or anything else handy and the horses in the paddock were driven frantic. The local police were present in force, both mounted and on foot. They had recently suffered severe criticism for preventive action they had taken and, for reasons we can all appreciate, they were content in the absence of a direct order from a Superior Officer to let matters take their course.

I was standing on the rails of the paddock when a Ceylonese youth came up alongside me and started to yell and throw stones. As my old friends may remember, I have a great love for horses and to see them subjected to this kind of treatment made me very angry and I gave the youth a very sharp blow in the face. As soon as I had done so, it occurred to me that, after spending much time in India coping with disturbances in the course of my duty, it was very stupid in my retirement gratuitously to get mixed up in a riot in a foreign country

and in a matter in which I had no direct concern. However, much to my satisfaction my action completely subdued the crowd on my side of the paddock and the noise and stone throwing ceased, enabling the horses to be withdrawn from the paddock.

This may not be a very interesting story but it has, I think, a lesson for Junior Policemen. Action to be effective must be firm and immediate. Otherwise if things are allowed to take their course a very serious situation may develop which could have been avoided by prompt action.

—H. KEENE.

11. Among the traditional tales was one of a murder case with the corpse missing in which the first witness for the defence before the High Court (so the story went) was the "murdered" man. Whether this was pure legend or not I never discovered, but maybe it helped teach budding policemen to temper their zeal with discretion. Many years later as a D. I. G., I was reminded of the old yarn by a case in my Range, which did not, unfortunately, get so far, although further than it should have done, before the "murdered" man was traced in another District, where he had been sequestered. In this case certain old bones had simulated the "corpus delicti" up to a point. In some notes on technical talks at Scotland Yard about 25 years ago, by the way, I find a Rochelynych dictum that bone fragments can be said to be human by the precipitin test, *if not too old*.

By some quirk of memory, the murder case theme and the recollection that the Coimbatore District usually registered more than a hundred each year led me back to my early days as an A. S. P. in the hill-country of Ganjam, where crime was very light but deaths by tiger so many that one station (Budhaguda) registered over a hundred of those occurrences per annum at times. (Memory plays tricks and the number seems rather tall to me now; but that is how it has stuck in my mind.) At all events, we were camping in Budhaguda in 1912 or so, and a tiger had not long before actually come

into the village street and attacked a woman carrying water from the well. During the night a noise on the verandah of the rest-house disturbed us. Full of 'tiger' thoughts, I caught hold of a gun and investigated. The noise came from behind a camp table leaning against the verandah wall (no room for a tiger anyway!). There, it being about 4 a.m., a hen was preparing to lay an early morning egg!

—J. S. WILKES.

12. On this sunny and hot July evening in England, I am reminded of another particularly hot and windless day, also in July, whilst camping at Ulundurpet. Some Koravars had brought

me a python for which I had asked and after handling the snake I closed the deal at an exorbitant Rs. 5/-. but who wants to argue when one is heavy with sleep and the temperature over 100 degrees! The skin was sent to Madras for tanning. But my own skin got suddenly cold on reading the letter acknowledging the snake's skin. "Dear Sir", and the letter went on, "We acknowledge the receipt of the snake skin, but beg to point out that it was that of a Russel's viper and not that of a python". Is it any wonder that I did not touch another snake dead or alive for some years?

—R. R. B. TRUSCOTT

Prof: "What do you find the hardest thing to deal with?"

Stude: "An old pack of cards."

★

Green told his friend that he had made up his mind to speak to his wife about using a little more economy in the household. Next day, however, Green looked pretty glum.

"Was your lecture effective?" his friend asked.

"You bet! It seems I'm going to give up club and cigarettes."

HUMOUR IN THE POLICE

By

A. S. P. AYYAR, I. C. S.

THE ESSENCE of humour is that it must evoke laughter, or at least raise a smile, and that of the best variety of humour is that it should also provoke thought. Many people may wonder what humour there can be in the police who deal with courts and criminals, arrests and detentions, jails and lock-outs, lathi charges and firings on unruly mobs. But a little reflection will show the error of this view. The whole panorama of life is unrolled before the police, often in its utter nakedness, and the kaleidoscopic experience of different and indifferent people got. As life itself is a long-drawn-out drama, there is bound to be a large vein of humour in police transactions.

This humour may, of course, come from transactions between the courts and police officers, or the police and criminals or suspected persons, or the police and the general public, or the police officers *inter se*.

Police officers are required under the law to produce an arrested person before the nearest magistrate within twenty-four hours. A police constable produced an arrested person before the magistrate only after seventy-two hours. He was asked to explain the delay. He replied, "Your honour, I *un*arrested him for fifty hours on the banks of an unbridged stream which had been flooded." "What, did you release him?" asked the magistrate. "No, I simply told him that he should deem himself not to be under arrest till the stream became fordable, so that the twenty-four hours limit laid down by the law might not be exceeded."

A prisoner, while under police guard during his trial in the High Court for a grave offence, escaped from custody during the lunch interval. He could be arrested only after several days, and then protested that he was not the accused who had escaped from custody. He produced

a woman of a different caste who claimed to be his wife and three children who claimed to be his. The Judge considered him to be the escaped man as the resemblance was close. He asked the police officer, who had been in charge of him at the time of the escape, whether he could not swear to the identity. The sergeant said, "I am unable to swear to the identity, your lordship." "What!" said the Judge, "Are you so lacking in powers of observation? Did you only concentrate on his feet, to see that he did not run away, and never had a good look at his face?" "That is unfortunately so, your lordship", replied the sergeant. "Perhaps your lordship, who was seeing his face in front of you, can easily identify him." "Oh, no, no," replied the Judge hurriedly. "I was concentrated on the trial, and not on him."

In olden days, one of the commonest things for the police was to beat or torture a suspected thief to make him produce the stolen goods and confess to the crime. Indeed, old law books, like the *Arthashastra*, lay down elaborate rules about the extent of the beating or torture allowed by the law, the stage of its administration, the persons exempted etc. After the British criminal law came into force in India, the custom was severely discouraged, though, like all old customs, it died hard. An I. C. S. officer condemned a police Sub-Inspector downright for a case of beating of a suspected thief of the criminal tribe which occurred in his jurisdiction and would never take his excuse that that was the only way to recover the property from this undoubted thief. By and by, there was a daylight theft of valuable articles from the Sub-Collector's bungalow. The Sub-Collector saw the thief run away with the things, but could not catch him with the articles. The man was questioned by the

Sub-Inspector but stoutly denied the theft. "Give him two blows. He will soon produce the articles," said the Sub-Collector. "For I saw him run with them." The Sub-Inspector saluted and replied, "All right, Sir, I thought that you condemned all beatings of thieves even when the suspicion almost amounted to a certainty, as in the former case and here." The Sub-Collector bit his lips and remained silent.

A police officer deputed to arrest a cunning absconding criminal finally found him going about in women's clothes and arrested him, recognizing him to be a man by the moustaches. He was warmly congratulated on his skill till another day when he arrested a woman with prominent moustaches, thinking it was the man he wanted. He had forgotten that some women have sizeable moustaches! An able police officer searched for a notorious criminal with a band of police in a plain where he was known to be. They searched north, south, east

and west, several times, but never found him as he had climbed up a tree, and they had not cared to search for him there! Another able police officer was deputed to Benares to arrest a very clever terrorist who was suspected to have escaped there after murdering an official. He was told that he would be dressed as a *sannyasin*. When he saw the train arrive at Benares, he saw several *sannyasins* get down from it and was wondering which one was the man he was after. Just then an awkward *sannyasin* went up to him and, showing a third class ticket, asked him, "Sir, is this a male ticket or a female ticket?" The impatient police officer brushed him aside, saying, "Get away, you fool!" And the *sannyasin* went away. He was the wanted terrorist!

An Inspector of Police was raiding a brothel. He saw a high officer inside, with the prettiest slut there. He promptly saluted and said, "Sir, I did not know that you had raided this house already and caught the worst culprit!"

There was an angry yelp from the bath-room.

"What's the matter, dear?" asked the little bride.

"It's my razor blade," he yelled. "It's dull. It won't cut at all."

"Why, that's silly," she said. "Your whiskers can't possibly be tougher than my lead pencil."

UNIVERSITIES AND THE POLICE

By

N. SUBRAMANIAN, B.A. (Hons)

AUGUST VOLLMER, the father of the American police systems, once said that the average Police Officer is expected to have "the wisdom of Solomon, the courage of David, the patience of Job, the leadership of Moses, the kindness of the Good Samaritan, the strategy of Alexander, the faith of Daniel, the diplomacy of Lincoln, the tolerance of the Carpenter of Nazareth and finally, an intimate knowledge of every branch of the natural, biological and social sciences". Though this seems to be at first sight an exaggeration—a gross exaggeration at that—of the qualities required of an average police officer, in actuality it is not so. It is a modest estimation of the merits of a policeman and it drives home the truth that a good police officer should be an ideal all rounder. Police work in modern times has come to occupy an important place in State activities and the internal peace of a country and the efficiency of its police force are directly proportional to each other. No wonder, the importance attached to and the pains taken in the selection and training of Police personnel has been very great in all well-governed countries of the world.

The Indian Police system, by the very nature of its development, is a perfect blending of the best in the American, the British and the Continental systems. In efficiency and integrity, it has achieved a name which it can be justly proud of. Its progress, especially during the past twelve years has been stupendous and worthy of being emulated by other Asian countries. The creation of the Indian Police Service and the holding of a competitive examination for entrance into that Service have been very important landmarks in the recent history of the Indian Police Force. These have not only resulted in the absorption of the best young brains of the country in the higher ranks of the Force, but have also achieved the pur-

pose of giving a new re-orientation to the police system in the country. It is no exaggeration to say that the progress of the Police Forces in India during the past ten or twelve years has been greater than it was during the forty-five years preceding 1947, i. e., from the time of the appointment of the Police Commission in 1902 till Independence.

But, however, in spite of all this, some questions that arise in this connection are worthy of analysis. Can the Indian Police Force still claim to have availed itself fully of the services of the educated manpower of the country? Has it taken any steps to bring about a closer co-operation between itself and the Universities that will produce the police officers of the future? Is there any University in India which has in its curriculum some of the Police subjects like Criminology, Traffic rules, Crime prevention etc.? Unfortunately the answers to these questions are in the negative. The reasons for this are obvious. At present there is almost a sense of detachment on the part of both the citizenry and the Police. Though it is more than twelve years since we secured our Independence, there is still a lurking sense of aversion on the part of the public for the Police. The repressions of old times still linger in the memory of the former and the policeman is somewhat of an outcast in many places in the country. Only for the past few years has there been any sort of awakening on the part of the citizens and they have come to feel that the Indian Police is after all their force and that its successes and failures are interlinked with their lives and liberties. It is high time, therefore, that Police authorities took concrete steps to capitalize on this welcome change by giving shape to new ideas, methods and conceptions. And there cannot be a better place to try this in than the Universities.

Before analysing some new suggestions and proposals which aim at bringing about a link between the Universities and the Police, it would be better to have an idea of the drawbacks that are now inherent in the present educational system of the country vis a vis recruitment qualifications for entry into the police. On the one hand, the persons who enter the Police Force either in the lower ranks or in the higher ranks have hardly any idea of the type of work that they are expected to do. What they had studied in the High School or College courses—Shakespeare and Spenser, Marshal and Mill—would be of no direct use to them as policemen. There is not a single University in India to-day that offers police subjects as part of its curricula and this is responsible for the lack of interest on the part of new graduates and matriculates for Police work. On the other hand, in most of the Police forces in India, the rules for recruitment lay down a minimum age limit of 18 years for recruits and 21 years for Sub-Inspectors. At the same time the rules require that the minimum educational qualifications for recruits should be the eighth standard and for Sub-Inspectors, a degree. This leads to an anomaly in that a person who ordinarily passes his eighth standard in his 12th or 13th year and takes his degree in his 19th year, has to wait for long before he can be enlisted, because of an age gap of about five years in the case of recruits and of about two years in the case of Sub-Inspectors. This fact has apparently been overlooked by the authorities when they specified recruitment standards for the Police Force. Usually what happens is that immediately after graduation most of the persons secure some employment or other and only a few will be prepared to wait for about two years or more for joining the Police Force. Also those that remain unemployed after this lapse are usually the second-raters. It almost makes one wonder whether the provision of the gap between the minimum age and minimum educational qualifications was a mere unfortunate accident or a pre-planned process whereby only second-raters would be enabled to get into the Force. In the

case of the Indian Police Service this gap is not present and this may be a good reason why the quality of recruitment is better in the I. P. S. It is certainly obvious that in regard to selections to the post of Sub-Inspectors and Constables, there is something entirely wrong in the present rules, and the sooner the rules are set right, the better it will prove to the Police Force generally.

We thus see that the gap between minimum education standards and minimum age limit should necessarily be got rid of. For enabling this to be done without the adverse effect of undecided and immature persons getting into the Force in a spurt of youthful enthusiasm and then leaving it after short service, a few measures must be adopted, primarily by making provisions for elementary Police training (as for other career Services, like the Engineering) in the educational curricula of High Schools and colleges. In the high school level, willing students could and should be taught the elementary principles of fascinating subjects like Criminal Psychology, Crime prevention, Traffic Rules, General Law enforcement etc., so that the young students can develop an interest in the functions and duties of the Police Force. This measure would also help them understand the subject more clearly and put them on a sound footing when they enter the college and take up the same subjects for detailed study, and again, later on, when they choose the police profession for a career after leaving the University. To quote Mr. A. C. Germann, "If the recruit of to-day is to be the Chief of Police of to-morrow, his preparation must be the finest if to-morrow's chief is to be the finest". This is precisely what the Civil Service Assembly of the United States and Canada emphasises when it says that "In a career service system it is necessary to select entrants with a view to promotion and to the level that they may be expected ultimately to reach. It is not enough to relate education requirements only to those of the entrance position". In other words, if a Sub-Inspector cadet of to-day can be normally expected to reach the rank of

a Gazetted Officer by the time he reaches full development, his training *now* should concentrate on the basic essentials (which he must needs know as Sub-Inspector) and *also* cover in a broad way the principles of man-management and organisational and supervisory leadership which he will in course of time have to learn in fuller measure.

In this connection, I would like to quote in extenso from the UNESCO report on "The Univ. Teaching of Social Sciences: Criminology", where at page 13 it is stated:

"In most of the countries of the world, public opinion today is demanding transformation of the judicial and penal system. The Police, the Bench and Penitentiary officers everywhere are realising that their methods must be renovated. Yet, when these authorities wish to put their good intentions into practice, in all countries they encounter a great poverty—sometimes even a total lack—of precedents and guiding standards. The most resolute among them have therefore, been led to undertake their difficult task in an empirical manner and proof accumulates daily that good intentions alone will not advance them much. It is therefore, their hope that the scientific teaching of criminology will be established, so that their efforts may be guided in the right direction."

The report runs on to discuss the why and how of University training in Criminology. To quote its own words:—

"Criminology teaching, which covers the criminological sciences or subjects (criminal biology, psychology, sociology and penology), criminology proper and the subsidiary sciences (forensic medicine, scientific police methodology, and judicial psychology), is essentially a multi-disciplinary affair. It should, therefore, be organised in university institutes, and not in institutes attached to a single faculty."

"University Institutes", that is the key-note of the report, combined with the warning (the need for which will be appreciated by those moving in academic circles) against "the danger

that one educational body, and consequently one discipline, may monopolise the teaching of criminology."

The report emphasises that "university, judicial and administrative collaboration will be needed from the beginning," and suggests that the following collaborators could be assembled.

1. From the University standpoint—professors of penal law, psychiatry and forensic medicine.
2. From the judicial standpoint—a magistrate who handles penal affairs or cases involving minors.
3. From the administrative standpoint—representatives of the police, of the penitentiary services, and possibly of probation and social control agencies."

The foregoing establishes that not only should there be a total renovation of the methods used and a reorientation effected in the study of Criminology by bringing together, within one ambit, all the related subjects for planned study; but the report also emphasises that the only agency to achieve this object fully is the University which can afford to bring together within one faculty the necessary, qualified professors for imparting the lessons to the students.

As regards the introduction of the Police science in the curricula of the Universities, it may be said that this process should consist of many steps. Apart from the inclusion of lectures on Criminological subjects, the Universities should also provide facilities for doing advanced research in those and allied subjects like Criminal psychology, the Polygraph and Probation and Reformation. Such measures would achieve the double purpose of sending into the Police Force persons who are already specialised to some degree, and of facilitating more advanced pre-service and in-service training to them after their entry into the Force. As Mr. V. A. Leonard states, "The full implications of Professional Police training at the University

level in terms of sound public policy can be best understood from the standpoint of results. As these men, University trained for a technical job, move upward on the scale to positions where they can influence policy and administration, the cities of this nation will begin to receive the calibre of the Police Service to which they are entitled."

With regard to the friction between age and educational qualifications, many remedies are suggested and the most important of them all (after equating the two limits) is the introduction of an Auxiliary Police Force or an Auxiliary Social Service Corps in the Colleges and the imparting of practical training to the students who join them, with the active co-operation of the profession and under the leadership of regular Police Officers whose services can be lent to the University in much the same way as the services of regular Army Officers are lent to the N. C. C. Units of colleges. The essential philosophy of such an auxiliary police force may be apprenticeship. Qualified young men may be recruited at the college level, as in the case of the National Cadet Corps, taken into the Auxiliary Police Service as apprentices, and assigned to duties normally performed by civilian personnel in the force. These assignments can be usually rotated so as to give the apprentice a department-wide experience, and after the completion of training, which may be when he leaves college, he can be preferred for appointment to full professional Police rank. This proposed system can have its opponents who will say that a Police position without police authority is unwise, and that assignments during the apprenticeship period will not always be practical in terms of future usefulness. But it should be remembered that whatever objections there may be, this is an exceedingly useful idea and it will surely be a means of offering to the police agency a good field for enabling future recruitment from. It may lead to an indirect benefit by establishing better cordiality between the student-population of our Universities and the Police—a thing which is greatly needed under our present conditions. It may

also result in a more precise, sound and academic foundation being established for the police method adopted in our country. It is a great shortcoming indeed that the Modus Operandi method—the great empirical system that lies at the bottom of our Police method to-day—has till now never been studied satisfactorily with reference to the principles of human psychology, and it is also a pity that there is no research going on in regard to the study of false evidence with reference to the behaviour of the many cells of the human brain. We have been content to accept the Polygraph—a simple affair related to basic human reactions of the respiratory and circulatory systems of the human body and the electrical conductivity of the skin—as the very ultimate thing devised for studying a lie, and so on. That we now stand at the mere threshold of police science and that a lot more remains to be done and studied and that the Universities can help in future researches are all, in my humble opinion, very clear. It is high time that our Universities took the matter in hand and devised remedial measures for this state of affairs.

I would in this connection quote from a speech of the Home Secretary of the British Government, made before the Association of Chief Officers of the Police in June 1957. *Inter alia* he remarked: "I believe that one of our greatest needs now is for systematic research into the problems of crime and the treatment of offenders. And in order that the Home Office may be able to carry out its own studies, as well as stimulating and assisting those of the universities, I am setting up in the Home Office a small specialised research unit." How very much applicable these identical words are in our own case!

A suggestion that I would make with regard to the introduction of police subjects in colleges and Universities is that, in addition to practical, theoretical and laboratory work, the students should join together and discuss Police subjects among themselves under the watchful eyes of the professor. This method—"Conference method", or "Symposium method" as it is

called—is an acknowledgedly better way of teaching a subject. This is particularly recommended for students at the college level, who will evidently be the future Officers, since the students are stimulated, guided and put in the proper way by the Conference leader. Such a system will lead to increased organizational effectiveness and improved morale. In short “it will tend to stimulate supervisory motivation.”

It is worthwhile to consider, in this connection, what the Universities in other countries than England and America (from a study of whose systems most of the foregoing has been suggested) are doing about this problem. In several European countries there are Institutes of Criminology attached to universities. For instance, the University of Paris has one, and the curriculum of the National School for officers of the Constabulary requires student officers to take courses there. Several French provincial universities also have these institutes. Such institutes, too, are attached to the universities of Vienna and Gratz in Austria, and (to quote the Unesco report) “these establishments have the task not only of initiating all police officers (from the ordinary judicial police officer to the highest official), as well as members of the constabulary, in criminal tactics and the theory of investigation, but also of giving them the basic concepts of the theory of the criminal personality and the psychology of those who take part in a criminal trial either as defendants or as witnesses.”

In Sweden a criminology institute is attached to Stockholm University, whilst in Italy a school founded as long ago as 1911 to give criminological training took the name “Institute of Criminology” in 1950, and is closely associated with the “School of Scientific Methodology.” In Belgium not only does the University of Louvain grant the degree of Doctor of Criminological Science but there are also “criminological schools” attached to the Universities of Ghent and Liege both of which universities award a similar degree. Brussels has its “Ecole de Criminologie et de Police Scientifique,” at which diplomas are awarded

to police officers, whilst in Turkey an institute of criminology is attached to the Universities of Ankara and Istanbul, respectively.

A few words, in this connection, addressed mainly to our administrators, would not be out of place. A country usually gets the type of police force it deserves—and pays for. Our administrators have to carefully study and realise the futility of having a non-specialised and cheap force. While I advocate that the University must step in and provide for Police Sciences in its curriculum and thus offer for the force a first class field for recruitment, I also want to emphasize that the pay scales and conditions of service should be made adequate and attractive in order to make the best talent seek an entry into the Force. It is false and harmful economy to have improperly paid and inadequately equipped Police Units in the states. It is not sought to be denied that the Police of a country is certainly a liability on its exchequer. But the protection of the individual rights of a person and his property and the preservation of the public peace are a social obligation of the State, and the debit on the exchequer on account of policing is quite reasonable and necessary. Even redoubtable champions of human liberty have expressed this opinion in unmistakeable terms in their writings. Obviously, the expenditure on the Police Budget cannot be reduced below a certain minimum if the citizen wants his liberty and rights secured and assured for him. The State should only aim at spending the amount in the most proper manner and should not attempt at avoiding necessary expenditure on this head. Niggardliness here would tantamount to being penny-wise and pound-foolish. By all means, let our administrators and our public insist on better and still better results, but let them be prepared to pay for these. The citizen can and should help to reduce the expenditure on the police by regulating his conduct. When Thoreau said, “That Government is best which governs least,” he took it for granted that the citizen possessed the highest civic sense and that he

required no external agency to govern him. This is only the ideal condition. It is indeed true that wherever the citizen's civic sense is high, the need for governance is less and therefore the expenditure on policing is less. In England, probably, this is the case. The citizen there is law-abiding and has a wholesome respect for the Law and the Truth. He volunteers evidence—while an average citizen in India does not—with the result that our Police has to waste time and energy on the securing of evidence. All this means extra expenditure. The crime level being what it is, and the regard (or disregard) for Law and Order that our average citizen has being what it is, it is unwise to save expenditure on the police budget. Also, five badly paid or badly equipped men in a force can hardly do as much work as three well-paid and well-equipped men can. It is high time that our administrators re-examined this problem in the light of these facts.

To use Mathew Arnold's language, the ‘*pro unum est necessarium*’ of the present day is a well-equipped and well-paid police force in each state of our country. We can even afford to reduce the numerical strength and redistribute the present expenditure so that each member of the police force is paid better and is given better facilities. That the increased pay may give commensurate returns, the Universities have to plan proper curricula for courses in Criminalistics in their colleges and place at the disposal of the Government a lot of well-trained students for making a choice from in the matter of appointments to the country's police force. The Universities themselves will stand to gain much by taking this step, because it will stimulate thinking in the right direction on the part of the students and will also tend to reduce student-indiscipline in the colleges.

- Bibliography—i. Police Journal March–July 58.
ii. Police Personnel Management by A. C. Germann.

PERFECT COURTESY

George, who lived a fast life in the city, was driving through the small country town as if all Traffic Laws had been repealed.

“Don't worry”, he soothed his concerned companion. “Out here I can buy my way out of any Traffic trouble.”

Soon afterwards George was whistled down by a rural Policeman.

“Just watch how I handle this yokel,” he said confidently. Then, taking his licence from his Wallet, George folded a ten rupee note around it and handed both to the Policeman.

Silently the latter returned the money and started writing out the notice.

“Now, look,” George protested. “Surely we can handle this thing in a friendly way.”

“Certainly, Sir,” the uniformed man did not even look up. “I'll smile when I give you this notice and you smile when you accept it.”

Messages

I have been watching the Madras Police with fatherly affection for over thirty-five years. Gilbert says, "The policeman's lot is not a happy one". Indeed he is right. Few realise what a tremendous amount of work has to be done by the Police in order to maintain law and order, detect crime, escort V. I. Ps and so on. It is to the credit of Madras that our Police leads all other States and indeed many other countries also in crime detection, in the maintenance of law and order and in general, smart work. One has only to watch the Police dogs at work to realise Madras's supremacy! There has been steady improvement in the morale of the Police force. But, there are still some sore spots to be cured. The Police have to identify themselves closely and completely with the common man. It is not proper for an officer to be complacent and think that everything is well with the Police. He should ever strive towards perfection. The Police are here to protect the law-abiding common man and not to persecute him and every law-abiding individual has a right to walk in the streets with his head in the air, with the confidence that he will not be molested either by the malefactor or by the Police. Finally, I should like to see the Police taking a bigger and bigger share in social service, in community development work and all those pursuits which will help to identify him with a real Socialistic Welfare State.

9-6-'59

W. R. S. SATTIANADHAN,
Chief Secretary, Government of Madras.

★

I have no doubt that your celebrations will be a success and that the Madras Police will keep up its traditions of efficiency and public duty which it has built up over one hundred years of self-dedication to the service of the people.

B. N. MULLIK,
Director, Intelligence Bureau, New Delhi.

It is a matter for gratification that the Madras Police has achieved a century of existence and earned for itself a name second to none in the whole of India. The Madras Police have a distinct uniform of their own and side by side with this they have developed traditions of loyalty, integrity and hard work which have stood them in good stead during the troublous times that have passed. During the last 12 years, after the transition to a Welfare State, the Madras Police have shown their capacity to re-adjust themselves to changed conditions and have been foremost in trying to implement the policy of Government in the Welfare State. A new idea that the policeman is not a persecutor of the public but the friend of the ordinary citizen has been instilled into his mind and now governs his daily activity. It is this spirit which has to be fostered. It is true that a certain element of the body politic will continue to be difficult and will continue to exhibit those criminal tendencies for which a police force is the correct answer. Towards such people, the Police will naturally have to continue their function of maintaining the law and maintaining the public peace and will naturally be stern and unrelenting in the discharge of their duties. But that does not mean that there is any real conflict between this and showing a brotherly attitude towards the law-abiding section of the citizens. It is this dual function that has come into prominence in the last decade, and in discharging this dual function the Police have acquitted themselves very creditably. I congratulate them on the century of good work already achieved and I am sure that this will be an incentive to maintain the same standard of excellence and integrity in the years to come.

—S. K. CHETTUR.

Home Secretary, Govt. of Madras.

★

It is fitting that the Centenary of the Organisation of the Madras Police should be celebrated in an appropriate manner. In any country, the citizens owe much to the Police for ensuring security of life and property and for making orderly, civilised life, possible. Naturally, the work of the Police is prominently brought to notice when they are actually handling situations affecting Law and Order or the security of life or property. But we are apt to forget that their quiet presence and functioning at other times is largely responsible for there being so few situations of this kind.

The Madras Police has stood in the forefront in India for efficiency and general reputation for integrity and courteous and proper dealings with the public. The work of the Police has been more difficult after Independence than before, but there is a growing understanding of the functions of the Police Force in Independent India, and there is a better appreciation of the unpleasant duties which the Police are called upon to perform in connection with situations of the kind referred to above. This growing understanding should be fostered by all of us, so that the Police in our State may rapidly come up to the standards of the Police in the United Kingdom and be equally respected.

—S. VENKATESWARAN,

First Member, Board of Revenue, Madras.

It is gratifying to note that the Madras Police are celebrating their centenary. In a Welfare State, the duties of the Police have increased in numerous directions and it is good to know that the officers and men of the Madras Police have discharged their duties so efficiently and satisfactorily. They have always been anxious to serve in the best interests of the public. I send them my very best wishes.

—R. M. SUNDARAM,
Member, Board of Revenue, Madras.

★

The Madras Police Force is about to celebrate its centenary, and I as an old officer of the Force, who served in it for thirty-four years in its century of existence, would like to send to you and, through you, to all ranks of the Force, my greetings and congratulations on the great occasion.

Embodied in 1859, the Force was the first Police Force to be organised on a provincial basis, in India, and, through all the years since its establishment it has maintained its foremost position among the Indian Forces. Even outside of India, too, it has shown the way in important branches of police work.

The years of my Inspector-Generalship from 1930 to 1938 were testing and difficult years, but I was fortunate in them for the Force met all difficulties with credit to themselves, and later, when Independence came in 1947, the new Government had to its hand an efficient and loyal Police Force which ensured stable conditions in the transition to power and in the early years of its administration.

Since then the Force has not only maintained the high standards of efficiency previously set, but has developed and improved upon them and has earned fresh laurels in almost every field of its work. It is also undertaking important new social welfare work, which may improve the economic condition of certain classes and operate in reduction of crime.

I take it that there will be celebrations of the centenary in all Districts throughout the State. I wish success to them all, for there is much that we can all take pride in and that can be worthily celebrated. I have been impressed by all that I have heard of the work of the Force, and am only sorry that I cannot be with you all to join in the celebrations.

My special greetings to officers and men who worked with me and are still serving, and good luck to you all.

—SIR CHARLES CUNNINGHAM,
Retired Inspector-General of Police.

★

I am most interested to hear of the Madras Police Centenary celebrations. I would like to send my warmest regards to all ranks and to wish the Force every prosperity and success against crime...

—SIR A. J. HAPPEL

I wish the Madras Police all the best of luck and success against crime in the future, and hope that all members of the Force will have good time and be a source of pride to the Presidency.

—SIR FREDERICK SAYERS,
Retired Inspector-General of Police.

★

I send my best wishes to all officers and men of the Madras Police, who, I am sure, will continue to maintain in a high degree in every way the excellent reputation and efficiency of the Force.

—SIR LIONEL GASSON,
Retired Inspector-General of Police.

★

My greetings to you on the occasion of your Centenary celebrations. I shall always look back with pleasure and pride to the long years I was with you. In the last thirty of your hundred years you have been through most arduous and sometimes very dispiriting times which would have put the organisation and loyalty of much older police forces to severe test.

It is often said that even after ten years of your change of role as the police of a People's Government you have not reorientated yourselves to the changed conditions. You have considerable authority vested in you by the law. All power, as is well known, tends to corrupt, not merely in the sense of dishonesty but in the appraisal of human values. Your authority is sometimes used wrongly to the great annoyance and harassment of the Public. You on the other hand often find that the Public do not co-operate with you and sometimes withhold information and assistance for no reason and to the detriment of your work. It is a vicious circle, but the problem must be resolved and I feel that it rests primarily with you to take the initiative and set the pace. Incessant effort and understanding can produce results reasonably soon. The law which lays down your functions has been framed with a sense of inviolable fairness. There is little ambiguity in the definition of these functions. However much we may ask the public to trust you and give you their cooperation there will be little real response unless the public SEE and feel that the Police are playing it fair. It must also be remembered that one instance of wrong-doing destroys the effect of a multitude of good deeds.

It is not only your fairness and sense of duty but your efficiency will also contribute greatly to win the public to you. The protection of life and property, the preservation of public tranquillity and the absence of crime will alone prove whether the objects for which you were appointed have been attained. You must look on yourselves as servants and guardians of the general public and treat all law-abiding citizens with unfailing patience and courtesy. Your attitude towards your fellow citizens must be that of entire friendliness without the sacrifice of dignity. Your aim should be to achieve much with as little exercise of authority and show of force as possible. The police service today calls for something over and above the desire for an honourable profession: it is a call for 'Service' and should be approached from a high sense of duty.

Wish you all the best of Luck.

—T. G. SANJEVI,
Retired Inspector-General of Police.

I am very happy the Centenary of the Madras State Police Force is now being celebrated with great eclat. Although I have handed over physical charge of the Madras Police Force I still feel one with them and the attachment I have for this great force continues unabated.

When I was Chief of Police, the mighty State Police Force held sway from Cape Comorin in the South to Vizagapatam district on the East coast, Bellary district in the North and South-Canara district on the West. Now the boundaries have changed. Irrespective of these changes the Madras State Police has always been a model to the other states and I ardently believe that this unique honour will continue to be safeguarded. On this august occasion I wish the Madras State Police Force happiness and a bright future.

—J. DEVASAHAYAM,
Retired Insp. - Genl. of Police, Madras and Mysore.

★

The Madras Police have the unique honour of celebrating their Centenary this year and I send my greetings to every member of the Force and wish them all health and happiness.

The Madras Police have a creditable record of service and they have earned a well-deserved reputation for efficiency, loyalty and a high standard of personal conduct. This is largely the result of the tradition left by our British Rulers.

The Policeman's job is not an enviable one. In the old days—not far distant—the Police were accused of loyalty to a foreign ruler and of lack of patriotism. Such criticisms are due to ignorance of the duties and responsibilities of the Police. The first and foremost duty of the police is to uphold the authority of the State and carry out its orders with loyalty.

Under a People's Government the responsibility of the Police has considerably increased and its honour has to be safeguarded. Party loyalty is a dangerous thing in a Democracy. The Policeman's duty is clearly loyalty to the constituted authority. With a clear understanding of the implications of Democracy the Police will be regarded as the guardians of Peace and a bulwark against Injustice.

In the coming years it should be endeavoured by every member of the Police to uphold the honour and reputation of the Force and improve the usefulness to the people and the State. With the march of time, I am sure, the old prejudices are bound to disappear and the policeman will be a friend and guide to the public.

I am indeed happy to learn that the Madras Police is celebrating its Centenary. The Madras Police is one the earliest Police Forces to be established on modern lines in India. It is certainly a matter of pride that they continue to be a model Police Force even to this day.

I have had the privilege of being a member of the Madras Police Service from 1925 to 1950 and I am really proud of having been a member for such a long period. During this long period, I had nothing but admiration for the organisation, discipline, efficiency and morale of the Force.

True to their tradition, the Madras Police came upto expectation on every occasion when a problem confronted them and carried out their duties without fear or favour, with loyalty and steadfast devotion to duty.

I have no hesitation to say that the Madras Police, in the discharge of their duties, were equalled by very few and surpassed by none.

The Madras Police have always been an example for others to follow, whether in the maintenance of Law and Order, detection of crimes or even in the field of sports. They have maintained a high standard all round.

May the Madras Police continue to serve the people of the State with still greater zeal and efficiency and also continue to be an example for others to emulate! I convey my heartiest greetings and felicitations to all the officers and men of the Force on this memorable occasion.

—P. K. MONNAPPA,
Retired Inspector-General of Police.

★

The Madras Police will be completing 100 years of its existence this year. It was the first Police Force to be regularly organised in India. It has notable traditions of *esprit de corps* and discipline behind it and has always been known for its smartness and efficiency... Since Independence they have quickly adapted themselves to the changed conditions and have dedicated themselves to a great devotion of service to the people. Today the incidence of professional crime in India is the lowest in Madras State.

On this great occasion I convey my hearty congratulations to Sri S. Balakrishna Shetty, the Inspector-General of Police, Madras, and to his officers and men on the excellent job they have been doing.

—SHIV KUMAR LAL,
Additional Inspector-General of Police, Andhra Pradesh.

The Madras Police is celebrating its centenary celebrations this month and I rejoice in this historic event. I can recall with a sense of pride my association with that service for over 25 years.

The beginnings of an organised and legally-controlled Police system in Madras State were laid about 100 years ago, and though the general pattern has endured to the present day, the Police Force has steadily not only in its size but also in its standard of service and through the years has built up sound traditions of efficiency and public service. Though the fundamental purpose of Police tasks remains unchanged, police service has broadened to include certain aspects of social service and today police association in community interests such as juvenile-delinquency prevention and correction, traffic-control, development work etc. has come to be taken for granted. The post-Independence era has ushered in a Welfare State and reoriented the attitudes and methods of the police towards the public. In stream-lining its methods and improving its techniques, the Madras Police has set a model.

The greatest handicap in modern police administration is derived from partisan politics, and its pressure, applied in varying degrees in all party governments, always affects administration. The result of successful partisan interference is reflected in leadership of poor quality, low standards of personnel management, lawless enforcement of law, inferior service and a general decline of police prestige. While the relationship between the causes and effects is widely recognised, it is sometimes not as widely denounced. It is well known that Police administration in Madras State has always endeavoured to weaken the grip of political influence and a long line of distinguished Chiefs of Police has seen the savage threat implicit in it and fought it with fervour.

I wish the centenary celebrations all success.

—M. KRISHNA MENON,
Inspector-General of Police, Trivandrum.

★

.....The Madras Police Force has the unique distinction of having been the first to be regularly organised in India in 1859. During the hundred years of their existence, the members of the Madras Police Force have kept the highest tradition of service. They have shown, by their bearing and conduct, the fine discipline and training for which they have always been so well known. While most things must change, the tradition of service to the community always maintained by the Police Force must continue unhampered and, if anything, strengthened in the years to come. I have no doubt that the Madras Police Force will see to it and set an example to others.

—PRAVENSINGHI,
Inspector-General of Police, Bombay.

I am glad that the Madras Police is celebrating its Centenary.

The Centenary would provide to the Madras Police an opportunity to survey the different stages of their development and work and the success achieved by them in dealing with different aspects of the political, social and economic life in the State. There may also be an occasion during these celebrations to assess the set up of the New Age and to devise ways and means to adapt itself to its needs.

I have every hope that the Madras Police, being one of the oldest in the country, would be able to look back on its past with pride and with confidence on its future.

I wish the Centenary every success.

—GOVERDHAN,
Inspector-General of Police, Rajasthan

★

The Madras Police is celebrating its Centenary this year and on this memorable occasion, not only for the Police of Madras, but for the Police generally in India, I send my heartiest greetings and warm felicitations to all ranks of the Madras Police. The Madras Police was the first among the Police forces in India to be regularly organised in 1859 and its members can, with legitimate pride, look back on its achievements during the past hundred years. I send the Inspector-General of Police, Madras, and those in charge of the celebrations connected with the Madras Police Centenary my very best wishes for a grand success. I hope the Madras Police will have a still brighter future and I wish them the best of good luck.

—P. L. MEHTA,
Inspector-General of Police, Delhi.

I am very glad to learn that the Madras Police are celebrating their Centenary this year, and convey the most hearty congratulations, both on my own behalf as well as the officers and jowans of the Punjab Police, to our sister force on this happy and auspicious occasion.

The Madras Police can rightly feel proud of their achievements and record of public service during the past hundred years, which are second to none in the country. They also had the proud privilege of having been first to be regularly organised in India in 1859 and so rightly deserve the title of a pioneer Police Service in the country. They have in the past led other States in many a progressive and forward measure and there is no doubt that they will continue to do so in future too.

The role of the Police has no doubt become difficult now in a view of a good deal of public prejudice against it, a hang-over of British days, still persisting, with the result that the requisite public support and co-operation (so essential for successful Police working) is lacking. Also, after the advent of Independence, the public has become too vocal about their demands, but rather apathetic towards their obligations. Thus, we have to strive for a better and closer understanding between the Police and the Public and by our steadfastness and devotion to duty and pleasant and decent behaviour, remove the public prejudice against us. I hope the Madras Police, as in the past, will prove its mettle in the present-day democratic set-up and ideals of a Social Welfare State, and stand as a model for other States.

I wish the Centenary Celebrations a great success.

—RAM SINGH,
Additional Inspector-General of Police, Punjab.

The Madras Police were the first to be regularly organised in India, a 100 years ago, and they have earned a well-deserved reputation for efficiency and for coping with the diverse problems that face a State Police Department in the present times. I have no doubt that the Madras Police will continue to serve the State and the country at large, with the same devotion and success that they have done in the past. I wish them all success and also a very happy celebration of their Centenary.

—D. W. MEHRA,
Inspector-General of Police, Jammu & Kashmir.

.....I am very glad to learn that you are celebrating the Centenary this year and I offer you and your force my heartiest congratulations.

Wishing you and the Madras Police under your command my best wishes for the occasion,

—H. N. SIRCAR,
Inspector-General of Police, West Bengal.

.....It gives me great pleasure to be associated with the Centenary Celebrations of the Madras Police which was the first regularly organised in India, in 1859. I have a particular interest in this because of the fact that I command a force a part of which, Ganjam and Koraput Districts, have reasons to celebrate the Centenary also, being in the Madras Police in those days when it started. We have always valued Madras Police procedures and rules as pioneers for the Police Force in this country. I, as the head of the force of a sister State of India, pray to God that there may be many happy returns of the day for the Madras Police who, I am sure, will lead the way in several spheres of Police work in this country.

—R. C. DASH,
Inspector-General of Police, Orissa, Cuttack.

★

The Madras Police have achieved distinction in many fields of police work. We all look up to it with pride and affection. I have no doubt that it will continue to serve for a thousand years with the same ability and devotion to duty that it had displayed in the first hundred years of its existence.

—K. F. RUSTAMJI,
Inspector-General of Police, Madhya Pradesh.

★

I have great pleasure in conveying my good wishes as also of the Uttar Pradesh Police to the Madras Police on the occasion of their Centenary Celebrations. The Madras Police, which were the first to be organised on a regular line, have laid down high traditions of service and devotion to duty.

I extend to them our heartiest congratulations...and wish them even greater success in the years to come.

—M. S. MATHUR,
Inspector-General of Police, Uttar Pradesh.

★

On the occasion of the Centenary Celebrations of the Madras Police, I send herewith, on behalf of the Police Force of Assam, our warmest greetings.

The Madras Police has the unique honour of being the first organised Police Force in the country and the tradition of efficiency and public service built up by it is an inspiration to the other Police Forces in the country. We wish Madras Police God-speed and all success.

—S. M. DUTT,
Inspector-General of Police, Assam.

POLICEMAN, PART OF SOCIETY

By

M. G. RAJARAM, I.A.S.

The Policeman does not require any special introduction to the man in the street. His history goes back to very early times. Society has always looked upon him as the guardian angel against anti-social and criminal elements. However, because of his duties, some of which are necessarily unpleasant, people look upon him with a certain amount of fear also. During the British days, the role of the Police, though basically the same as it is to-day, was weighted with greater emphasis on the Law and Order aspect. The police were reared almost in seclusion, away from the people, and whenever they did come into contact with the people it was mostly for very unpleasant tasks like quelling a riot or similar punitive action. The people, therefore, had no opportunity to know that the Policeman was essentially a human being and a part of them and had a brighter side to his activities also. Even so there was really no necessity to look upon the Policeman always with dread and fear, except by those who had a skeleton in the cupboard somewhere. But then such people ought to fear the Police as the Police are intended to protect the citizens against such anti-social elements.

With the advent of Independence and change in the outlook at all levels, the Policeman has had to fit himself into the picture of a Welfare State. One cannot deny the fact that in this task he has done admirably well. His duties and responsibilities in the present day set-up have increased a great deal. Not only is he responsible for setting things right after a situation has developed but it is also upto him to prevent such a situation developing to a position where the big stick will require to be wielded. For this purpose it is essential that the Policeman should first of all know about himself and his duties and also about the people

whom he serves. He should get to know the customs and manners of the people in his locality, their trends and directions and even their personal domestic details. This will give him an opportunity to instil the belief in the people that he is part of them and not something separate out of a bottle, only coming out to punish them!

In order to associate the Policeman more with the people, various schemes had been undertaken to enable him to work with the people he serves. There have been cases in our State where Policemen have done remarkable services by laying roads for the villagers and building schools, maternity centres etc. This has been done not in a spirit of condescension but with sincerity and a desire to be of help. This has put the people at ease with the Policeman and now they look up to him even for solving some of their own local problems.

Now that the various Plan schemes are being implemented as part of the national advancement, there is a vital necessity for everyone in the country to know the object of such schemes and their details such as the magnitude of the schemes, where the money is coming from, whom it is intended to benefit etc. Although there are separate agencies to educate the people in this, the Policeman can also be a very helpful factor in keeping in touch with simple facts and figures himself and disseminating the information to the people during the course of his duties, whenever opportunity arises. There are so many other ways also whereby the Policeman can be in intimate contact with the general public. Given below are a few of the items on which the Policeman can engage himself with advantage :—

(a) Running of Primary Schools as a part-time teacher.

- (b) Taking active part in the propaganda for the enrolment of pupils in these schools.
- (c) Running of Adult Literacy schools during his spare time.
- (d) Taking active part along with the Public in school improvement schemes like the provision of mid-day meals, equipment, materials etc.
- (e) Running of maternity and child Welfare centres by the wives of the Policemen either as a full-time job or part-time.
- (f) Organising children's play-centres and libraries.
- (g) Organising and running creches by wives of policemen and distribution of milk powder, multi-vitamin tablets etc. to school-children and others.
- (h) Mobilising public participation in developmental schemes in the villages.
- (i) Taking active part in the propagation of elementary knowledge regarding the use of improved seeds, manures and fertilisers in general in agriculture.
- (j) Promoting the formation of small co-operative workshops to produce locally the less complicated and cheap agricultural implements for the use of the villagers.
- (k) Undertaking informal social education chats on public health, hygiene and sanitation.
- (l) Taking active part in the propaganda for the use of latrines in the villages and also giving a hand in the construction of latrines, in collaboration with the Community Development Administration.

The items given above are not by any means exhaustive but they are a guide to what the Policeman can possibly interest himself in, so as to be of service to the people, if only to enable him to know his people more in their day to day life. This will in itself educate the people in becoming more civic conscious which will effectively reduce the burden of the Policeman in his duties. With the tremendous shortage

of teachers for fulfilling our National objective of free and compulsory education in the primary stage, it will be a great help if suitable members of the Police can be trained to undertake the running of single-teacher schools in their spare time, for which a suitable honorarium can be paid to them.

It may perhaps be said that the active association of the Policeman with the activities mentioned above will be detrimental to his efficiency in his regular duties. The answer to this is that the Policeman, by coming into close contact with the day-to-day life of the villagers, will actually gain a great deal of knowledge which will add to his efficiency. He will develop a human approach to all his problems. It will enable him to discharge his responsibilities to the people in his regular line with more cheer and confidence. We would like to see the children take to the Policeman without any fear but understand him to be a real friend. This in turn will also have its own effect on the minds of the adults in the family. The children when they grow up will have developed a helpful attitude towards the Police and they will actually help society and the Police. Mothers will not mention the Police purely with a view to frightening them into submission in cases of turbulent behaviour. On the other hand they will look up to the Policeman with the object of enlisting his co-operation in whatever correctional methods they want to adopt to improve the behaviour of their children. Delinquency in children will decrease. Crime among them when they grow up will also decrease. Thus the Policeman should really weave himself into the fabric of society if he is to effectively discharge his responsibilities to society. It will also raise the standards of our Policeman, as the acquisition of knowledge in various spheres will give him special dignity, demeanour and self-confidence. The Police force will attract social-service minded people into their ranks. Can this process be initiated and will the authorities concerned look at the problem with that breadth of vision that is necessary? The answer is 'yes', definitely.

CRIMINAL INVESTIGATION

By

H. N. SIRCAR, J.P., I.P.,

(Inspector-General of Police, West Bengal)

OFFICERS OF and above the rank of Sub-Inspectors of Police investigate most of the criminal cases in India. In West Bengal selected Assistant Sub-Inspectors of Police, specially empowered by the Superintendents of Police, investigate a few minor cases just to learn some experience in handling cases prior to their attaining the next higher rank. A majority of our Investigating Officers learn the art and science of investigation the hard way by plodding through errors and omissions. An Investigating Officer never gets the chance of becoming the ideal investigating officer of the type described in Hans Gross or even the matter-of-fact detective of Scotland Yard. Many of them hardly get the time and opportunity for applying their minds properly to their cases and they simply wander from one case to another, from one problem to the next. Even then a systematic approach will help them. Hence these few broad hints on investigation.

The purpose of a Criminal Investigation is :—

- (i) to verify if a Crime has been truly committed,
- (ii) to trace the culprit who has committed it, and
- (iii) to produce the culprit before the Court of Law with the evidence collected by investigation.

It is not always that the culprit is unknown and that the Investigating Officer has to fix the identity of the culprit. Very often, specially in many cases against the person, in cases of cheating, criminal breach of trust etc., the culprits are known and named in the First Information Reports. In such cases the Investigating Officer has to decide whether the case is a true one and if the right accused has been implicated on true evidence. In a majority of

robbery and dacoity cases in which the culprits are named and said to have been recognised, the Investigating Officer has to be extra-cautious because a culprit who is well known to the inmates of the house is not likely to take any direct part in the commission of the crime and put the halter round his own neck. Even if he did, he would stay out of view of the inmates or would be sufficiently disguised to avoid recognition. As the investigation of most of the heinous cases are supervised by superior officers of and above the rank of Circle Inspectors of Police, these categories of officers should be particularly cautious in accepting the story of recognition of persons known to the complainant and his party. Unfortunately these so-called enemy-culprits get to know of the possible move by the complainant and immediately make themselves scarce just to avoid immediate arrest by the Investigating Officer. They cautiously watch the progress of investigation and if they find the Police too hot on the chase, they quietly go and surrender before the Magistrates and get themselves enlarged on bail. They forget that they bring unnecessary suspicion on themselves by absconding, but the ignominy of arrest and invariable remand to jail custody for a fortnight at least if not longer can hardly be risked by an innocent person. If the Investigating Officers do not rush to arrest without properly judging the evidence, specially when there is no chance of the culprit absconding, many of the unnecessary arrests, false accusations and running after false clues would cease.

With a few words of caution, I pass on to the investigation of genuine cases where the Investigating Officer has to find the culprit. He will be well advised to remember the six W's of investigation. If he can find answers to them he has solved the case. He should never forget to include replies to all the six W's in his

charge sheet to the Magistrate or in the report to his superior officer. The six W's are :—

- | | |
|-------------------|----------------------|
| 1. What | —was the offence? |
| 2. When | } was it committed? |
| 3. Where, and | |
| 4. What way (how) | } —committed it, and |
| 5. Who | |
| 6. Why? | |

The sixth "W" is a very natural question. We always ask, "Why did he do it?" but the answer is not always there and is best known to the "who". Without putting emphasis on "why" the Investigating Officer should concentrate on the collection of evidence and clues to trace the culprit. The first thing which an Investigating Officer should do when he takes up an investigation is to go straight to the place of occurrence. Dealy in arriving at the place of occurrence may result in the loss of many valuable clues through messing-up by curious visitors who will vie with each other to see what has happened. In rioting cases in villages, the place of occurrence is often in dispute and witnesses on both sides swear themselves blue to assert their respective claims. Only a quick inspection of disputed sites may help an Investigating Officer to know the truth. In a case of rioting in Faridpur district (now in East Pakistan) where serious riotings over land disputes were very frequent, profuse quantities of blood were found scattered in two places. Samples were sent to the Chemical Examiner who reported one of them to be of goat's blood. In another case, to justify a murder on the plea of self defence, a son inflicted grievous injuries on his mother. Apart from the professional importance of it, members of the public also expect the Investigating Officer to arrive at the scene in the quickest possible time. Many of the complaints which are voiced by the public pertain to the delay of the Investigating Officer and his apparent callousness in dealing with the distress of a person who had suffered physically or pecuniarily or both. After all, when a person has lost some of his money or has been injured physically, he comes to the police to seek red-

ress. In most of the cases the caller is suffering from a shock and is not mentally balanced. He needs comfort and quick attention. He is impatient and cannot tolerate any delay. He has no time to listen to the advice of the Investigating Officer or to tales of difficulties. As telephonic communications improve further, fewer persons will personally go to the police stations and more crimes will be reported on the telephone. People will demand, "Send an Officer right away, please hurry." We can meet some of these urgent calls by the patrolling radio vans now being increasingly pressed into service, but these officers on patrol will only hold the field for the Investigating Officer to take charge.

So we must teach the first policeman who arrives at the scene how to preserve the few tiny threads of evidence on which the detection of the case may entirely depend.

One must not, however, think that quick action is not necessary in dealing with crimes in the rural area where delay is almost inevitable due to bad communications. It must be remembered that clues do not wait for the late arrival of the Investigating Officer. Dead bodies start decomposing, blood disintegrates, foot-prints get worm-eaten if not destroyed by unwary treads and the culprits get several hours start on the Investigating Officer to hide the guilt, so we must not only insist on the quickest reporting of crime, but we must also see that the Investigating Officer arrives at the scene of crime with the least possible delay.

What does an Investigating Officer do on arrival at the scene?

If the Investigating Officer has not formed a good idea of the crime from the first information, he should immediately get hold of someone who is likely to give him a brief history of the case, direct the crowd away from the scene and post some constables conveniently to prevent unwanted intrusion on the scene.

After the Investigating Officer has formed a general idea of the crime, he should start a

systematic inspection of the scene, taking with him only the complainant and two other persons just to watch what he does and to witness the find and seizure of important alams. Unfortunately in India everything has to be done by the Investigating Officer in the presence of witnesses who may not be intelligent enough to know what the Investigating Officer does or finds, who can be gained over to spoil the evidence or can unknowingly disturb some traces or clues. The golden rule for the Investigating Officer is to limit the number of witnesses to two and not to allow other curious people to crowd round him at the place of occurrence. The Investigating Officer has to be in absolute command of the scene. If there are others to assist, they must act according to his advice. The other inviolable rule as laid down by Hans Gross is: "Never alter the position of, pick up or even touch any object before it has been minutely described in the report". But the Investigating Officer must also make sure that the curious visitors did not alter any of the positions prior to his arrival. He should try and collect the names of persons who had been on the scene. The description of details can best be done by measurements and plotting on a rough sketch to start with. A systematic way of inspection would be to start in a clock-wise way and to complete the circle at the point of starting. No hard and fast rules can be laid down regarding the manner of search; much will depend on the nature of the crime and the actual scene. In a serious case, say, a murder, the Investigat-

ing Officer should, wherever possible, get the services of photographers and other experts from the C. I. D.. In India, a majority of our Investigating Officers should not only know what expert service is available to them, and what materials are to be collected for the expert, but also how the materials are to be collected, preserved and despatched and in many occasions they themselves have to learn to act as experts.

In drawing up a detailed report of the place of occurrence with or without the sketch plan, the Investigating Officer should invariably include the following points:—

- (i) A description of the place of occurrence and the traces found by the Investigating Officer.
- (ii) A description of the surroundings.
- (iii) A description of the traces of entry or exit by the culprit in the scene or in the surroundings.

An Investigating Officer should make out a sketch plan in every case. At least I did it. It always helped me to understand the written description in a much better way. I am sure the Investigating Officer would find the sketch equally useful when writing out the detailed verbal description of the place of occurrence.

The report must be so complete that anyone reading it will have a complete and clear knowledge of what is reported. If there is anything which must still be explained orally, the report is not complete.

British Poet and critic, Sir Osbert Sitwell: "The best way to answer a bad argument is to let it go on."

'Look', Vol. 23, No. 10.

THEY SAID SO IN 1903

By

C. V. NARASIMHAN, I. P. S.

Some members of the public have asked whether the celebration of the centenary of the Madras Police in 1959 implies that the first police station in Madras State was opened in 1859! It is quite probable that some members of the Madras Police force do not themselves know the correct position in the matter. It will be of interest for such persons to know the significance of what took place in 1859 the centenary of which we are now celebrating.

2. The indigenous system of police in India when the East India Company were spreading their domain over the country was organized on the basis of land tenure. The responsibility for apprehending disturbers of the public peace and for restoring stolen property rested on the zamindar for his estate. The subordinate landholders under him bore this responsibility in their respective areas under his orders, and at the village level the police functions were performed by the village headman assisted by one or more village watchmen. This system which was well-suited to the needs of simple, homogeneous and more or less isolated agricultural communities proved hopelessly inadequate for a growing community with increased facilities for transport and communication and governed by a centralised administration. In 1813, the Court of Directors of the East India Company appointed a special committee to enquire into and report on the administration of police and justice in the company's territories in India. On the recommendations of this committee the Court issued orders abolishing the control of the village police by the landholders and vesting the controlling and supervising authority in the Collector of the district. The village police was thus retained as the basic unit of police administration at the head of which was placed the Collector who was assisted in his duties by

the tahsildars. Madras was the first to give effect to these orders of the Court and, on the recommendation of Sir Thomas Munro and Mr. Stratton, Madras Regulation XI of 1816 was passed for the purpose of establishing the above police system throughout the Presidency. Bombay followed with its Regulation XII of 1827 which was more or less on the lines of that adopted in Madras.

3. Excepting the uniformity that was brought about in this system in the matter of supervision over the work of the village police no other substantial improvement was achieved. The growing need for the creation of a police force as such was easily seen by the Company's local administrators. Sir Charles Napier organized such a force for the first time in Sind in 1843 but it was more military than civil in its essential character. It was a separate and self-contained organization with its officers having no other functions to perform. The Bombay Police was remodelled on the above lines in 1853, one of the important features of the reform being the appointment of a Superintendent of Police for every district, who, while generally subordinate to the Magistrate, had exclusive control over the police. A native police officer was appointed to every tahsil and he held a position relative to the tahsildar in the same manner as his Superintendent with reference to the Magistrate.

4. Madras followed next with similar reforms. The reforms took a more definite shape here with the reorganization of the police in the entire Presidency into one force under the executive command of an Inspector-General. The police force within a district was placed under the charge of a Superintendent who was to act under the general direction and control of the Magistrate of the district in tackling

police problems of the district. The Superintendent was to be assisted by Assistant Superintendents. Further down the line, Inspectors of Police exercised supervisory powers over officers in charge of police stations. These reforms were given effect to in 1859 by the enactment of the Madras District Police Act (Act XXIV) of 1859. Though similar reforms had been brought about in some measure earlier in Bombay, the necessary legislation for giving a definite shape and statutory basis for the reorganization was gone through there only in 1890 when the Bombay District Police Act (Act IV of 1890) was passed. It would thus be seen that Madras was the first province to reorganize and provide a statutory basis for the system of a unified police administration throughout the province with its own officers under the command of an Inspector-General of Police as obtains to-day. This was done in 1859 by the passing of Act XXIV of 1859. This act gave statutory recognition for the Madras Police as a police force and it is the centenary of this force that is being celebrated now.

5. It will be interesting to note in this connection that the first Police Commission appointed by the Government of India in 1860 to go into the whole question of police administration in British India and submit proposals for increasing the efficiency of the police recommended the adoption of the Madras system embodied in the Madras District Police Act, 1859. On the recommendation of this Commission, the Indian Police Act (Act V of 1861) was passed into law by the Government of India. The police forces of all other Provinces were gradually reorganized on the lines laid down in this Act.

6. Reforms on the legal side also came along with the reorganization of the police. The Indian Penal Code was brought into the Statute book in 1860. The Indian Evidence Act was passed in 1872. The Code of Criminal Procedure in the form in which we know it today was passed into law in 1898. Administration of criminal law and justice in the

country was thus shaped and given a statutory basis between the years 1860 and 1898.

7. In 1902—forty-three years after the introduction of the new police administration in Madras—the Government of India appointed another Police Commission to enquire into and report on the adequacy of the new system for the efficient performance of police duties. Several details regarding the organizational set up in the police were required to be reviewed and reported upon by the Commission. The Commission toured all the provinces, studied the different police systems, elicited the views of officials and the public by examining a large number of witnesses and submitted their report in May, 1903. They made a number of recommendations regarding the organisational set up at lower levels and matters of procedure and method in regard to the investigation of crimes and prosecution of cases. Most of their recommendations appear to have been accepted and incorporated subsequently in the police manuals of the different provinces.

8. The Police Commission of 1902-03 had the opportunity to review and take stock of the merits and demerits of the new police administration round about the middle of the century that has rolled by after 1859. When one reads their report now one is struck by the relevancy and truth of some of their comments even with reference to conditions as they exist today. It will be interesting to note such portions of their report at the present juncture and assess the need for further reform now.

9. In a general assessment of the standard of police administration, the Commission have observed as follows :-

“The system introduced in 1860 was, on the whole, a wise and efficient system. It has failed for these among other reasons: that the extent to which the village police must co-operate with the regular police has been lost sight of, and an attempt has almost everywhere been made to do all the police work through the officers of the department; that the importance

of police work has been under-estimated, and responsible duties have ordinarily been entrusted to untrained and ill-educated officers recruited in the lowest ranks from the lower strata of society; that supervision has been defective owing to the failure to appoint even the staff contemplated by the law and to increase that staff with the growing necessities of administration; that the superior officers of the department have been insufficiently trained and have been allowed from various causes to get out of acquaintance and sympathy with the people and out of touch even with their own subordinates; and that their sense of responsibility has been weakened by a degree of interference never contemplated by the authors of the system.” (Para 22).

The lack of effective co-operation and understanding between the village police and the regular police is felt even today in the rural areas. The Police work done by the village talayari is little and the preventive work done by the village headman, less. The place of the village headman in the village society is fast receding into the background with the evolution of village development committees and village panchayats contemplated in the development and welfare schemes that are being launched all over the country. Reform is therefore needed now to substitute the village talayari and the village headman by some other agencies who will be better trained for their job and who, in their functions, will be geared to the panchayats or development committees of their area. The nature and importance of police work must be properly assessed at all levels and staff should be increased adequately to meet the growing needs of administration. Police men are essentially field workers like engineers and the question of economy of expenditure should not weigh too much with the Government while considering proposals for increasing the staff to meet any particular need. The reference made by the Commission to the weakening of the sense of responsibility of officers by interference is well worthy of being taken note of again.

10. Analysing the general complaints made by the public against the Police, the Commission have made the following observations:

“Another very serious ground of complaint against them is the unnecessary severity with which they often discharge their duties and the unnecessary annoyances which they inflict on the people. The Commission have received endless narrations of the worries involved in a police investigation. A body of police comes down to the village and is quartered on it for several days. The principal residents have to dance attendance on the police all day long and for days together. Sometimes all the villagers are compelled to be in attendance, and inquiries degrading in their character are conducted coram populo. Suspects and innocent persons are bullied and threatened into giving information they are supposed to possess. The police officer, owing to want of detective ability or to indolence, directs his efforts to procure confessions by improper inducement, by threats and by moral pressure. Actual physical torture is now rarely resorted to; but it is easy, under the conditions of Indian society and having regard to the character of the people, to exercise strong pressure and great cruelty without having recourse to such physical violence as leaves its traces on the body of the victim. Sometimes suspects, whom the police officer does not desire to report as under arrest, are kept for days together under so-called “surveillance”, which is nothing else than unauthorized confinement or restraint, a system which affords serious opportunity for malpractices. All this is done to secure evidence in support of the view which the police officer from time to time holds regarding the case. If in his opinion enough of evidence is not thus obtained to secure a conviction, he will not hesitate to bolster up his case with false evidence. Sometimes this leads to an innocent person being prosecuted through police mistakes. More often perhaps it leads to guilty persons escaping through the suspicion thrown on the police evidence. Many a good case has been ruined in this way; but the police

officer is unduly impelled by the statistical test to try to make his investigation end in conviction." (Para 26).

Can it be said that the above complaint may not be levelled against the police now? Even the conduct of the most conscientious and well meaning Sub-Inspector or Inspector of Police is open to such complaints now because of the very nature of our rural public and their attitude to enquiries from the police. It is because no witness speaks freely and fully when first questioned by the police that the latter have frequently to examine witnesses repeatedly, pointing out to discrepancies in their statements and finally obtain from them all that they know in regard to any particular occurrence. Such a process of questioning necessarily results in the police taking most of the time of the witnesses in the village during their stay in the village. Reluctance of witnesses to depose freely, unwillingness of respectable villagers to figure as witnesses for search, seizure etc., done by the police, a sense of undue sympathy for the accused, the dread of having to attend court for a number of days later, etc., are all factors which render the process of investigation an unpleasant task for the police. The degree of unpleasantness can to some extent be minimised by patience and courtesy on the part of the police. These qualities have therefore to be cultivated and developed assiduously in all ranks right from the moment of their joining the force. The question of finding food for the policemen who stay on in the village as a body for some days continuously during investigation is another cause for inconvenience to the villagers in general. It will be a good arrangement if village headmen are authorized to provide food at Government cost for bodies of policemen exceeding five, stationed continuously at the village at any time for a period exceeding two days. This will ensure that the food procured from the village is paid for. To avoid a possible misuse of this facility it may be laid down that a gazetted police officer should personally satisfy himself about the necessity for stationing the policemen in such numbers

for such time and then authorize their feeding at Government cost. Men fed at Government cost in the above arrangement will forego their daily allowance. There will be no distinction between the reserve men and taluk police men in the matter of eligibility to be fed at Government cost.

11. While describing the status and position of the Inspector of Police, the Commission have observed as follows:—

"The Inspector ought to occupy a position similar to that of the tahsildar (or mamlatdar). His police duties and responsibilities are similar to those of the tahsildar in the revenue department; and it is essential to place the two departments on practically the same footing, or it will be impossible to secure good men for the police. The same kind of men should be attracted to both services". (Para 62).

It cannot be denied that there is dissatisfaction among the police officers over the disparity between the service conditions of similar ranks in the revenue and the police. The removal of this disparity at all levels will enhance the morale of the police.

12. The much-talked-about relationship between the Collector and the Superintendent of Police is referred to by the Commission in the following paragraph:

"On the subject of the discipline of the police, the Commission would lay down as the guiding principle that the maintenance of discipline must be entrusted entirely to the officers of the force. This is in accordance with the law as expressed in the Madras Dt. Police Act (XXIV of 1859) and the general Police Act (V of 1861), in neither of which enactments is there any mention of the District Magistrate or the Commissioner in connection with the discipline of the force. In the Bombay Act (IV of 1890) such interference seems to be contemplated, and in every province except Madras interference in a greater or less degree is allowed under the rules contained in the police manuals. The Commission think that this departure from the intention of the

framers of Act V of 1861 is at once unnecessary and undesirable. They consider that the District Magistrate should occupy a position outside the Police Department, and they hope that his connection with it will gradually grow less and less, close as the honesty and capacity of the force improve. For the present, his guidance and advice cannot be dispensed with in connection with the prevention and detection of crime, but his control will be of a general character and need not be extended to details of discipline and internal economy. It will be a sufficient safeguard of the interests which are committed to his charge if he is empowered to direct the Superintendent to make an inquiry into the conduct of any subordinate police officer, and this power should certainly be given to him. If he is dissatisfied with the results of any inquiry into a case of misconduct, he will, of course, be at liberty to bring the matter to the notice of the Deputy Inspector-General, and if necessary of the Inspector-General. To go further than this would be to weaken the authority of the Superintendent and to lessen his sense of responsibility. The requisite control over the Superintendent's exercise of his disciplinary powers is afforded by the right of appeal to the higher officers of the department and by their supervision. There is no necessity for the dual control and the undue interference of the District Magistrate which, besides being unsound in principle, has led to the practical elimination of the Deputy Inspector-General, and the reduction of his position to that of an inspecting and reporting officer, which has greatly impaired his usefulness" (Para 81).

It should be a matter of pride for the Madras Police that the relationship between the Collector and the Superintendent of Police in the districts is based on sound traditions built up over a long period of years and is of a nature consistent with the dignity and status of the two offices. It should be the endeavour of officers on both sides to continue these traditions and ensure the maintenance of a cordial atmosphere for the turn out of useful and effective police work in the districts. It should be noted that

in placing the Collector above the police of the district the emphasis is more on the *responsibility* of the Collector for tackling law and order problems of the district than on his role as the ceremonial head of the police. If this position is properly understood and realised by officers on either side there would be no cause for friction of any kind at any time.

13. On the subject of tackling receivers of stolen property the Commission's suggestion is contained in the following paragraph:

"One well-recognized method of preventing offences against property is to take vigorous action against receivers. In most provinces a considerable number of persons are convicted every year of receiving stolen property, but the evidence goes to show that there is but little success in dealing with habitual receivers. It is not that the real receivers are not known to the police: they are well known, but they purchase immunity from arrest and prosecution by giving occasional assistance in the detection of cases, while the police are sometimes actually in their pay. There is, therefore, a marked reluctance to proceed against them, their premises are seldom watched, and it is extremely rare for a police officer to ask for a search warrant under section 98 of the Criminal Procedure Code. The Commission fully recognize the difficulties in a country where every village of any size has one or more goldsmiths and where nearly every goldsmith will buy stolen jewellery. Any legislation on the lines of the English Pawnbrokers' Act would be useless, but energetic, intelligent and honest action within the limits of the existing law would secure much better results than are obtained at present. In England it is now not uncommon for the courts to postpone passing sentence on a person found guilty of an offence against property in order to allow him an opportunity to restore the stolen goods and give information as to the receiver, on the understanding that his conduct in this respect will be taken into consideration in awarding punishment. Something of the same kind might be tried with advantage in India. Convicts

might also be questioned and given a remission of sentence or a conditional pardon if the information furnished by them stands the test of examination and secures the conviction of receivers. This was the method adopted by Colonel Sleeman with such excellent results in his campaign against thagi, and the valuable lesson should not be thrown away."

(Para 145).

The above suggestion does not seem to have been accepted then. It may be worthwhile now to bring in necessary changes in procedural criminal law to enable the award of lesser sentences to criminals when found guilty if they are in a position to provide information about their receivers and thereby restore the stolen property.

14. The omission of the word 'truly' in Section 161 (2) Cr. P. C. after the words 'bound to answer' is the subject of some interesting comments from the Commission. A raw recruit to the police when he is taught the criminal law notes with disgust the different provisions of law which breathe distrust in the police and fetter them with almost impossible conditions in their executive work. After some experience the recruit gradually realises the need for some at least among these provisions for safeguarding justice and holding the police clear of any possible abuse or blame. The omission of the word 'truly' in Section 161 (2) Cr. P. C. is only to enable a patient and persistent examination of the witnesses by the police during an investigation. As noted earlier witnesses very rarely tell the police in the first instance all that they know. Repeated examination and cross examination only bring out the statements of the witnesses in their entirety. The comments of the Commission in this regard are reproduced below:—

"More or less connected with this matter is the complaint which a considerable number of witnesses have made that the omission of the word 'truly' from Section 161 of the Criminal Procedure Code has the effect of compelling any one examined by a police officer investigating a case to answer all questions relating

to such case put to him by such officer, but not to answer them truly. In the Codes of 1861 and 1872 the word 'truly' had no place in the corresponding section. It was inserted in the Code (Act X) of 1882; but the papers do not show that this was due to mature consideration. When Act V of 1898 took the place of Act X of 1882, the Legislature reverted to the law as it originally stood. The Commission sympathise with those who deprecate anything that looks like the encouragement of false statements; and they regret that the omission of the word may have that appearance. But to reinsert the word would have the practical effect of making prosecution for perjury possible in respect of statements made to the police under this section; and this (subject to the provisions of sections 202 and 203 of the Indian Penal Code) the Commission would strongly deprecate. They find also experienced police officers opposed to the reinsertion of the word on the ground that the fear of prosecution for incomplete or untruthful statements already made might deter witnesses from eventually giving all the information in their power. As a matter of fact, people are far more likely to speak truly to a tactful officer in a local investigation, when they are free from the influence of fear of any consequences which may result from speech. The Commission are not prepared, therefore, to recommend the reinsertion of the word 'truly' in this section. It appears, however, that the omission of the word has been held to render it impossible to enforce the obligation to answer questions imposed by the second clause of the section (I. L. R., Mad., XXIII, 544). This calls for an alteration of the law, which might take the form of any necessary addition to section 179 of the Indian Penal Code."

(Para 164).

15. Some important and wholesome principles to be borne in mind by inspecting officers before they proceed to assess the work of a subordinate are enunciated in the following paragraph of the Commission's report.

"It is a frequent criticism of Indian police administration that the work of police officers

is judged almost entirely by statistics. There is no doubt exaggeration in this view, but there is also much justification for it. The annual reports, for example, contain a table showing for each district the ratio of crime to population, the percentage of reported cases investigated by the police, the percentage of cases detected and the percentage of convictions in respect of persons arrested and persons prosecuted, while in some provinces it even still concludes with a column containing what is called the "figure of merit", based on a combination of all these percentages. It is little wonder, therefore, that a very general belief exists that "merit" is judged by statistics; and this belief is strengthened by the prominence given to percentages in the reports on the inspections of police stations. The station-house officer naturally concludes that it is of the first importance for his promotion and prospects that he should obtain a high ratio of convictions both to cases and to persons arrested, and a low ratio of crime; he believes that attention is given much less to the methods of his work than to the results of it, and that but little inquiry will be made regarding the means provided the ends are satisfactory. It is not necessary to expatiate upon the evils which flow from the wide prevalence of these mischievous opinions among subordinate police officers, nor need the Commission dwell upon the imperative urgency of doing everything that is possible to remove all justification for a belief so damaging to real efficiency. No civi-

lized Government can dispense with statistics of crime and of the success of its officers in dealing with it, but such statistics must be used with judgment and discrimination. Their chief purpose should be to direct attention to particular points of working or particular localities, and to indicate where further inquiry is necessary. Police work should be judged, not by statistical results, but upon the facts elicited by these inquiries. A relatively high rate of criminality or a low rate of detection does indicate that something is wrong, but it does not in itself justify the conclusion that there is undoubted administrative failure on the part of the police. The cause of failure can be determined only by a careful and detailed examination of the actual facts, and if the necessity for an examination of that character is steadily kept in view by the superior officers, the misconception that now prevails among their subordinates will soon disappear."

(Para 182).

16. The Police Commission wrote their report more than fifty years ago. It is very interesting to read their report now and turn one's thoughts inwards to check how far we have progressed and improved over the position noted by the Commission then. The writer has reproduced some portions of their report in the foregoing paragraphs in the hope that other members of the police force would be tempted to read the full report and do some introspection and criticism so that we can hope to achieve progress.

Car Owner: I've had this car a whole year and haven't paid a rupee for repair or upkeep since I bought it."

Friend: "Yes. The man at the Service Station was telling me the same, too."

HEREDITY AND CRIME

By

H. K. GHAZI, I. A. S.

THE BELIEF that criminals are biologically different from normal human beings is probably as old as crime itself. We hear quite often expressions like, "He is a born criminal", or that, "So and so has the look of a murderer", or that, "It is in the blood". Even eminent authors and poets have given expression to such ideas. Homer describes Thersites in the following manner:—

"His mountain shoulders half his breast
o'erspread,
Thin hairs bestrew'd his long misshapen
head."

Spenser said:—

"For of the soule the bodie forme doth take,
For soule his forme and doth the bodie
make."

Even the great Shakespeare speaks of Cassius,
"Yond' Cassius has a lean and hungry look;
He thinks too much: such men are danger-
ous."

We find an echo of this in Dostoevsky's description of Lutehka. All these go to show that men of all ages have regarded criminals as somewhat different from normal human beings, not merely in their attitudes but also in their physiognomy and their hereditary make-up.

Such ideas were formulated into a scientific theory for the first time by Cesare Lombroso, an Italian Criminologist who expounded his famous theory in his epoch-making work "L'uomo Delinquente", (The Criminal). According to Lombroso there are three types of criminals: the born criminals, the insane criminals and the 'criminaloids'. According to him the born criminals are atavistic persons who are a sort of a 'throw-back' possessing several primitive biological characters. In the

skull of a brigand, Lombroso found a small depression in the lower back part which he called the median occipital fossa. Such a fossa is found in the shells of some lesser mammals. Lombroso therefore took this to be a proof of his theory that criminals have primitive atavistic characters. The second class of criminals he called the insane criminals, and in this class he included the imbeciles, the idiots, the melancholics, the alcoholics, the epileptics and sufferers from schizophrenia, hysteria etc. In the third category of criminaloids, he included persons who do not differ from normal human beings physically but who are different from them in their mental make up and have a tendency towards anti-social conduct. Lombroso marshalled a lot of evidence in support of his theory. Apart from heredity he even tried to establish connection between the incidence of crime and geological, meteorological and climatic factors. Another Italian, Enrico Ferri, further developed the theory of Lombroso, though he laid greater emphasis on the social factors. Another great Italian Criminologist, Garafalo, strengthened the Lombrosian theory though he too put the emphasis on psychological anomalies.

3. Lombroso's theory received very wide publicity because it was the first attempt to explain crime scientifically. Even the general public was inclined to receive it favourably in the hey-day of Darwinism. However, long before Lombroso's death in 1909, a reaction had already started and there developed a school of sociologists and criminologists who believed that crime was purely due to economic and social factors and that the environment played a much greater role than heredity in the formation of criminal characteristics. People started saying that criminals were not born but that they were made and that it is the Society

which is to blame if a man turned a criminal. Lombroso's theory soon came to be discredited by most of the Criminologists. However, recent advances in the fields of Human Genetics, Psychology and Pathology have shown that there is a germ of truth in what Lombroso said. In fact some geneticists of to-day have started advocating Lombroso's theory and at this juncture when the pendulum is probably about to swing back, it is worthwhile examining the evidence that there is in support of Lombroso's theory.

A number of crimes are committed by people on the road to lunacy. Koller (1939) who made an extensive study of hereditary relationships of lunacy (schizophrenia) concluded that schizophrenia is definitely hereditary. However, because of inadequate data, he was not able to say definitely whether schizophrenia is a dominant character or a recessive character, though he felt that the dominant factor theory would fit the available data better. He also evolved a working hypothesis for explaining the inheritance of schizophrenia. According to him, there must be two sets of genes for schizophrenia—a main gene called A and a Nebengene called B. It is the character of the Nebengene B which would determine whether a man would be an outright lunatic or only mentally unstable. Persons having A B B would be schizophrenes or outright lunatics and those with A B b, 'schizoids' or unstable persons. Among these schizoids would be a number of eccentrics and cranks and also a good many criminals. All these criminals can be described as hereditary criminals. Similarly, epilepsy is also hereditary. A number of epileptics are criminals. In fact, Gillin (1945) wrote that all epileptics are candidates for delinquency. The epileptics are emotionally unstable, inconsistent in their thoughts and feelings and extremely irritable. Healy who made an extensive study of epileptics in America came to the conclusion that epileptics commit crimes under the effect of hallucinations. He also found that among 1,000 persons who had reverted to crime, 7% were definitely epileptic.

Similarly Psychopathy is also believed to be hereditary. Baur, Fischer and Lenz in their famous book, "Menschliche Erblchkeitslehre" (Human Heredity) have discussed in great detail the evidence in support of the inheritance of psychopathy and other morbid hereditary factors. According to Kehrer (1920), the predisposition to obsessions is akin to schizoid temperament. In a third of the patients subject to such obsessions Kraepelin found that a similar predisposition was present in parents and children. Pilts (1918), Strucker (1914) and F. Meggendorfer (1922) have reported about a number of families in which a taint could be traced for several generations. Various extensive families of criminals and vagabonds have been studied in detail. The case of the Juke family studied by Dugdale (1877) showed that out of about 1200 descendants of one, Max Juke, within 75 years of their family history, New York had 280 paupers, 140 criminals, 60 habitual thieves, 300 prematurely born infants, 7 murderers, 50 prostitutes, 440 persons contaminated by venereal diseases and 30 persons who were prosecuted for other offences. Dugdale calculated that during these 75 years the Juke family cost the American Treasury \$ 1,308,000. Similarly the study of the Kallikak family made by H. H. Goddard showed that among the 480 descendants of one, Martin Kallikak, 143 were feeble-minded, 33 were immoral persons, 24 were confirmed alcoholics, 3 were epileptics, 3 were regular jail-birds and 8 were brothel-keepers. Similar studies have been made of the Zero Family by Poellman, of the Pincy family by Kate, of the Nam family by Davenport, of the tribe of 'Ishmael' by McCulloch, and of the "Smoky pilgrims" by Blackmar. C. Rath (1914), an eminent German criminologist, also studied a number of families and he was able to trace predisposition to crime through several generations. In these families he recorded a case where criminal acts were committed by 296 males and 44 females. This led him to the conclusion that the members of the male sex are more apt to commit crimes than the members of the female sex! However, according to him,

this predisposition to crime can be transmitted just as much through women as through men.

There is evidence to show that feeble-minded persons are predisposed to crime and that feeble-mindedness is hereditary. There is an interesting discussion on the inheritance of feeble-mindedness in the work on Human Genetics by Ruggles Gates. H. H. Goddard (1914) stated that at least 2/3 of the feeble-minded persons were born so. He found that 222 offsprings of 40 marriages in which both the parents were feeble-minded, 220 were definitely feeble-minded and only two were apparently normal. Reiter and Ostheff (1921) made a study of feeble-minded children in the Rostock School for feeble-minded children and found that feeble-minded children had feeble-minded parents. Charles Goring, a British Jail Doctor, made an exhaustive study of some 3,000 English convicts with the assistance of the famous biometrician, Karl Pearson. He came to the conclusion that "the forces of heredity, circumstance and chance" all play a part in determining the fortunes of men. He found a close relationship between defective intelligence, poor physique and crime and hardly any relationship between environmental factors and crime so that he concluded that of all factors leading to crime, the hereditary factors are the most important.

Criminologists have classified psychopaths into a number of categories. Schneider (1923) called the most violent of them "explosive psychopaths". Their feelings find expression only in violent fits of passion which lead to a number of crimes. Schneider also distinguished another type whom he called the "unstable psychopaths". These persons are easily led by others and they do not have a strong will power. They can also be led on to committing crimes. However the most dangerous of the lot are those that are described as the "unfeeling psychopaths". These correspond to the "born criminals" of Lombroso. These persons are incapable of feelings like sympathy and pity. The lives of most of them are passed

in an unceasing round of 'crime and punishment'. Bleuler, another German Criminologist who studied the psychopaths in detail, found that all morbidly unsympathetic persons had the same sort of hereditary taint. A number of crimes are committed by alcoholics and since psychopathic predisposition can produce alcoholism, hereditary predisposition plays its part here also.

Another interesting case of the inheritance of criminal traits is afforded by a study of criminal twins. A German Criminologist, Johann Lange, studied 30 cases of twins who were later called "Lange's Twins". Among the 30 twins, 12 twins were monozygotic, i. e., having absolutely identical hereditary make-up. Lange found that out of these 12 monozygotic twins, the criminal histories of 10 showed parallel development. Their criminal records agreed in their early criminal history, in the age of their first conviction and in the types of offences committed by them.

Darlington (1953), a famous British Geneticist, has discussed the heredity of criminal traits in his book, "The facts of Life." He is of the opinion that there are certain individuals we can well do without and that no environment will make them useful to any form of society. He has therefore suggested three revolutionary methods of reducing the incidence of crime. These three methods are painless extinction, total segregation and the preventing of birth. The painless extinction of persons showing hereditary predisposition towards crime will not be a practical proposition as there will be strong public opinion against it. Segregation and incarceration of a large number of persons disposed to commit crimes will also be equally impractical as the number of jails will have to be increased and the cost would be prohibitive. Darlington has therefore suggested that we must seek the aid of Eugenics and sterilize all such criminals so as to ensure that persons with such criminal traits are not allowed to leave any off-spring. The third method suggested by Darlington would also meet with strong opposition from many quarters and it

may not also be safe to adopt it in the present state of our knowledge about human heredity which is very inadequate. However, Darlington's strong advocacy of these methods is bound to have a far-reaching influence on sociological thinking all over the world. The psychologists and sociologists would not laugh at biological explanations of criminality and the attitude towards at least some of the criminals is bound to change. According to Darlington himself, a shift from Freud to Jung is already discernible in psychological thinking and it has come to be recognised that what is commonly described as the 'unconscious' by the psychologists is something that has a genetic

foundation. His idea is not to belittle the importance of environment and the social and economic factors in producing crime. It is only to show that environment alone is not a satisfactory explanation of criminality and that heredity plays a great part in determining who are predisposed to crime. There are persons with varying degrees of hereditary criminal aptitudes who inherit only these mental qualities but who do not differ from other human beings physically. The task of penology should therefore be to devise scientific methods of treating different types of criminals in different ways so as to suppress the criminal attitudes or at least to divert them into safer channels.

TROPHY FOR THE BEST MAINTAINED POLICE STATION

We have pleasure in announcing the institution of a rolling Trophy this year, to be awarded to the best maintained Police Station in the State. The Trophy, worth about Rs. 1,500/-, has been presented to the Madras Police by Mr. J. A. Borron, First Secretary, (Information), U. K. High Commission, Madras, in his personal capacity. This Trophy, we gather, has been won this year by the Chintadripet Police Station of Madras City, with 92 marks out of a possible 100. Congratulations, Chintadripet. Congratulations, Madras City Police.

We are also informed that the Tirunelveli Bridge Police Station, with 91½ marks, came a close second to the Chintadripet Station in this competition, and is to be awarded a special consolation prize. Very well done, indeed, Tirunelveli. And congratulations, Southern Range.

In judging, the state of upkeep of the buildings, equipment, arms and accoutrement and records and the general smartness and discipline of the men in all stations in the State were taken into account.

Best of luck to self and the celebrations and, of course, the Journal.
Thank you for remembering me in this connection. With best wishes,

—W. A. H. CRESSWELL.

★

.....I have, in common with many others, the most cherished memory of the loyalty of the Police, and I can assure you that whenever two or more of us are assembled together this is commented upon. In fact their loyalty is the finest testimonial that we can offer to one of the services.

Fundamentally, loyalty is an outstanding virtue of the Indian people. This cannot be denied, but by reason of their training and tradition, the police have raised this virtue to a higher level. You may ask how, the answer is simply discipline and *esprit de corps*.

J. A. LUCAS.

★

.....My heartiest greetings and best wishes to the officers and men of the Madras State Police with whom and with whose predecessors I was privileged to spend so many years in happy service. Their record of loyalty, *esprit de corps* and cordial relationship with the public was traditionally of the highest order and it is a matter of great pride that these high standards continue unchanged. I wish you joy on your centenary and sincerely hope that the next 100 years will provide an even prouder record of service and pleasant recollections for those privileged to serve with the Force.

With best of wishes,

—J. R. LE FEVRE,
Retired District Superintendent of Police.

MY EARLY POLICE TRAINING

By

M. SINGARAVELU, I. P. S.,
(Chief Security Officer, Southern Railway)

All is well that ends well: the preparation, the beginning, the apprenticing may be rough, rugged and irksome. But that is the logic of life: light and shade, black and white, the rough and the smooth. The facade of a forbidding appearance may well hide a heart of sincere promise and sympathising camaraderie. It happens ever so many times, and it has happened to me. Here you are.

It was the first day at the Police Training College. I was reporting to the Principal. Strange people, strange premises, everything strange. The first man whom I met there was an efficient-looking man who bore the stamp of office. I greeted him warmly. The prim man discovered my search and pointed to another behind as the Principal. I was crestfallen at the first discomfiture, as I thought it to be. That taught me abundant caution. The man I met first was the Sergeant-Major.

VACATION TRAINING:

The summer vacation interrupted our training. We were six Officers under training. All of us were posted to different districts for our vacation training. I was to understudy the D. S. P. Nellore. He was as queer in his values as he was grand in disposition. The Principal sent for us when the orders of posting were received and asked us to write to our D. S. Ps thus: "My dear so and so, I have been posted to your district. Please advise me of the accommodation available and the kit I have to bring with me." We reassembled at the class room. But I had a dim and distant doubt haunting me. I, therefore, sought counsel with the Principal. "Wouldn't my failure to address a Senior Officer as 'Dear Sir' be misconstrued?" I asked. "My dear, young man", he said, "if you have to address the I. G. to-morrow, as 'Dear Mr. Sayers', you would be the least

improper. You are a Gazetted Officer, and so is he one." We all wrote as advised. All my colleagues received replies by the return of post. I was the solitary exception. It was Easter break. Chance had it that one of my colleagues met the D. S. P. Nellore at the Hotel Connemara. He happened to mention to him that one of his very good colleagues, was to be trained under him. The D. S. P. looked straight and spoke, "You call him a good colleague! A slip of probationer, he has the cheek to address me as Dear Mr. so and so." My friend took pains to convince the D. S. P. that the blame for it was not mine and that it was literally a command performance. Hardly the Easter wore off when I received a cordial letter from him. I have happy memories of my sojourn at Nellore.

Completion of the training at the Police College took me to Masula for practical training. I arrived at Masula ahead of my Motor Cycle, means of transport, which I had booked before I left Madras. I had asked the Inspector to arrange for me a taxi, but the obliging Inspector sent me his own car. I reached the D.S.P.'s bungalow in it. There, on the verandah, I noticed a gentleman with gold-rimmed spectacles on, dressed in a dhoti and shirt, immaculately white, who sat poring over a file. I was in a fix. My brief training in the Police College made me expect him to be in uniform or clad in clothes of western style. It was neither. His dress was too homely to suggest his high office and yet too immaculate to indicate otherwise. I was intent not to waste a greeting without knowing the identity. The ghost of my first day at the Police Training College was still too fresh in my mind. To salute or not to salute, was the problem. I was on the horns of a dilemma. But as if the man in white had seen my embarrassment, he

More Messages.

The years that made most impression and of which I have the happiest memories were those which I spent in the Ongole Sub Division in the Anantapur and Cuddapah districts. I suppose that this is because those were my younger years when I was learning and full of enthusiasm.....I send good wishes to all who remember me, particularly in Anantapur where I spent five years. I like to think of their kindness and of their patience and hospitality and to visualise the trees we planted still flourishing, with the children playing under them...

Peace be upon you all.

—J. BECKETT.

Retired Deputy Inspector-General of Police.

★

.....What a very nice thought to contact retired officers on the occasion of the Madras Police Centenary. I am sure the others must have felt as I did when I read your letters. With all my heart I wish you and the Madras Police the best of good fortune. What a grand service it was, and how many happy years I had serving it.....

—H. G. FURNESS.

Retired District Superintendent of Police.

★

.....Of my thoughts at your Centenary, though our paths parted with 1947, yet do I remember with ever fresh memory the 14 years which I spent amongst you, years which will always count of the finest that I shall ever know. I came to know and admire both your people and your country. As for the Madras Police, may their bicentenary show as great prosperity and example as has been shown in this their first.

—R. R. B. TRUSCOTT,

Retired District Superintendent of Police.

.....My very best wishes for the success of your good venture. I appreciate greatly your thoughtfulness in bringing us old-timers into it....All useful vocations are "calls" and should be looked upon as such by those who follow them. Our profession is our business and we must look to our material remuneration, it is true, but before that we should view it as a "call". "The Police are physicians to cure criminality: missionaries of the gospel of man's duty to his neighbour. Those of us who do not try and behave like good doctors and practical parsons should be treated as patients!" To my older out look, these are perhaps a bit self-assured and trite. But I am sure that some such ideal is essential, however modest in practice our efforts to achieve it—as one discovers only too well. It was a good many years ago too, that I jotted down a thought which remains a part and parcel of my heritage from the best part of 40 years in India—by and large the best part of my life:—"Serve India as a foster-mother, not grudgingly, but with love."

With my best wishes,

— J. S. WILKES,

Retired District Superintendent of Police.

★

If there are any of my old friends under your command, would you please give them my kindest regards and say that I hope all goes well with them and with their families.....

—H. Keene,

Retired District Superintendent of Police.

★

.....What I always cherish most dearly, is the very loyal, cheerful and efficient service which I received, during my 19 years in the Indian Police, from those who served under me, whether in the Vizagapatam Agency, the exalted and rarefied air of the Intelligence Bureau in Delhi, in Malabar or Madura and lastly but chiefly, in the Madras S. B. during the darkest days of the War. I was sorry to leave but I know that those who were going to take our places would be more than up to the tasks. Please convey to the Madras Police my congratulation and best wishes on their centenary.

—W. F. A. HAMMILTON,

Retired District Superintendent of Police.

shouted if I were so and so. I immediately sprang to attention and registered a smart salute. I had a feeling that I had yet to see the end of my trials. Perhaps he thought that I was a type that needed pulling up! He suavely enquired if the transport I came in was mine, and when I told him the circumstances in which I had to use that vehicle, he flushed and warned me against what he thought to be my first act of impropriety. He preferred me to walk or cycle the distance rather than sport a borrowed conveyance. He proceeded and told me that I should accept nothing from any and I should cultivate the virtue of preserving all the purchase vouchers. As if to fortify his precept with his conscious practice, he showed me a sheaf of vouchers on top of which was a recent one for four annas paid for the purchase of a torch bulb. The indictment was enough into the day and was heavy enough. I returned home. There I heard that the D. S. P. Nellore, whom I happened to know, had come for a short stay. I went and met him. He enquired of the progress I was making under the Chief. I told him of the morning's incident. He covered his sympathy under a veneer of good promise. Next day, as usual, I met my D. S. P. and he was still glum and I was wondering if days made little change in him. The surprise packet was there and he asked me brusquely what I had told the D. S. P. on the way. The suddenness had the effect of throwing me off my balance and before I could even piece my torn mind together, he ended the matter with another word of stern advice that what transpired between us should be kept closely guarded.

Training was getting into its stiff stride. Attendance at morning parades was a part of the ceremonial of training. It happened one day my motor cycle at last did arrive. The long journey from Madras to Masula made her active and she was in no mood for immediate work. I wanted to go to the parade ground on it. I practised the known tricks on it to make her take life. It was not before some effort that she started. When she

did start, I was behind the clock for the scheduled parade. Still I went. At a safe distance I noticed the D. S. P. on the parade ground, which gave me the chill. I debated in my mind whether I should at all attend the parade late and get the dressing down before the many or beat a discreet retreat on the plea of indisposition. But the cruel machine was too quick for me; she was almost on the parade ground. I must have been well noticed, and yet made a hasty retreat. I returned home full of prayers that the D. S. P. should forget this incident. I had a bath. Hardly was my body dry when there came the Orderly from the D. S. P. with a D. O. I seemed to know the contents even before I opened it. It certainly contained a stinker, warning me for my failure to attend the parade, with a liberal sprinkling of choice epithets like disgraceful, indisciplined etc.

Now the station charge. Many are the references that go daily to the D. S. P. Again came caution assailed me. Should I mark the papers to the D. S. P. as "To D. S. P." or "To D. S. P., Sir?" The Inspector, who was teaching me the work suggested that "To D. S. P." would not be at all improper. I acted accordingly. During my visit to the D. S. P. later, he asked me if I would lose anything if I marked the papers with "Sir." My answer was pat: "Not in the least. On the other hand, Sir, all the gain would be mine." As if I needed more practical conviction he showed me the papers he had addressed to the D. I. G., who was no senior to him than by a few months, as "D. I. G., Sir." But his successor, a European, had different ideas about it all and he wanted me to drop the "Sir." The same European once ticked off another Dy. S. P. who had come to see him in a bus, because bus rides did not, he felt, go well with the dignity of office. These had their own lessons for me. Until August 1947, I always went to meet the European D. S. Ps in a car, and addressed the papers "to D. S. P.", reserving the more flowery and the impressive to my Indian chiefs.

At last I was put in independent charge of a station. There I used to see a K. D. who came there not unoften to get some money from the Special Reward Fund, promising some useful tips. He spoke Tamil, my mother tongue, and that was an added attraction for me. A burglary case was reported by a pawnbroker, who grew suspicious of a certain character who came to him with a silver vessel. He promised to help us in tracking down the burglar. It was all laid on that I should disguise myself as a Chettiar and go to the village which was 20 miles away from the station. My Inspector should assist me. Thanks to the dhoti and an angavasthiram borrowed from a dhobi, I got into my part and the constable was in mufti. We started off to the village at 12 midnight. The goldsmith was with us. The last lap of two miles we walked. We were led into a dark hut. As expected, the character walked in; but shrewd as he was, he smelled a rat and tried to slip. My constable acted quickly and he slipped a towel over his head, which unfortunately slid down to his neck, leaving him to scream for help. It was dark, we were strangers to the place. The villagers came running in pairs, the men with lathis and the women with lanterns. The crowd frightened the bania, and he, in his convenient discretion, just vanished. The crowd grew menacing, the culprit was shouting. The villagers asked us who we were and the reason for our presence at that hour. My constable proved unequal to the demands of the hour and I had the unpleasant limitation of just a rugged intelligence of the local language. Tactlessness on the one side and helplessness on the other were not at all amusing to me. I wanted to play for time till the Inspector could arrive on the scene. I crossed over and slapped the constable as if for his improper behaviour towards the villagers which had a melodramatic effect and eased the position a little. Slowly the thick gleam of a car's head-lights came into our view. The brighter it grew, the less the crowd became. And at last when the Inspector came out of the car on the scene there were none. The Inspector stuck to his job manfully. The

culprit was the K.D. who was a frequenter of my station. We searched the place and recovered the articles; but the Inspector was not at all happy over the incident because he was not sure of the reactions of the D. S. P. for attracting the mob fury on the probationer. He wanted me not to mention this to the D. S. P. The word was kept.

A pass in the test on the Police Standing Orders is a sacred part of our training. The D. S. P. took personal interest in this. I did the examination at last and I thought that I had done a passing job of it until the results were announced, which left me utterly stunned. A D. O. from the I. G., who was the examiner, to the D. S. P. made him more flushed. Who was responsible, the I. G. asked, for putting wrong ideas into the head of the probationer? It was all because I had said in the paper that I would "tackle" the accused. The D. S. P. in righteous indignation called the Inspector in charge of my training to explain. The result was that the Inspector was immediately transferred and I lost the benefit of his services.

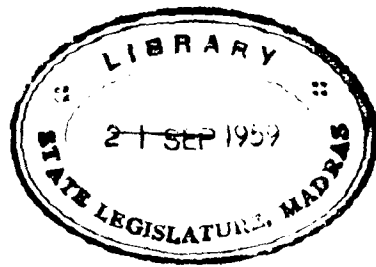
Things did not seem to promise anything. I was growing despondent. I sought advice from home if I could resign. But they advised me to stick it out. And I have nothing to regret. One day, not long after the advice from home, I had a call from the D. S. P. I did not know the why or the wherefor of it, neither could any one enlighten me on it. Everyone was as delightfully ignorant of it as I. I was ushered in. I could not believe myself. The air there was light and free, never before known to me. The Chief was, contrary to my expectations, all smiles. The strangeness of it all struck me and I could hardly believe myself when, for the first time, I was offered a seat and he spoke in kind terms of encouraging affection. "My friend, I tried to break your back all these three months and you have stood it manfully," he said. Never did I feel more light and lithe, never before were words so kindly spoken that touched the roots of affection. In one moment of rare abandon, later, I asked him the reason why I had such a raw start with

him. He confided that my predecessor traded on his lenience and even smoked before him without permission. I wondered why innocent I should have been the scapegoat for the sins of another!

The parting came. I had finished training. He came up to me and said, "Hiss, but do not sting". Words good and true. In my humble way I have since practiced this and it has paid

dividends. This grand man had ever been the envy of his European colleagues. Such was the training I had in the Andhra Desa. I always treasure memories of it. How could I forget the lessons I learnt at the infancy of my career! Andhra was the cradle of my professional career. She is a separate entity and a State now, but that cannot erase the pleasant memories I have had.

Jai Hind



"I should deem it perfectly legitimate that a person who had once been convicted of any act of violence to others under the influence of drink should be placed under a special legal restriction, personal to himself that, if he were afterwards found drunk, he should be liable to a penalty, and that if, when in that state he committed another offence, the punishment to which he would be liable for the other offence should be increased in severity. The making himself drunk, in a person whom drunkenness excites to do harm to others, is a crime against others."

—John Stuart Mill, 'On Liberty'.

HINTS TO YOUNG POLICE OFFICERS (PROSECUTION OF CASES)

By

Justice P. N. RAMASWAMI, I.C.S.

"By all means let us abuse the Police, but let us see what the poor wretches have to do"
—Rudyard Kipling.

The old police were rightly pronounced a failure and they have been replaced by the new police. The old investigating officers were wanting in character. They had no clear ideas on police work and consequently their methods were often times improper. The things which disgraced police work in the past were perjury and torture. The root cause of these was corruption. Their corruption was not entirely due to their poor pay—for the matter of that no increase in pay alone would put down corruption. It was due to their want of character which depended more or less on the milieu from which they were chosen, and their subsequent education, training and experience. Two things are necessary for good police work and they are (1) character, and (2) knowledge of police work. Our new young police officers are not wanting in character. I shall proceed on the assumption—an assumption very well founded—that our young police officers are men of good character. Good character alone cannot help in police work, knowledge of work is more essential.

Knowledge of police work has to be always gained by experience in the midst of such numerous and distracting duties that the result is that bad habits are contracted, which often become persistent to the detriment of any officer's work. Most of the mistakes made are the results of apathy and ignorance. A proper observance of police orders and legal rules will really tend to shorten work and to make it easier of performance. On the other hand a superficial and perfunctory discharge of duty is always bad and results in delay and failure.

The hints about to be given are intended to improve the habits of accuracy, order, method and thoroughness. When such habits have been acquired, officers will find they have ample time at their disposal and it will prevent them from finding their work a drudgery and lessen its dryness, which often discourages them and makes them contented with slipshod ways and unambitious of improvement. Experience and common sense will render them less liable to make mistakes.

A good "bobby" like a poet is born, not made. All may improve themselves and learn to do good and useful work by the help of experience and care, even if not gifted with natural intuition and detective ability.

It is a good rule to look up the Police Codes or the law on any point, even in the very commonest everyday routine, and not trust to memory. Commence at an early stage by making notes on questions that come before you. Learn to think for yourselves and not to rely on your subordinates, who, if you treat them sympathetically, and don't deliberately hunt them, will do good work for you and lighten your own.

The ideals for which a superior officer should strive, to quote Mr. Gayer, are that his force should have complete confidence in him; that he himself should have complete control over the force; and that the public should recognise him as a strong and sympathetic friend and protector.

The confidence which a force places in its superior officers is in direct proportion to the care they devote to its welfare. The main duties of the superior officers towards their force are:—(1) Scrupulous justice in the matter

of promotions and rewards; (2) judicious fairness in the matter of punishment; (3) the careful training of its members; and (4) a just and full appreciation of their work. Their duties to the public are:—(1) Consideration for their needs, and (2) a just and full appreciation of their position as their servant and representative.

It is certainly true that the police in this country receive very little disinterested evidence from the outside public. The reasons for this are numerous. There are factions in villages, there is selfishness in the members of the public, and there is the fact that a great many of our most valuable witnesses cannot really afford the time to give information at once to the police and attend in courts because at present it is difficult to properly remunerate them for doing so. There are many other reasons too, but I will not detail them all.

Added to this unwillingness to assist the police on the part of the majority of the people, there is also the fact that the social etiquette of this country frequently prevents the injured person from complaining to the police or to the Sub Magistrate until he has had time to consult his superior, whether it be a senior member of his family, or, in the case of a tenant, his landlord or the landlord's agent, or, in the case of Christians, the priest or other missionary. This fact of social etiquette is a very important one indeed, and it is astonishing to see how many people are ignorant (or pretend to be ignorant) of it. Yet it is at the root of a great deal of the "delay in making a complaint" about which so much fuss is made on behalf of accused people.

So the police in this country have to face (1) indifference and unwillingness on the part of the majority of the people, and (2) slowness in complaint on the part of those who choose to give information or to lodge complaints. These are some of the reasons which have caused the Police to adopt the weapons of perjury and torture. Now, though the former of these sins and crimes is not tradi-

tional in this country, yet the latter is. And anything which is traditional and which is handed on from generation to generation as something either common or justifiable under certain circumstances is very hard indeed to eradicate from the minds and thoughts of the people.

It is simply because of all the difficulties I have mentioned (besides those which are incidental to police work in every land and in every period) that perjury and torture have been common. Low grade Policemen of the past would have had absolutely no means, as they imagined, of coping with any crime unless they freely resorted to such detestable practices. Without them, they would have felt themselves like men going unarmed into a battle. But the object of all I write to you is merely to entreat you to replace these out of date and abominable methods of police work by care, attention and, above all, knowledge.

It is knowledge above all that you need for your police work. You must know how policemen work in other countries, you must know how the police officers of this country have worked in the past, for there have been great detectives all over India who could not read or write, and you must know how criminals work and what are the motives which drive them to crime.

When you remember that I am writing to you to show you how to do away with such crying evils which have blighted police methods in India, you will see that no pains could be too great, no detail too trivial, no attention too scrupulous in working for such a great object.

To hear people speak of the police one would think police work must necessarily be the most degraded of all occupations and that it is, at this moment, the most degraded of all occupations to which an educated man could devote himself in India. Nothing could be more false than this. The police are necessary for performing the very first functions of civilized Government, which are to free the roads from

highwaymen, to break up bands of professional robbers and house-breakers, and to leave the common, labouring people of the country free to go to their fields and their markets, their fairs and festivals, their marriages and pilgrimages and their trade and industry: in a word, to leave them free to go about their daily avocations with a sense of security and confidence that they will have the possibility of reaping the fruits of their labours.

This is the first duty of any Government. Everything else follows after that; and the dignity of Police work comes from the fact that it is intended to further the first and principal object for which all Governments exist in any part of the world, civilised or uncivilised.

Now let me go on to my hints so that the young police officers may know what they have to do in the prosecution of cases.

It is most important to know how to put up a case before a Court. On receipt of a complaint, the complainant is examined. This examination should not be mere empty form. A careful examination will often show the slight foundation on which the charge rests. If the complainant or witness improves his story, contradicts a former statement or makes an obvious mis-statement, do not summarily reject his whole evidence. Consider if the contradictions are only in respect of petty details or affect the whole tenor of his evidence and also if there is any good independent corroboration on material points of the other portions of his evidence and also if there are any special reasons for considering any portion to distinguish between the results of ignorance, ordinary exaggeration and wilful mis-statement. Remember you have no easy task before you in this matter. You have in fact often to dive in wells of perjury for truth.

Note carefully before putting in a charge-sheet:—

1. The reason for delay, if any, in making the complaint.
2. The reason for the omission of names of the accused in the complaint.

3. The reason for any abandonment of witnesses named at the outset.

4. The reason for any omission in the first list of stolen property. (See that you have a full and clear explanation of these facts given to the Court, for they are points which make the Courts suspect a case.)

5. Be very careful about distances and dates. Work should be done quickly but not hastily. Remember that "Villagers are notoriously vague and seldom speak of date by the calendar" (Cecil Walsh).

Never charge a case until the chain of evidence is complete. When examining a witness remember there is difference between merely saying that a thing was done, and saying he had seen it done.

The guilt of each accused has to be proved. In a case with several accused some are charged against whom there is not a particle of evidence, owing to the evidence not being properly analysed, and this reduces the percentage of persons convicted to those arrested.

Examine all evidence with suspicion and caution, but be careful to make due allowance for the defects of human nature.

Do not be impatient with a witness. A perfectly sincere and honest witness is often ruined by impatience. He is often confused through ignorance and nervousness, but with careful handling and quiet observation, you will soon learn to fathom him. Consider the habits and modes of thought of the people and winnow out the truth from among the assumptions and exaggerations which disfigure all evidence among people ignorant, illiterate and untrained to distinguish between hearsay and direct observation. "Do not overlook the personal equation of a witness."

Do not blame the magistrates unnecessarily if they discharge or acquit your cases. Remember they have to administer the law, and unless you satisfy the law you cannot satisfy them,

and if they are not careful in seeing that the law is satisfied, they are likely to get into trouble.

Read the section under which you charge an accused and see that every clause and word have been established by the evidence. This hint is particularly necessary in cases of abetment and rioting. In important cases, or when influential persons are interested, or party feeling runs high, success is not an easy task. Money is freely spent, witnesses are tampered with and villagers often combine to prevent cases being detected, especially if there is any sympathy for the accused on account of his position and several other causes. False cases are frequently not regarded as wrongful acts, but as legitimate and suitable weapons of offence or defence. Most cases, however false and exaggerated, have some sub-stratum of truth. Your work will depend in a great measure on your patience, sympathy with your subordinates in their work, promptitude, ambition and powers of observation. Above all, do not be in a hurry to form an opinion on insufficient data. This is a very common error and clogs your mind. Do not let the attitude of your mind be one of unreasonable or indiscriminate doubt and scepticism, but simply use a little common sense and salutary caution where estimating evidence. Do not be influenced by the number of witnesses. Your case must stand or fall upon evidence of actual facts and not upon a speculative view of probabilities. Many cases are simple and perfectly obvious, but many and manifold are the traps and difficulties that beset a Bobby, and they crop up most unexpectedly. Nevertheless, be not alarmed if the foundation of your case is good. Fear nothing. Above all, do not permit astonishment or satisfaction at your own cleverness in discovering a plausible theory, excellently accounting for several of the facts of a case, to blind you to the possibility of some more complete and perhaps simpler explanation. Many a case has been ruined by this and many a worthy subordinate disgusted, disheartened and even ruined by it.

I do not want to write too long an article. So I will give you one more golden rule.

Learn to know when you have proved your case. That is a point where the old-fashioned station-house officer broke down, and some others above that grade failed frequently, again. It stands to reason that one true witness is better than five false ones whose falsity leaks out in every direction. Yet because they did not know when a case was proved, many an old S. H. O. would wind up his cases with a little string of witnesses who simply oozed lies at every pore! This inveterate practice of trying to improve a case by a false witness is called "police-padding" (Sir C. Walsh). This arose in part from the weakness of some Sub Magistrates (fortunately now rare) for having an eye-witness for every stage in the case. The use of their powers of reasoning was a painful labour to them, so they wished for a witness for every stage. And such is poor human nature that they got what they wished for. All this is very demoralizing and very unnecessary. Avoid it, friend, and show that you are worth the trouble of training!

I can tell you one thing. You are not likely to be very successful in your cases so long as it is possible for any one with some practice in criminal work to say, as he reads the charge-sheet, something of this kind. "Three eye-witnesses? H'm! They are the complainant's two brothers and cousin. Two men who saw the accused going to the spot? Yes, of course, the complainant's brothers-in-law. A toddy-shop-keeper who overheard the preparations for the crime? Naturally, the cousin of the man who has the toddy-shop in the village where the Police station is situated! A man who saw the accused coming away? He owes the Reddi twenty rupees".

I want your charge-sheets to be lists of the people who really do know about the offence, not genealogical trees of the families of the different complainants! You must have enough backbone to brush aside the evidence of people who insist on being witnesses merely because they are closely related to the complainant. It is hard to exclude them, especially when a crime has been committed, the offenders are

known and the *latent sense of equity* of the sufferers and the villagers makes them revolt against the idea that the offenders should be allowed to escape from mere absence of direct evidence. As I have said above, all this family evidence is often quite unnecessary and is brought in either because the police do not know when they have proved their case, or because they do know the limited powers of deduction of the trial magistrates and their great eagerness to acquit if there is anything like a break in the chain of evidence! Now the whole object of your training is to remove the necessity for perjury, torture and "sharp practice" generally, and the more careful and industrious and competent you are, the less you will feel the temptation to improve upon Nature and add "finishing touches" to your investigations and to your cases. Avoid time-honoured paddings. "To ease himself" is a very favourite pretext introduced by Policemen to explain witness's otherwise inexplicable presence in the most unexpected places at equally unexpected but convenient moments and to account for their chance meetings with important witnesses and for their fortuitous opportunities for seeing things about which they would otherwise know nothing. Similarly, eye-witnesses to brutal murders at night are made to say that they woke up because they wanted "to make water", instead of what really happens, namely, that they were aroused by some untranslatable but potent disturbance around them. The subordinate Police seems to have a settled conviction that a murderer's movement at night will not disturb and arouse sleepers—contrary to all our psychic and psychological experiences—and so this demand of nature synchronises with the murderous assault with the regularity of an aperient!

Plans could be very usefully employed, not merely for the purpose of proving a case before the court but also for the purpose of your investigation. I can illustrate what I mean. Suppose you go to the scene of some murder and you make two plans (which will generally be required) one, a large scale plan of the actual scene of the offence and the other, a plan

showing the scene of offence and its environments. These can be prepared roughly and quickly and can be afterwards drawn out neatly. In the second plan, namely, the plan of the scene of offence and its environments, you should always mark, if possible, the houses of the persons whom you are going to call as witnesses. Then you will notice how many houses intervene (in a great many cases) between the house of a particular witness and the house where the murder or other offence was committed.

And then you will understand what an awkward position you will be in if you are not able to satisfy the Court, not merely by your own evidence but by independent evidence of the exact reasons why the next door neighbours have not been cited. Very often there are good and satisfactory reasons for this. But it often happens that, for want of proper precautions, a policeman is totally unable to prove why he did not cite somebody (whom one would expect to find as a witness in the case) although he has perfectly good reasons for not calling him. Where persons are roused by a cry in a particular house you must make careful enquiries in all cases in which the very next door neighbours do not come forward or are not mentioned as witnesses; and you must be able to prove, even if it involves making a special plan, why the persons who are the *natural* witnesses in a case either know nothing about it or cannot be believed. I assure you, it will not do for you to simply say, "This man is a neighbour, but yet for certain reasons knows nothing about the case", or, "I don't call that man because he will not give evidence". If your statement is unsupported by a scrap of evidence, oral or documentary, why should the Court believe you? You know it is bound to give the benefit of the doubt to the accused. And you know that it is a rule of evidence that, where any party refrains from calling those witnesses who are the proper persons to prove a particular fact, it must be presumed that the witnesses will depose in a contrary manner and that the fact sought to be proved is not to be believed.

Now what I have said is particularly applicable to (1) eye-witnesses and (2) witnesses who are named in the very first report or complaint. I advise you to be most careful how you leave those people out when conducting the prosecution. In fact, my own opinion is that in writing out your charge-sheet you should give the names of witnesses by whom you intend to prove your case and at the end you should also give the names of witnesses whom you have discovered to be eye-witnesses, but whom you are not going to examine, because (for reasons which you should state in full) their evidence cannot be believed. You should give their names and full addresses just as you do in the case of witnesses whom you desire to have summoned so that the Court can settle for itself whether or not it wishes to summon these others as Court witnesses. In this way, you will always be perfectly free from suspicion of having suppressed material witnesses, and that suspicion, I do assure you, is a very fatal one to any case in which it may arise.

If you look at the charge framed by a Magistrate or a Sessions Court you will see that it runs as follows:—

"I charge you X, Y, Z, that you, on or about such a day, of such a month, at or near such a place, did such and such things and thereby committed such and such offence or offences",

and you must therefore expect that the defendant will try to prove (1) that no crime was committed at all, (2) that if the crime was committed, it was committed at a different time or at a different place, (3) that the crime amounted to some other offence than what has been set down in the charge or (4) that the person charged is not the person guilty. You never know what line the defence will take and therefore you must always be ready with evidence to prove your whole case and not expect the defence to be so obliging as to admit either the fact of the occurrence or the place of the occurrence. If policemen will only remember this, they will save themselves a great deal of disappointment and a great many unpleasant remarks from courts of justice.

One has to remember of course that it is necessary to see that your witnesses are examined as soon as possible after you have "shown your whole hand", to borrow an expression from the card-table, or they will be subjected to all the cajolery, intimidation, entreaty and bribery which are brought to bear on witnesses in important cases. But the advantages of straightforward dealing are very great. It takes half the sting out of the defence cross-examination. So long as mystery veils the police enquiry the defence can suggest that it is discreditable mystery, veiling disgraceful, high-handed, unlawful, etc. proceedings! And the Court, which has to be "the counsel for the prisoner", as the glorious English proverb puts it—meaning that the Court has to watch over the prisoner's rights as if it were a *vakil* for the defence—the Court, I say, has to be satisfied (1) that all was done that should have been done; (2) that nothing was done that ought not to have been done; or (in six words) *no suspicious omissions, no indefensible procedure*. When one hears the extraordinary suggestions thrown out against the police by many a modern disciple of Sergeant Buzfuz, one is irresistibly reminded of Prince Hal's words to Falstaff, "Mark how a plain tale shall put you down." And if only the "plain tale" be told before a single witness is called other than the investigating officer, it is the best possible thing in the interests of justice. Whenever it is possible, friend, show beforehand that the property discovered cannot have been foisted on the man, nor secreted by the police in the locality, on whom or in which you are going to prove it was found. Prove beforehand that the witnesses are not suborned, tutored perjurers, chosen because they are especial friends of the complainant, especial enemies of the accused or especially amenable to police influence, but that they are the natural, inevitable witnesses and therefore worthy of credence. Explain to the Court beforehand the weather, the light, the time of day or night, the position (where it is relevant) of the moon or stars and the relative position of eye-witnesses. Tell the Court beforehand

the exact relative positions and distances of the various villages, the various houses, the various places that will be spoken of by the witnesses to the prosecution, and be prepared to give the positions of those that could be spoken of by the defence. Do not prove questions of locality by verbal evidence alone. Understand your own case, make the court thoroughly understand it, and the prisoner will have a much quicker and much fairer trial and, if you get a conviction, it will be a subject of legitimate triumph, not something that should make you secretly blush. An honest and efficient investigation will enable you to meet many of the absurd arguments which are now successful in securing the acquittal of really guilty people.

For instance, a witness says perfectly truly that he remembers the date of a crime, or the day before or after. Then the defence pleader gets up and proves that the man cannot remember the date of some more recent event, and perhaps the Court disbelieves the witness on that account. How silly all that is! The man remembered the more remote date because, just before it or just after it, or on that date, there occurred a crime which formed the subject of conversation at every market and at every village tea shop for weeks and weeks afterwards. The later date, which he is called on to remember, had nothing particular to mark it. *Is it at all strange that he should remember the one and not remember the other?*

Another most misleading argument is that the prosecution witnesses have not come forward with their information at the first opportunity. This proves nothing at all. It is not the fact that people are ready to come forward with information which would not benefit them pecuniarily, which would involve their constant attendance at Courts and also, perhaps, their having to tramp over the country to identify persons or property and which is very likely to expose them and their relations to the vengeance of the accused persons or their friends, especially if they have been emboldened by the acquittal of the accused.

Another absurd argument is to speak as if one or the other of two witnesses must be lying if they contradict each other in unimportant or even in important particulars. If you study Adam's "Criminal Investigation" or G. F. Arnold's "Psychology applied to Legal Evidence" and Dwight McCarty's "Psychology for Lawyers" (New York), you will see how witnesses can make extraordinary mistakes even when they have the sincerest intention of telling nothing but the exact truth.

Beware that you do not fall into the fault of seizing upon small and unimportant discrepancies. Experience teaches us that there are few who can tell the same story twice in precisely the same way, but they will add or omit something and even vary in the description of minute particulars. Indeed a verbatim recital of the same tale by a witness is usually taken as proof that he is repeating a lesson rather than narrating the fact seen. A discrepancy to be of any value in discrediting a witness must be in some particular which according to common experience a man is not likely to have observed so slightly as that he would give two different descriptions of it.

Then again, in cases of identity, the defence often asks, "How is it possible for the witness to remember the face and general appearance of the accused?" In hundreds of cases the real question is, "How would it be possible for the witnesses to recollect the face and general appearance of the accused?" Everything eventually depends on the veracity of the witness. Test that veracity in every possible way you can. But where it is proved that a crime has been committed and that actual wounds have been inflicted on the witness or that he or she has had a hand-to-hand struggle with an assailant who is making an attempt against their life or their property or their honour, how would it be possible for that man or that woman to forget the face of their assailant or their assailants till weeks, or perhaps, months, or even years had elapsed?

Another fatuous question often put concerning identification of things not singular or rare

but one of a multitude of other things in most respects like it, e.g., clothing, jewellery etc., is how the owner can identify such articles. It is forgotten that small, even nice, points of difference distinguishing one thing from others of the same kind may merely by the frequent sight of them and without any special attention to them, make an impression on the mind. They are component parts of the thing and go to make up the whole of which the mind receives an impression. In these the impression is the general appearance of a thing. This sort of impression is exceedingly common. A workman has it of his tools, and most people have it of their dress, jewellery and other things they are frequently seeing, handling or using. It occurs every day that by remembrance of their general appearance, a carpenter, mason or other workman recognises his tools, and dress, jewellery or other property is known again by its owner. Undoubtedly animals and things may be identified by those familiar with them. Observation teaches that such identification may be safely relied upon. But at the same time a witness would not be able to formulate his reasons for the identification since it is based upon general untranslatable impressions on the mind. I may readily recognise my trousers or my cow, my wife's addigai and my friend's handwriting in the midst of a multitude of other things in most respects like them, but if questioned, I would not be able to formulate any cogent or intelligent reason for the identification. It would be fatuous to discredit such identifications on the ground that reasons are not being formulated for them.

If you can prove that the eye-sight of the witnesses and the light available were such as to permit of their observing an assailant who was at arms length, or less than arm's length away from them, then I do not think it matters even if the defence should be able to prove that the witnesses did catch sight of the accused person when he was being taken in police custody to an identification parade. Everything must depend on the circumstances of a particular case, and where it can be shown that the witness has no enmity against the persons

whom he or she accuses, I think there must be some flaw in the method of arguing the case if the prosecution does not result in a conviction.

You can prevent a great deal of untrue defence being raised by taking proper care in the conduct of your investigation. Do make a plan of every house you search so as to show exactly where property was found. Do be careful to exactly describe every object that is found, and see that the exact description is entered in the search-list; otherwise, if the trial does not come on for some time, the witnesses who were present at the search may possibly have a difficulty in identifying the property when it is shown to them in Court if it is not their own property but only that of the complainant in the case. An exact description can be given in the search-list even by persons who do not know a word of English. So ignorance of English is not at all an excuse for putting down an imperfect or incorrect description of the property in the search-list. Suppose a necklace made of sovereigns or of French Napoleons has been found in a search. Is a knowledge of English necessary for recording its exact weight and the number of coins, and then on examination, it proves that it originally had more coins on it than it now has and these coins have been removed from it very recently?

You must remember that the value of any object as a piece of evidence has nothing to do with its saleable value in the market. You must take as great care that objects which have only value as pieces of evidence are packed up as carefully as if they were gold or diamonds. What is the saleable value of half a horn button? Nothing at all. Yet, in an English case, half of a horn button led to the detection of a most serious crime. Take pains, friend, take pains, and your trouble will be rewarded sooner or later. In the old days many Station House Officers, without a knowledge of English and without the opportunity (which such a knowledge gives you) of comparing Police methods in many countries, have rendered most valuable services to the Government and to the public at large. If you will only be humble and never

miss an opportunity of making yourself more efficient, you too may perhaps do as good work as some of those untaught geniuses.

I don't want you to think that everything you do is to be done with the sole idea, "What will the Court think of this or that?" But I do wish you to remember that Police work in this country is regarded with a jealous eye, that there are hundreds of people whose curry and rice depends on maintaining the idea that a case conducted by the police must necessarily be a tissue of falsehoods and concoctions, and that the testimony of a Policeman should be deemed to be untrue and should not be accepted unless it is corroborated in material particulars as in the case of an accomplice or approver; and I do seriously advise you that in all cases which are eventually to come before a Court, whether large or small, you should so conduct your investigation as to have nothing to conceal, nothing to extenuate, nothing which is to be "explained away".

Never, never go in for concoction—though the object may even be beneficent like the booking of old offenders. They bring down your reputation and a magistrate once bitten is twice shy. He will start disbelieving your true cases even. The average security proceedings under 109 Cr. P. C. has done incalculable harm. This has come to assume almost a type-design form, viz., a dark night, an unlikely policeman patrolling, the C. P. being in the shadows, bolting on sighting the police, chasing by a policeman (unlikely by reason of excessive avoirdupois), preceded by a person who not unoften happens to be a Police hanger-on like jutka-wallah and capture by Policeman closing up, questioning, C. P. giving different names and different places of habitat and discovery on his person of a bunch of keys, a pen-knife, a match box or even a torch-light. Can you wonder that a Magistrate regaled with such stock fairy-tales becomes shy of police evidence until he reconciles himself as most often they do to the inevitable that the end justifies the means!

Very often cases are finally decided by what an experienced Sessions Judge once called con-

verging probabilities: that is, by a number of small facts each one of which would not be enough to secure a conviction but each one of which goes to show that it was the accused before the court who committed the offence and no one else. These different probabilities converge and all point towards the accused.

In a word, in this connection, I wish to impress upon you that with all the ingenuity, all the intelligence and all the foresight which your work requires in circumventing and unravelling and laying bare the wiles and stratagems of men who have become versed in crime (or whom desperate necessity has forced to extraordinary precautions and astonishing efforts of intellect and patience), with all this forethought and with all what I must (for want of a better word) call your cunning, you should preserve an essential straightforwardness. Never resort to a trick when plain dealing will answer your purpose. Do not try to be too clever. You will find over and over again, that simple plain dealing will circumvent the most ingenious stratagems. At the same time there are occasions when you have to be bold and resolute, when you have to risk your further reputation and livelihood on the success or failure or some particular undertaking. When such an occasion arises you will be all the better fitted for dealing with the situation if, in your ordinary work, you are straightforward, simple and averse to subterfuge. Above everything, do not let yourself be robbed of your usefulness as a public servant by silly envy or jealousy. If you join the Railway Police, be ready and willing to work heartily with the District Police and to give them their full share of credit for any success which your joint work may meet with. If you belong to the mofussil Police do not be jealous of the C. I. D., and if your aptitude for work and fortune aiding your efforts together bring you into the ranks of the C. I. D., do not regard, and do not speak of the mofussil Policeman of all grades as if they were unintelligent country bumpkins. Never be too proud to learn, never be too lofty to teach; and you may be sure that even if you start on

your career with only a moderate equipment of brains and intelligence, you will nevertheless be able to prove yourself a useful servant of the public and trustworthy protector of honest men who wish to go about their work unharmed and harming nobody.

It is not to be expected that you would be successful in every case that you handle. That has never been possible in any country, and in Southern India, at any rate, there are three causes which make great many cases break down, viz., the complainant, the witnesses and the law.

However quick the Police may be in getting to the spot, it is not an uncommon occurrence to find that the innocent villagers, the harmless rustics, the country bumpkins have already got a complete and a totally false theory of the case ready (before the Police can come to the spot) with all the witnesses necessary for proving this mendacious account of what has happened. I am not speaking merely of cases which are concoctions from the beginning to the end. This preparation of a totally false version of the manner, the methods and the reasons for the particular crime shows that some villagers who go to the Civil Court acquire there a real genius for improvised mendacity. In such cases the unfortunate Policeman who is called in and who intends to investigate the case perfectly, honestly, impartially and to the very best of his ability, finds that everybody, from the complainant downwards, has been so thoroughly instructed in the false version of the case that it is almost impossible to get to the truth of what has happened.

I think that in such cases the only cure is to take time; and I would sincerely advise you to be extremely open and outspoken when you report a crime to a Magistrate, and to be as careful to mention the facts which go to prove that a particular accused person is innocent as honestly and as definitely as those which tend to show that he is guilty. Of course, in difficult cases like these, you will have the help and guidance and the orders of your departmental

superiors, and I can only say that you will do well not to hurry the case and not to put in a charge-sheet against any one until you are perfectly certain that the particular individual is really concerned in the crime you are investigating. In other cases, how difficult is the situation of the ordinary complainant! He has lost perhaps the saving of a life-time and of his father's life-time too. He has lost the jewels which he has been accustomed to see on the necks and on the arms of his wife and children. He is far more anxious to recover his property than to give any information to the authorities which will enable them to get particular people convicted. At the same time, he has reasons to suspect everybody. One man has opposed him in a civil suit. Perhaps that man, he thinks, had a hand in this theft. Another neighbour has been sued criminally for maintenance by his wife, and the unfortunate victim of the theft remembers that he had to give evidence on the wife's behalf (not because he knew anything about the matter but because his own wife's second cousin's sister-in-law's husband's niece is the first cousin of the other man's wife) and so there is another man whom he has some reason to suspect.

Can it be a wonder, then, that in his distress at the loss of his property and in his uncertainty as to which of his enemies has brought this crushing disaster upon him, the poor fellow tries to make things certain by saying that he saw, where he only suspected, and by saying that he knows, when he only has some reason to think. Add to this a very hazy notion of time and a very vague idea of distance and you find the reason for all the extraordinary mistakes and the discrepancies which appear in his case.

It is a melancholy reflection that a number of criminals get off because complainants and witnesses, even when they are quite well-meaning, will often only tell the truth as a last resort instead of coming out with it in the first instance. They are not sure how the exact truth may affect their case and so they suppress just those facts which a police officer needs to

help him to come to the right conclusion and they only let out what really happened perhaps a fortnight after the case has been registered. I do not, of course, say that this always happens but I say it happens so often as to be a serious hindrance to your work as Policeman.

Justice Khosla, I. C. S., in "Our Judicial System" points out to some other difficulties. "In fairness to the Police, I must point out that they suffer under many handicaps and the difficulties in their way are many and great. Their past activities undertaken at the behest of an alien Government have made them lose the confidence of the public. They find it difficult to get any help from the law-abiding citizen. A true case may fail for lack of sufficient evidence or because the judge regards every act of a police officer with an eye of suspicion or because the judge is merely stupid or dishonest. Sometimes an important or influential individual is tempted to transgress the law and finds himself in the clutches of the police. His friends move heaven and earth to get him free and do not hesitate to intimidate, harass or victimise the police officer who was doing no more than his duty. The complainant in a case may insist on falsely implicating his enemies, despite police advice to the contrary. Such a case is doomed to fail and bring unmerited odium to the police. It cannot also be denied that the failure of justice is due partly to the belief prevalent among the members of the public that magistrates and judges attach altogether too much importance to the contents of the first information report. This is a subject on which much can be said, but I may observe in passing that a more intelligent approach to this question must be made and trial judges should use a little more imagination and discretion in accepting the letter of the first information report as the complete and unalterable charter of the case before them. A false F. I. R. does not mean necessarily a false case". The First Information Report becomes in their hands the Fictitious Important Report—an encyclopaedia and a summation of the case instead

of what it ought to be, the starting point of a case. It is all really pathetic!

Then come the witnesses. There is an inveterate habit among witnesses, especially among the ignorant, of always answering under the pressure of cross-examination with the greatest minuteness as to details, which they probably never observed or would certainly have forgotten. Those witnesses, whose evidence in the main is truthful, make statements of the above sort either to show the accuracy of their memory or to strengthen the belief that they are talking of things which they really saw. Therefore, whenever more witnesses than one are examined to prove the same fact, there would naturally be created a lot of discrepancies in their answers to questions put to them in the cross-examination. These discrepancies are invariably made much of by the opposite party who tries to create thereby a belief in the mind of the court that the whole testimony of the witnesses is absolutely unworthy of credit. Often inexperienced magistrates are misled by the so-called contradictions and the result is that the interests of public justice suffer. Of course, experienced judges attribute little or no weight to this kind of variations which are regarded by them to be too infinitesimal to affect the materiality of the subject-matter of the case. It does, however, seem to be desirable on the part of the Police Officer conducting the prosecution in a case to warn beforehand ignorant witnesses of his side of the folly of their lying even about petty things and to tell them that if they had failed to observe a thing or having seen had forgotten, they could freely say the same to the court without fear of their veracity being in any way doubted on this score.

This kind of testimony is due to various causes. First and foremost is the fallibility of human memory. Everyday's experience must bring home the conviction to us of the insecurity of reliance on mere recollection. How frail and fallible is the thing called memory! Secondly, it may be due to differences in the observing powers, resulting from differences in the natural

qualities and intellectual culture of the observers. We must take into account the natural disposition and characteristics of the witness: his environment, his idiosyncrasies, his opinions, etc. which are of just as great importance. Many persons even in the gravest emergencies allow themselves to be influenced more or less by their religious, political or social standing, by considerations of family or profession, perhaps even of club or society, and that without the slightest intention of departing from the truth. There are many details which they wish to neither see nor hear, or they see and hear them otherwise than the actual happening so that a witness who would naturally be for the prosecution becomes one for the defence and *vice versa*. Thirdly, it is not uncommon to find a witness believing after a time that he has seen things he has heard frequently spoken about, but it is seldom that the different stages of the formation of a belief can be traced clearly. To convince oneself of this fact one has only to note how easily emotional persons can be made to relate occurrences which they have never seen or heard and that without any recourse to suggestion. In spite of their earnest desire to stick to the truth, they strike off to the right and left and at last can no longer distinguish between what they have really seen and what they have only imagined. Fourthly, the accuracy of the testimony may be affected by circumstances affecting the accuracy of observation: viz., excitement of mind caused by fear, previous knowledge or ignorance of the objects observed, anxiety about the object, self-interest, natural bias and mental prepossession, habit, intoxication and the physical health and capacity of the witness. (Hans Gross)

"It also constantly happens that for one reason or another witnesses take it into their heads that we want to make them responsible for the crime. It may be that they are afraid of being suspected of being themselves perpetrators or that they are conscious of negligence which may have facilitated the perpetration or that they may be considered as abettors or accessories of the accused. In all these cases

and in a hundred such, the witnesses will, despite their best intention to speak the truth, fashion it in the way apparently most useful to themselves. They will rely on certain details, they will slur over others, they will arrange the various incidents in a new manner, and their deposition if examined attentively will reveal a group of frightened people, always imagining themselves suspected..." (J. C. Adam).

Another reason for inaccurate evidence is lack of education and commonsense. A witness comes up on behalf of the accused or it may be of the prosecutor. He is first examined by the *vakil* for his own side. He knows that this *vakil* will ask him no embarrassing questions and answers everything without hesitation. In fact, he probably says a great deal more than he really knows. When the other *vakil* gets up, he knows that he is retained in the opposite side and his questions may therefore be dangerous. Accordingly, he thinks the best thing to do is to answer every question in the negative and is not deterred even when the answer is palpably an untruth. He soon gets into difficulties and then he has to admit that he has been giving false answers. This of course, throws suspicion upon the whole of his previous evidence, the principal part of which may have been true.

The idea of a witness of the uneducated class of inhabitants seems to be that he must help the Judge to convict or acquit the prisoner as the case may be. "This or that is what really happened", he thinks, "but if I don't tell the Judge he will never find it out." Therefore, even in cases which are substantially true, there is generally a certain amount of concocted evidence. This evidence breaks down and is proved to be false and the result very often is that a true case gets let off. The duty of a Judge or a Magistrate is, generally speaking, not so much to decide which story is the true one but to separate the falsehood and the truth on both sides and, having eliminated the former, to decide upon the case. Holloway, J., for many years a distinguished Judge of the Madras

High Court, frequently remarked in his Judgments that the legal maxim, "*Falsus in uno falsus in omnibus*" did not always apply. (Gribble, "Outlines of Medical Jurisprudence in India," Chap. II, page 28.)

"It is also probable," to quote Sir Michael O'Dwyer, I. C. S., that the rural masses are at their best in their villages and fields and at their worst in the law Courts; for they are then endeavouring to circumvent often by fraud or false evidence the various obstacles in the shape of legal formalities which to their minds have been placed between them and justice. When an Indian rustic comes into the atmosphere of the Court, he has his mind made up to swear to anything that he thinks will suit his purpose and it is no light task to get the truth out of him. But the same man in the village *chawk* or square or under the village tree among his own people will hesitate to lie even in good cause. This is why peripatetic justice is so much more speedy and satisfactory." No doubt these remarks are exaggerations but it is undoubted that the vitiated atmosphere of a Criminal Court does have a deleterious influence on the clientele.

Tampering with witnesses and setting up false alibis are major pastimes of our accused and their relatives and friends. Be on your guard against both. The former is done by bribery, intimidation, cajolery, playing upon the good-naturedness of our people, caste feelings, etc. Sometimes, a little artistry is also employed. The won-over prosecution witnesses under pre-concerted arrangement will support the prosecution story in the examination-in-chief and oblige the accused with untruthful answers in the cross-examination. In such cases, after the cross-examination, get him declared a hostile witness and mercilessly cross-examine him and expose his untruthfulness and, in proper cases, move for his being dealt with for perjury. It will teach a proper lesson for like-minded perjurers. In regard to false alibis and their exposure, I have given an account of them in Vol. II of my book, "Magisterial and Police Guide." (Page 1606 et seq.)

Then finally we come to the law which in the immortal language of Mr. Bumble is an Ass. Mr. Pendrel Moon, I. C. S., one of the brilliant European civilians serving in India in recent years and employed now as adviser to the Planning Commission, in his "Strangers in India" narrates in the form of an imaginary conversation between a newly arrived barrister English High Court Judge and a European Joint Magistrate, Greenlane, the perjuries which have to be committed by policemen, on account of the law.

"You know, if people in England became aware of what go on in our Criminal Courts out here," said the High Court Judge, "they would be absolutely shocked. As a matter of fact they simply would not believe half of what you told them. The corruption and unscrupulousness of the police is staggering. I believe there are even some English Police Officers who always keep handy a supply of human blood so that blood-stained garments can be made available when required."

"I don't think, Sir, you should be too hard on the Police", said Greenlane. "Often they are not to blame for false evidence and false cases. They simply bring before the Court the story told by the complainant and his witnesses. If it is false, it is not the fault of the Police."

"They ought not to prosecute when the story is false," declared the Judge.

"Sometimes they are not quite certain that the story is false. Sometimes they are afraid that if they don't prosecute they will get into trouble. Suppose for instance there is a murder and the story told by the deceased's relatives is all wrong. If the local Sub Inspector of Police does not accept their story and prosecute the alleged murderer, they may complain against him and say he has been bribed. Generally, much the safest course for him is just to pass the baby to the magistrate and let the magistrate make what he can of the evidence. Of course I admit that quite often the police themselves manufacture false evidence to strengthen

a case, but the temptation to do so is very strong," replied Greenlane.

"They ought to resist that temptation", said the Judge. "It is not for the police to decide that a man is guilty. That is for you and me. Their business is simply to collect and put before us the available evidence and not to try to fill up what they think to be gaps."

"I fancy that if you were a Police Sub Inspector, responsible for peace and order and the control of crime in a rural police station", went on Greenlane, "you would see things in rather a different light. After all the general public consider it the business of the police to catch the criminals. It is not much good the Sub Inspector catching them if the Magistrate lets them out the next day because of the weakness of the evidence. The public won't think much of him nor will his superior officers. They judge him by results. It is upto him by skilful investigation to get the requisite evidence, not just to take the easy course of concocting it".

"But our law of evidence and the rulings of various High Courts make his task so impossible and difficult. I know that there are a few silly rulings but I intend to have them revised and corrected", remarked the Judge. "I am fully alive to the difficulties of the police and want to do what I can to help them. But monkeying with the evidence is quite intolerable. It has got to stop."

Greenlane: "Take a simple, little example. There is a burglary in a village. The thieves make a hole in the mud wall of a peasant's house and carry off clothes and ornaments. The police get on to the tracks of one of the culprits who has temporarily hidden his share of the loot under some bushes in a piece of waste land. After some interrogation, to use a police term, the culprit offers to produce the stolen property. He takes the police to the bit of waste land and the property is duly recovered from under the bushes. But if the police tell this story in Court, the case is bound to fail. It will be held, on the strength of so many High Court rulings, that as the property was recovered

from an accessible place, not in the exclusive possession of the accused, he cannot be presumed to be the thief or the receiver of stolen property, he may have just seen someone else put it there. Our courts would have to give him the benefit of the doubt arising out of this remote possibility. So the police will say that they searched the accused's house and recovered the stolen property from there; and they will produce several respectable persons of the locality to testify that this is what happened. A very ordinary, venial but necessary bit of falsification. Can you blame the police?"

Judge: "I cannot possibly condone such conduct. Don't you see, Greenlane! It strikes at the root of any civilized scientific system of reaching the truth. If the Crown's own agents are permitted to tamper with the evidence, no Court can find any solid basis for its reasoning."

But notwithstanding all these difficulties, man-made, law-made and self-made, I would enjoin upon you, on every occasion, to "Speak the truth, the whole truth and nothing but truth." Remember always that reliance is of necessity placed in courts of justice upon the testimony of policemen, and bear constantly in mind that in many cases the fate of an accused man, which means his life or his liberty, depends upon that testimony; and seriously reflect how fearful a thing it is for a man to be convicted and put to death or condemned to imprisonment upon false testimony. Your duty is a very easy and simple one, namely to tell the Court all you know. The responsibility of the verdict, whether it be guilty or not guilty, rests entirely with the trying authority and they have a right to expect from you everything within your knowledge to enable them to form a just conclusion. Let me complete these hints fittingly with the prefatory words of Mr. W. A. Gayer to his marvellous little work, "Stepping-stones to Police Efficiency."

"There is one consideration which every member of the force, whether he be a Superintendent of wide experience or a recently-appointed Station House Officer or even a newly

recruited constable, may do well to bear in mind. This is that the truest reform of the force to which he belongs must come from within. The moral tone of the force will depend on the moral tone of each of its members and it rests with them to maintain it at a high level. Governments have done much, and may still do more, to assist in this matter but the real responsibility rests with its individual members. Let every policeman help in the creation of a high police tradition based on the principle that nothing mean or untrue should ever, or under any circumstances, be utilised for the so-called furtherance of police success. Let each member of the force bear in mind that his duty to the public is one of protection and to the criminal one of reformation, rather than retribution; then all may safely rest assured that no police duty they may be called upon to execute can be of such nature as to cause an honourable gentleman any hesitation in undertaking its performance."

Jai Hind

Sweet Little thing: "What's the trouble, Sergeant?"

Traffic Sergeant: "You were going sixty miles an hour, Miss, that's all."

Sweet Little thing: "Ah, that's where I've got you. I've been out only ten minutes. So, smarty!"

★

Collegian: "What did you do with my shirt?"

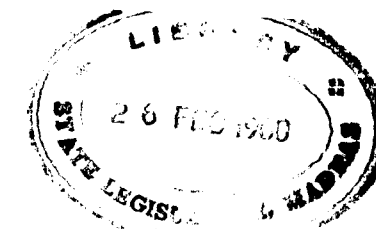
Room-mate: "Sent it to the laundry."

Collegian: "Ye Gods! The whole history of England was on the cuffs!"

★

The Duke of Edinburgh: "I have had very little experience of Self Government. In fact, I am one of the most governed people in the world."

—Look" Vol. 23 No. 10.



THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

(Issued under the authority of the Inspector-General of Police, Madras)

Editor :

G. V. Narayanan, M.A., I.P.S.

Assistant Editors :

M. D. Ebenezer, B.A.

P. Seetharaman

M. V. Seshadri, B.A., B.L.

69358

FOR EVERYTHING IN:

Electrical Electronic and Technical
Equipment

TELEPHONES—TELEGRAPH INSTRUMENTS
RADIO COMMUNICATION—RADIO
BROADCASTING EQUIPMENTS

TEST INSTRUMENTS FOR EDUCATION
RESEARCH AND INDUSTRIES

MOTWANE PRIVATE LTD

INCORPORATING

**CHICAGO TELEPHONE & RADIO CO
PRIVATE LTD**

(Established 1919)

PIONEERS OF RADIO SOUND SYSTEMS
LOUDSPEAKERS AND ELECTRONICS

196 Mount Road

MADRAS 2

P. O. Box No. 396

Telephone : 85357

Telegram : "CHIPHONE"

Speech Delivered at the Defence Services Staff College, Wellington (Nilgiris)

BY

SRI S. BALAKRISHNA SHETTY, B.A. (HONS), I.P.
Inspector-General of Police, Madras

I am thankful to the Commandant and the staff of the college for giving me this opportunity to address the trainees again this year.

The armed forces and the Police have to act in co-ordination to meet the external aggression as well as to maintain law and order in the country. It is, therefore, right that you should know how we work. Most of the joint operations will be rendered easier when both of us are well-versed in each other's chains of command and the functions and powers at different levels. It will make it easy for you to contact the right officer for a particular type of work. Strangely enough such a clear understanding between the armed forces and the police is still wanting and it must be the endeavour of you officers holding key positions in the army as well as ours to know each other better and to establish a healthier and better understanding.

I shall first of all deal with the organisation and the main functions of the police forces in India. The term 'Police' is etymologically derived from the Greek word 'Polis' meaning the state. There is always an element of coercion in the formation of any body politic and the police is the visible element of coercion. It is no doubt the external manifestation of the authority of the state. Many of you are likely to believe that the police organisation in India is the creation of the British. It is actually not so. We had a very efficient police organisation from time immemorial. In fact the Guptas and Mauryas had an effective Police and intelligence

system which had evoked the praise of a number of foreign visitors at that time. The Moghuls had an equally good Police organisation but that system would not suit later developments. So the present pattern of police organisation was introduced by the British, on the pattern of the Irish constabulary. It will perhaps take considerable amount of time for me to dwell at length on the Police organisations in India at different periods and to assess their relative merits. We can, however, broadly conclude that each system was best suited to deal with problems at that time and we are constantly endeavouring to alter our set-up to meet the requirements.

Before the advent of the British, the functions of the Police were discharged by Kavalgars and Talayaris. The various Nawabs, who were subordinate to the central moghul authority, maintained law and order in their respective areas through zamindars. In large towns like Madras and Madurai the administration of the Police was entrusted to an officer called kotwal who was usually paid a large salary to defray expenses of the police force under his command. But, this method is said to have deteriorated and 'the village watchman and the heads of villages and even higher officials connived at crimes and harboured offenders in return for a share of the booty'. So the East India Company relieved the zamindars of their police duties and set-up Magistrates and 'Darogas' in the districts for carrying out police duties. Each 'Daroga' was responsible for policing about 20 sq. miles

and was paid a reward of Rs. 10/- for every dacoit apprehended and convicted. This system, however, was ineffective for crime control and, therefore, after the Vellore Mutiny (1805), Britishers in Madras thought that for security purposes as well as for effective crime control, a well-organised police department was necessary. Consequently a Commission was appointed in 1813. In accordance with its recommendations, the responsibility for policing was transferred from the Magistrates to the District Collector.

The Collector's supervision and control, however, was ineffective. In fact the Tahsildars or Mamlatdars were controlling the village police and they were using the Thalayaris, Kavalgars and the police for coercing the villagers to pay the taxes. The police subordinates at that time were corrupt, inefficient and oppressive. In 1855 therefore a Torture Commission was appointed to study the weaknesses in the system. The Commission's report brought to light the multitude of abuses to which the Police were put by the revenue officials and recommended that the separation of Revenue and Police function was absolutely necessary. Accordingly a Dt. Supdt. of Police was appointed to each district to be in charge of the Police and a Commissioner of Police was appointed as the head of the police organisation in the State. These proposals were given effect to in 1859. We are this year celebrating the Centenary of the setting up of the Police as a separate force in the Madras State. You will be interested to know that this new set-up of the police was first tried out in Madras and then extended to the other parts of India. In 1860, the Govt. of India appointed a Commission to enquire into the question of police administration in the country and submit proposals for increasing their efficiency and reducing expenditure. The recommendations of this Commission were accepted in the Police Act of 1861. In the initial stages the Police force was supervised for some years by military officers lent to the

department. These officers had no knowledge of local conditions and could therefore contribute little to police work. It was therefore decided that career policemen should be recruited and appointed to administer the police and supervise police work.

In July 1902, again, the Government of India appointed a Police Commission which made various suggestions for the improvement of the department. Some of the important suggestions made by the Commission were :

- (1) The Police Force should consist of
 - (a) A European Service, to be recruited entirely in England ;
 - (b) A Provincial Service to be recruited entirely in India ;
 - (c) an Upper Subordinate Service consisting of Inspectors and Sub-Inspectors ; and
 - (d) a lower subordinate service consisting of Head Constables and Constables.
- (2) All the large Provinces should be divided into ranges and a Deputy Inspector-General of Police should be placed in full administrative charge of each Range.
- (3) No officer of lower grade than Superintendent of Police should be placed in charge of the police of a district.
- (4) On the analogy of the Provincial Civil Service, a grade of Deputy Superintendents should be created—the status of these officers being the same as that of Assistant Superintendents.
- (5) There should be one or more Assistant (or Deputy) Superintendent in every district, each district being divided into circles consisting of a certain number of Police stations with an Inspector placed in charge of each Circle to supervise all Police work within it. The ordinary area of a Police station should be about 150 square miles.

(6) The officer-in-charge of a Police station should be of the rank of Sub-Inspector.

(7) One Head Constable should be attached to every Police station to perform the duties of a Station Writer, with the addition of a second Head Constable to render general assistance to the Sub-Inspector but not to undertake the investigation of any offence independently of that officer.

(8) The duties of the constables should be of a mechanical character such as escorts, guards, patrols and the like. They could be employed on the more responsible duties of the Police only under the direct charge of some superior officer.

(9) There should be for each district a force of Armed Police, sufficient to deal with tumults and local disturbances, a fixed portion of these forces being kept in reserve, always ready to proceed to any place where it may be needed.

(10) There should be constituted in each Province a Criminal Investigation Department for the purpose of collating and distributing information regarding organised crime, and to assist in the investigation of crimes when they are of such a special character as to render this assistance necessary.

(11) The recruitment of Inspectors should ordinarily be by promotion of selected Sub-Inspectors and the appointment of Sub-Inspectors should be by direct recruitment and promotions of Head Constables to this rank should be strictly limited to a certain percentage of the vacancies.

(12) A Provincial Training School should be established in each Province for the training of Police officers of and above the rank of Sub-Inspectors. The course of instruction should include Criminal Law and Law of Evidence, Police Procedure and practice and the habits and customs of the criminal classes. It was also recommended that arrangements

should be made to give practical training in Station House work, and that special instruction should be given in regard to the manner in which Police officers should conduct themselves towards the public.

(13) The recruitment of Head Constables should be by promotion from the ranks and Constables should be recruited locally as far as possible and should be confined to the classes which are usually regarded as respectable, care being taken to ascertain that the candidates are of good character and antecedents.

(14) Central Recruits Schools should be established for the training of constables and the prescribed course should include instruction in drill, discipline, elementary law and procedure and the manner in which the Police officers should conduct themselves towards the public.

(15) Improvements should be effected in the scales of pay of the various ranks and an increase was to be made in the strength of the Police force.

These recommendations were fully implemented and the Police all over the country was reorganised accordingly.

Since the appointment of the Commission fifty years ago there have been violent changes in the social and political structure of the country. First of all we have become independent. The Police has become a national Police in the true sense of the term. The pattern of police work had to change and the outlook of the policeman had to be reorientated to suit new conditions since Independence. The burden of the policeman's duties has considerably increased but his authority has, to some extent, weakened. It is therefore necessary to reassess their duties, manpower and conditions of service and the facilities available for them and reorientate their outlook. The Police have by and large readjusted themselves to the new conditions.

The main function of the Police is, as you all know, the maintenance of law and order and the detection and prevention of crime. In addition to these functions, the Police have now to enforce various social regulations such as the Suppression of Immoral Traffic Act and the enforcement of Prohibition rules. With our objective being the establishment of a Socialistic Pattern of Society, the responsibility and the functions of the police are progressively increasing and the conditions of policing are being rendered increasingly difficult. The Police force was organised only to meet the minimum normal requirements before Independence. A complete reassessment of the needs of the present society and the reorganisation of the Police to meet these demands are therefore necessary.

Now I shall deal with the present set-up of the Police force in Madras which is more or less the standard pattern followed in other States also. You might come across slight variations here and there but those differences are not vital. The States directly administered by the Home Ministry have a similar but not identical set-up. The Inspectors-General and other ranks in Manipur, Pondicherry and Andamans are necessarily comparatively junior in ranks.

The executive head of the Police in this State is Inspector-General whose rank is equivalent to that of a Major-General. He is responsible for the maintenance of law and order to the State Government who in turn is responsible to the Legislature. The Inspector-General of Police is a professional Police officer and the entire Police force in the State is under his single command. He has full powers to deploy the forces, recruit officers upto the rank of Sub-Inspector, order promotions etc. An Assistant Inspector-General of Police of the rank of Superintendent of Police assists him in administrative work at the headquarters.

The State is divided into three groups of districts, each known as a Range. A Deputy Inspector-General is in charge of each of the Ranges. He supervises the work of the Superintendents of Police without in any way interfering with their authority. At the same time he ensures that a high standard of work is maintained by the district staff and that their relationship with the Magistracy is cordial. He frequently visits the districts and inspects the work in police stations and headquarters offices every year. He hears appeals from all ranks who are punished by the Superintendent of Police. He also looks into the training of young officers in his range and when any serious situation develops in any districts he usually moves to that district and remains there till the situation is eased. The Deputy Inspector-General of Police at times has under him one or more battalions of the provincial armed police. In the States of West Bengal, Bombay, Madras and in Andhra Pradesh the Inspector-General of Police has a Commissioner of Police in charge of the capital city. He exercises certain magisterial functions such as remanding of prisoners and is permitted to correspond directly with the Government on routine matters. While in Calcutta, the Commissioner of Police is almost independent, in Madras and Andhra Pradesh he is completely subordinate to the Inspector-General of Police. As mentioned earlier the Inspector-General of Police has also a Deputy Inspector-General of Police, C.I.D., at the headquarters.

The head of the district executive Police is the Superintendent of Police. He assists the District Collector in maintaining law and order although he is not a subordinate officer. The Superintendent of Police is controlled and directed by a regular chain of command by the Deputy Inspector-General of Police and the Inspector-General of Police. In some districts the Superintendent of Police is assisted by one or more Additional Superintendents of Police. Each district is divided into six or seven Sub-

Divisions which are under the control of Sub-Divisional Officers who may either be a member of the Indian Police Service or of the State Police Service. The Sub-Divisional officer whenever possible investigates offences of a grave nature such as murder, dacoity and robbery. The Sub-Divisional Officer has under him 3 or 4 Circle Inspectors, who are each responsible for the supervision of the work of 4 or 5 Sub-Inspectors. He visits the stations under his charge frequently, inspects them in detail and guides the Sub-Inspector in the investigation of crime and the maintenance of law and order. Each Sub-Inspector has under his charge a Police Station and has normally one or two junior Sub-Inspectors, one or two Head Constables and about 20 Police Constables under him. The Sub-Inspector and his staff are fully responsible for the investigation of all crimes occurring in the station limits and for maintaining law and order. He usually has jurisdiction over about 70 to 100 sq. miles and 40 to 50,000 people. In Madras State we have 30,000 police officers of different ranks and about 37,000 village policemen and 18,389 villages. Compared with Western countries and other States in India our ratio of policemen to the population is low. Our people are generally law abiding and in spite of several handicaps, the percentage of detection in this country, particularly in this State is very high. The average pay of a Police Constable is about Rs. 65 and that of a Head Constable Rs. 85. No doubt these scales of pay are very low and the various Pay Commissions are examining the question of giving them an equitable salary.

There are two awards for the Police, the President's Police Medal and the Police Medal. Both are given for gallantry as well as for distinguished service. These medals carry a monetary allowance to the non-gazetted rank. Posthumous award of medals for acts of gallantry entitle the widows and members of the family of non-gazetted officers

for monetary allowance. The Government of India has also laid down special rates of pension for policemen incapacitated due to injuries received in the execution of their duties and for pension for widows and dependants of all those police officers who are killed while on duty.

Police Communications

In this State we have a network of police wireless which is run by the Police Radio Officer. The wireless network comes under the general control of the Inspector-General of Police. The Police Radio Officer is of the rank of a Superintendent of Police and he has administrative control over the technical as well as the administrative staff. We have three radio networks in this State, viz., the Madras City Police radio network under the Commissioner of Police, the Madras Special Police radio network under its Commandant, and the Special Armed Police under its Commandant, besides the radio network linking the districts and Sub-Divisional headquarters. Our aim is to extend the radio network to reach every Police station. We have a separate grid connecting the State capitals and New Delhi run by the Director of Co-ordination, Police Wireless.

Our transport compared with the armed forces is poor, the yard stick being six 3 tonners and two jeeps per company—about 240 men in all. But with the growing need for greater mobility for the police, it is hoped that adequate transport would be provided for. We provide rent-free quarters for all Head Constables and Police Constables. At present we have about 50 to 60% Government-built quarters and we are aiming to raise the number to 80% in the next two years.

Special Armed Police

The armed police in the State now include the armed reserve in the district headquarters, 4 companies of the Madras Special Police

and 10 companies of the Special Armed Police besides 6 companies of the Madras Special Police on deputation in Assam and Pondicherry. While the Armed Reserve are used for normal escorts and guards, the Madras Special Police and Special Armed Police are better equipped and kept well trained to be used only on special occasions. It is only when the Special Armed Police are not able to deal with any situation the help of the army is sought by civil authorities to maintain law and order.

Special Police Forces

Besides the State police forces, the Government of India has also a Central armed reserve known as the Central Reserve Police. It was originally established by the Government of India to help the princely States to maintain law and order. This force continues and is now deployed in the Kashmir and the Naga Hills Area. In this connection you will perhaps be interested to know about the proposed organisation of Zonal Police Forces. You may remember that every State maintains some battalions of the Special Armed Police. The strength of the Special Armed Police is determined on the basis of two-fold requirements, one part to meet the day-to-day demands and the other kept as a reserve for meeting any special outbreaks or emergencies. No doubt such special outbreaks are rare and experience has shown that they do not occur in all the States at the same time. So it is felt that if three or four neighbouring States could combine and establish a common reserve each of the States could be drawn from it as and when necessary. For example say each State has normally keep four battalions as reserve. The four States may contribute 2 battalions each and from a joint reserve force of eight battalions and still be able to draw four battalions at any given time. This would result in the reduction of expenditure in each of the States, their contri-

bution being almost one-half of their previous commitments. You may now ask what we would do if there are simultaneous outbreaks in two or more States. Such occasions as I had mentioned are very rare and it is merely a theoretical problem. If, however, such an eventuality develops, then we have to seek the help of the neighbouring Zones or to come to you for help. I am the Convener for the conference of the Inspectors-General of Police for the States of Madras, Andhra Pradesh, Mysore and Kerala to establish a common Police force. While Madras, Andhra Pradesh, and Mysore have accepted the proposal whole-heartedly, Kerala State did not join then as it felt that its financial conditions did not permit it to agree to this proposal. But during the recent large scale outbreaks in Kerala the State authorities had been hard put to find extra men required. If the Zonal Police force had been established and Kerala was a member, it could have easily drawn at least six battalions from it to meet the emergency.

Women Police

We are also making a small beginning for a wing of the Women Police. Many States such as West Bengal, Bombay and Kerala have large contingents of women police. In this State the need was not felt earlier. It is now considered that a small contingent of women police would facilitate the arrest and search of women criminals, the escort of women convicts and the systematic handling of juvenile delinquents.

Madras Fire Service

In this State the Inspector-General of Police also controls the Fire Service. Under him there are two Zonal officers and several District Fire officers and Sub-officers managing the hierarchy. At present we have 47 fire stations and 1866 firemen. Our programme is to set up a fire station in every important town. The Government is exa-

mining whether the Fire Service could not be placed at the disposal of the respective municipalities. It is, however, to be considered whether the force would not develop better technically and administratively, if it is retained as a single force for the whole State, at least in this formative stage.

Criminal Investigation Department

Earlier I had made a passing reference to the C.I.D. The C.I.D. in Madras has three wings, viz., the Crime Branch, the Special Branch and the anti-corruption branch which is known as the X Branch. While the district police mainly interest themselves with the law and order and other day-to-day crime, the Crime Branch takes up the investigation of difficult and complicated offences or offences whose investigation extends to more than one district or one State. The officers of the Crime Branch, C.I.D., are selected officers drawn from the districts and include all ranks, i.e., Deputy Superintendent of Police, Inspectors, Sub-Inspectors, Head Constables and Police Constables. Last year the Madras C.I.D. undertook their investigation of several important murder cases and also cases pertaining to Bowriah and other gangs which were operating from Rajasthan to Kerala. Their depredations had extended to several States. In the Pallavaram Gang cases put up by the C.I.D. 81 persons were charged. The properties involved were worth about 5 lakhs of rupees, of which Rs. 2 lakhs worth of property were recovered. The trial before the specially appointed Sessions Judge took one and half years to complete as 1,300 witnesses had to be examined. This is one of the several difficult cases successfully dealt with by the Crime Branch. This organisation, because of the standard of investigation of its officers, who have made a specialised study of the various kinds of crime and have other facilities at their disposal, is specially suitable to tackle such difficult offences. The officers of the C.I.D. are not bothered by the day-to-day require-

ments of a normal police station and hence are in a position to concentrate on the investigation of the cases entrusted to them undisturbed and unfettered. The Crime Branch also collates, digests, and distributes information about crime and criminals in the State, runs a Finger Print Bureau and maintains records of important criminals of the State. The C.I.D. has also under it a well-equipped laboratory for the examination of questioned documents, foot-prints, counterfeit coins etc., and maintains a photographic section.

The Special Branch is another important section in the C.I.D. It deals mainly with the collection of political intelligence useful for the administration of the State. Its officers are also drawn from the executive Police but are specially selected. They operate both from the headquarters and the outlying areas. In the districts they set up their sources in the various political parties and collect intelligence from time to time regarding their activities. They keep a vigilant watch over subversive political groups and dangerous political desperados. They maintain close liaison with the Special Branches of the other States and also with the Central organisation in New Delhi. They are also responsible for watching the activities of suspicious foreigners and are responsible for the protection of the V.I.Ps.

Anti-Corruption Branch

The anti-corruption branch deals with all cases of corruption against the State officials referred to it by the Government. While the anti-corruption branch is authorised to take up the investigation of any case of corruption, in practice we have desisted from taking up investigation of cases *suomoto*. The complaints are usually received either directly by the Government or are forwarded by us when we receive them. The Government after consultation with the Head of the department in which the accused officer is employed and examination of his previous reputation refers

the case to the X Branch, C.I.D. if it feels that an investigation is necessary. The X Branch after careful and thorough investigation submits a report to the Government who may decide either to take departmental action against the accused officer if the offences are minor or place him before a specially constituted Tribunal on the basis of whose findings action will be later taken. During the last year 320 petitions were received, enquiries in 118 cases were undertaken and 63 reports were sent to the Government. In many cases where malicious complaints were made against officers the X Branch reported so even after the preliminary enquiry.

Special Police Establishment

In this connection I think that I should make a reference to the Special Police Establishment with the Government of India. This organisation is officered by Police officers drawn from the States and its duties and functions are the same as that of the X Branch in the State. The Special Police Establishment however deals only with the employees of the Government of India and also investigates cases in which the Government of India is cheated. The head of the Special Police Establishment is of the rank of an Inspector-General of Police and he is assisted by 2 Deputy Inspectors-General of Police. They have a Superintendent of Police and other subordinate staff in almost every State and deal with the cases in that area. The Special Police Establishment also has a Central Investigating Agency, consisting of specially-selected officers who undertake investigation of cases with wide ramifications both within and outside the country. This anti-corruption branch is under the Home Ministry. They also have vigilance officers in each of the Ministries to help the quick investigation of cases in the respective Ministries. There is complete co-operation between the X Branch in the States and the Special Police Establishment in the Centre.

Intelligence

I understand that you are also interested in knowing the set-up of the different intelligence collection organisations in the country. By the very nature of the subject, you would know that I will not be in a position to go into the details but I will certainly give you a broad outline of the organisational setup.

First of all, in the districts, we have the District Special Branches under the Superintendent of Police. This branch collects intelligence concerning the activities of all political parties, concentrating specially on those of a subversive nature and also about any individual whose activities may be detrimental to the national interest. The Superintendent of Police sends up a weekly report as well as special reports when necessary to keep the Special Branch, C.I.D., informed of political activities and political developments in the district. Besides collating and co-ordinating the information collected by the District Special Branches, it independently collects intelligence of the same kind. It has its own officers who through their sources and contacts and by observation collect intelligence, and thus check up on the accuracy of the intelligence collected by the District Special Branches and supplement it. The State Special Branch has some experts in the collection of intelligence and also have the services of experienced technical hands for delicate operations. They are therefore well-equipped to collect important vital intelligence quickly and accurately. We follow the Kural, an old Tamil literary work, which had laid down that for efficient state craft and correctness of information the State should have at least two independent sources of information. Thus, by multiplying the agencies of intelligence-collection, we not only extend our coverage but also ensure the accuracy of the intelligence collected. Then we have the Central Intelligence Bureau which is under the administrative

control of the Home Ministry of the Government of India. It is responsible to the Central Government to keep it informed of all political activities in the country and any subversive activities which may aim at undermining the Constitution of India. The Central Intelligence Bureau has its headquarters in Delhi but it has its representatives in the States. It collects intelligence from the State Special Branches as well as through its own officers operating from the headquarters as well as the outlying areas. It collects intelligence both within India and outside India regarding activities by Indians and by others which will directly affect the country's security. Like any other national intelligence organisation, the Intelligence Bureau also keeps the Chiefs of Staff and other officers who are interested in the security of the country informed of the political trends in the country and of the activities of nationals of other countries which may have a bearing on the security of the country. As in any other country the operational intelligence is collected mainly by the armed forces while all the background intelligence is collected by the civil organisations. This, however, does not preclude the civil organisations from collecting operational intelligence if it is considered necessary. The Intelligence organisations in India operated by the civil units as well as the armed forces work in close liaison and, I can assure you, in a very friendly manner. It is perhaps unnecessary for me to explain to you the necessity of collecting intelligence in peace time. The enemy, whether it be from outside the country or from inside is always active. He is only waiting for a chance to overthrow the Government by subversive means. He wants to catch us unprepared which will give him considerable tactical advantage. It is to prevent us being caught unprepared by the enemy that we are collecting intelligence all the time. We have, therefore, to keep the intelligence organisation 100% efficient all the time. You will all agree

that unless we keep in touch with the trend of the political activities in the country, the maintenance of law and order would be a difficult problem. It would not be either easy or practicable to tackle the situations if disturbances break. It is also necessary for the efficient running of a Government that they should know the political trends in the country and the secret activities of various disruptive and other anti-national elements.

The Intelligence Department

We have also an intelligence wing attached to the C.I.D. which collects intelligence regarding political developments and other matters of secret nature which are of interest to the State administration. Units of this branch are stationed in the State headquarters as well as in the districts. Information collected by this branch is fully vetted before action is taken. The officers employed in this branch are men of established integrity and known efficiency.

I may tell you that the relationship between the armed forces and the intelligence organisations is very close and intimate.

Aid to Civil Power

You must have learnt in detail of the role of the armed forces as an aid to civil power. Clear instructions have been issued by the State Government regarding the procedure and other aspects of aid to civil power. These lay down that the armed forces may be called up to perform in aid of civil authority for:

- (a) maintenance of law and order ;
- (b) maintenance of the Essential Services ;
- (c) assistance during natural and other calamities such as earthquakes, floods, famine and fires ;
- (d) any other types of assistance which may be needed by the civil authorities.

Whenever troops are requisitioned in aid of civil authorities, they will be employed only under specific Central Acts which give power in clear terms to the armed forces to exercise the required functions, viz., sections 127 to 132 of the Criminal Procedure Code when required to assist in the maintenance of law and order, and the Armed Forces (Emergency Duties) Act, 1947.

Troops should not normally be employed for the maintenance of law and order for more than 10 days without the sanction of the Central Govt. Hence if there is a likelihood of troops being required for more than 10 days, the State Govt. will keep the Govt. of India informed and get its approval. Applications for military assistance can ordinarily be made by the State Govt. to the Central Government. In very special emergencies, however, the Collector is empowered to directly request the concerned military authorities who will be responsible for sending the immediate help necessary. In our case we have to request either the G.O.C. Madras Area or the Commander, Headquarters, Bangalore Sub Area. When an unlawful assembly is to be dispersed and if a Magistrate requires military assistance, absolute discretion lies with that officer as to the manner in which the necessary action should be taken. He is the sole judge of the action necessary though this must be limited to the purpose indicated. The Magistrate is empowered only to require the Military Commander to disperse the unlawful assembly and to effect arrests but he has no authority to give an order to open fire or to take any particular action. The Military Commander is authorised by law to open fire, if, in his opinion, the circumstances so demand. In case of serious emergency when communication is not possible with any Magistrate and public security is endangered—any Commissioned Officer including a Junior Commissioned Officer may himself disperse the assembly by military force.

If, however, during the operations it is possible to communicate with Magistrate, the Senior officer will do so and thenceforward comply with the instructions of the magistrates as regards the continuance of such action.

No prosecution can be undertaken against an officer, Junior Commissioned or non-Commissioned officer for action taken by him either when obeying the requisition of the Magistrate or acting on his own initiative, save with the sanction of the Central Government and even if such prosecution takes place, the law declares that he is not deemed to have committed an offence so long as he had acted in good faith, i.e. after the exercise of due care and attention and had resorted to the use of as little force and the infliction of as little injury to person and property as is consistent with the object of dispersing the assembly. Every effort will be made by the civil authorities concerned to retain control with the civil resources at their disposal. Military assistance should not be called for unless the Police force available is, in the opinion of the civil authority, found to be inadequate to deal with the situation. Provisions are also made for taking preventive measures. In civil disturbances, the presence of troops has a steadying effect and their early appearance frequently results in the arrest of a dangerous movement before it has had time to develop. So flag marches etc. are undertaken. But in such cases, the control of the situation remains with the civil authority. It should be clearly understood that civil authorities have the right to call in the aid of the military as a preventive measure and the military authorities are bound to comply with such requisition. Until the martial law is proclaimed, it should be borne in mind that the control of measures for the suppression of disturbances should remain in the hands of the civil authority even if troops are requisitioned. The civil authorities are instructed to brief the army authorities regarding the nature of dis-

turbances, areas affected, centres of disorder, size and temper of crowds and how armed, strength and condition of the police force and possibilities of reinforcements and probable action by the troops, and also inform the army authorities if the troops have been called in as a preventive measure or to disperse unlawful assemblies or to assist in making arrests. They must intimate to them the possible turns the disturbances may take (i.e., forecast), the rendezvous where a civil representative and the magistrates will meet the troops, the accommodation available for the troops (i.e., its nature and approximate locality, if not arranged previously), and the fact that the Territorial Army has or has not been called out, by whom, what they are doing and also who commands them.

It has also been clearly laid down that troops should never be used or to be armed with Police weapons such as lathis or truncheons. If required to charge, they will do with the weapons with which they are armed, using the bayonet or the butt end of the rifle according to the degree of force required and the mentality of the crowd. Troops will only be used for the protection of important points when Police are not available for the purpose. Only Police should be normally employed on the tasks which entail physical contact with a crowd such as dispersal at close quarters, searches, arrests etc.

When a Magistrate has ordered a Military Commander to disperse an unlawful assembly and during an operation in which the Police are cooperating with the Military, though the police do not come automatically under the

control of the Military Commander, they (the members of the police force) should yet voluntarily place themselves individually or collectively under the Military Commander by invoking the right of self-defence and also for their own convenience. When this occurs the Military officer's command will extend only to the police force on the spot and will not include power to order up for more police from elsewhere.

When disturbances are recurrent, widespread, concerted and directed against the constituted authorities who are unable to maintain or restore law and order even with the assistance of troops, it is usual for the Central Govt. to act directly through its military forces and to entrust the local Military Commander with the task of superseding the civil authority till normal conditions are restored. This course of action is called enforcing 'the martial law'. Martial law will be established by the promulgation of an Ordinance.

In urgent cases, however, civil authorities may directly ask the military to take over not merely a local and temporary situation for a limited purpose but take over the control of the general situation and have martial law supersede the ordinary civil administration.

The actual functions of the police during such disturbances are only limited. The police will assist the Defence Services to the extent required in the apprehension of offenders or collect intelligence as the police have no independent function to perform except to the extent decided by the Commander of the Defence Services.

THE MADRAS POLICE CENTENARY

BY

SRI F. V. ARUL, I. P.,
(Deputy Inspector-General of Police, C.I.D. Madras)

The Centenary of any institution or organisation is certainly an occasion as much for self-examination as it is for self-congratulation. The Madras Police reached their hundredth milestone on the 6th September, 1959. It does not, of course, mean that there was no police organisation in Madras State earlier than 1859. Several experiments in watch and ward were attempted in Madras State in earlier years but it was only in 1859, that a regular professional police force was constituted by virtue of Act XXIV of 1859. Incidentally, the Madras Police has the honour of being the first regularly constituted police force in India. The Indian Police Act of 1861 was practically patterned on the Madras model.

This historic occasion of the Centenary was celebrated by the Madras State Police in a fitting manner both in Madras city and in the districts. The citizenry were not slow to appreciate the good work turned out by the Madras Police during the last hundred years and they came forward to offer their felicitations and to present mementos in token thereof. The first to do so was the South Indian Film Artists Association, which presented a souvenir in the shape of a giant-sized shield at a function organised in the 'Children's Theatre' Madras, on August 30th, 1959. This function was attended by all the leading film stars and producers. The shield was accepted on behalf of the State Police by Sri M. Bhaktavatsalam, Home Minister. The association also presented 3 ninety-year-old retired police constables with Rs. 500 and a Kashmir shawl each. Srimathi Anjali Devi, the President of the Association was also kind

enough to present a hundred lamps (Kuthuvilakkus) to the police force and in doing so, she stated that the citizens of Madras State have been singularly fortunate in having a very competent police force.

The same evening, the Chief Justice of Madras, Sri P. V. Rajamannar, released a book entitled "The History of the Madras Police" compiled by officers of the Police Department and also inaugurated a film entitled "Your Friend" produced by Sri P. Paramaguru, Deputy Commissioner of Police, Traffic Madras city in collaboration with the executives of the A.V.M. Studios. Madras in which a galaxy of film stars appear. "The History of Madras Police" covers not only the development of the Madras Police during the last 100 years but it takes a magnificent sweep backwards to survey the systems of police obtaining in this country from Vedic times onwards. Even though it treats of such a vast period this is no superficial historical narrative, but it is a history founded on comprehensive and strenuous original research making it readable for persons of widely diversified tastes of intelligence. As for the film "Your Friend", its main purpose is to improve Police-Public relations. It has attempted to show the citizens the way in which the Department functions in the matter of preventing and detecting crime. Has somebody picked your pocket? According to the film there is a police man ready at hand to help you to recover your money. Is there a damsel in distress who needs to be protected and taken care of? She does not have to look far for help. Has there been an abduction or wrongful confinement, a theft of jewels



EXTRACT OF SECTIONS 127 to 132 Cr.P.C.

127. *Assembly to disperse on command of Magistrate or Police officer.*—(1) Any Magistrate or officer in charge of a police station may command any unlawful assembly, or any assembly of five or more persons likely to cause a disturbance of the public peace, to disperse; and it shall thereupon be the duty of the members of such assembly to disperse accordingly.

(2) This section applies also to the police in the town of Calcutta.

Note :—Scope. The Deputy Commissioner of Police—an officer of police undeniably superior in rank to the officer-in-charge of police stations—can command an assembly to disperse under this section (7 Bom. 42.)

128. *Use of civil force to disperse.*—If upon being so commanded any such assembly does not disperse, or if, without being so commanded, it conducts itself in such a manner as to show a determination not to disperse, any Magistrate or officer-in-charge of a police station, whether within or without the presidency towns, may proceed to disperse such assembly by force and may require the assistance of any male person, not being an officer, soldier, sailor or airman in armed forces and acting as such, for the purpose of dispersing such assembly, and if necessary, arresting and confining the persons who form part of it, in order to disperse such assembly or that they may be punished according to law.

Note :—Scope. The degree of force which may be lawfully used in suppression of an unlawful assembly depends on the nature of such assembly, for the force used must always be moderated and proportioned to the circumstances of the case and to the end to be obtained. (21 Mad. 249; Lord Bowen's report on Collier's strike and riot, 1893).

129. *Use of military force.*—If any such assembly cannot be otherwise dispersed and if it is necessary for the public security that it should be dispersed, Magistrate of the highest rank who is present may cause it to be dispersed by the armed force.

130. *Duty of officer commanding troops required by Magistrate to disperse assembly.*—

(1) When a Magistrate determines to disperse any such assembly by the armed forces, he may require any officer thereof in command of any group of persons belonging to the armed forces to disperse such assembly with the help of the armed forces under his command, and to arrest and confine such persons forming part of it as the Magistrate may direct, or as it may be necessary to arrest and confine in order to disperse the assembly or to have them punished according to law.

(2) Every such officer shall obey such requisition in such manner as he thinks fit, but in doing he shall use as little force, and do as little injury to person and property, as may be consistent with dispersing the assembly and arresting and detaining such persons.

Note :—Scope. It is the duty of every citizen and not least of those who are in the service of the Government to aid in quelling disorder (*Phillips v. Eyre* (1870) 6 Q.B. 1122 L.T. 869).

131. *Power of Commissioned Military officers to disperse assembly.*—When the public security is manifestly endangered by any such assembly and when no Magistrate can be communicated with any Commissioned Officer of the armed forces may disperse such assembly with the help of the armed forces under his command may arrest and confine any persons forming part of it in order to disperse such assembly or that they may be punished accord-

JULY-SEPT. '59]

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

17

ing to law; but if, while he is acting under this section, it becomes practicable for him to communicate with a Magistrate, he shall do so, and shall thenceforward obey the instructions of the Magistrate as to whether he shall or shall not continue such action.

132. *Protection against prosecution or act done under this chapter.*—No prosecution against any person for any act purporting to be done under this chapter shall be instituted in any Criminal Court, except with the sanction of the State Government and

- (a) no Magistrate or police officer acting under this chapter in good faith
- (b) no officer acting under Sec. 131 in good faith
- (c) no person doing any act in good faith, in compliance with a requisition under Sec. 128 or Sec. 130 and
- (d) no inferior officer, or soldier, sailor or airman in the armed force doing any act in obedience to any order which he was bound to obey

shall be deemed to have thereby committed an offence.

Provided that no such prosecution shall be instituted in any Criminal Court against any officer or soldier, sailor or airman in the armed forces except with the sanction of the Central Government.

Note :—Scope Applicability.—In order to decide whether a prosecution is barred under Sec. 132 for want of the sanction of the State Government it cannot be contended that only the complaint and the sworn statement should be referred to (1933 Mad. 268)

132-A. *Definitions*—In this chapter—

- (a) the expression "armed forces" means the military, naval and air forces, operating as land forces and includes any other armed forces of the Union so operating;
- (b) officer in relating to the armed forces, means a person commissioned, gazetted or in pay as an officer of the armed forces and includes a junior commissioned officer, a warrant officer, a petty officer and a non-commissioned officer.

Note :—Scope. By Amendment Act of 1952 this section has been inserted by which definitions "armed forces" and "officer" are given.

Do you know this about Blood Groups ?

That	Group	O	comprises	about	46 %	of the population,
That	Group	A	comprises	about	42 %	of the population,
That	Group	B	comprises	about	9 %	of the population, and
That	Group	AB	comprises	about	3 %	of the population.

(From The Australian Police Journal, July, 1959, Vol. 13, No. 3, page 216).

BHAWOO KASHINATH & Co., (Madras)

No. 4, PATULLA ROAD, MADRAS-2

Government & Railway Clothing Contractors,

Suppliers of Waterproof Garments,

all kinds of Head Wears,

metal buttons etc.

FOR ALL YOUR REQUIREMENTS OF HOSIERY GOODS SUCH AS

Jerseys, Socks, Stockings,
Gloves, Vests, Hosetops etc.

PLEASE CONTACT

The Swadeshi Mfg. Syndicate Ltd.

HIGH CLASS HOSIERY MANUFACTURERS
GOVERNMENT & MILITARY CONTRACTORS
CIVIL LINES, LUDHIANA

Tele { Gram : "SYNDICATE"
Phone : 46

DALMIA CEMENT

THE BRAND OF QUALITY

USED EXTENSIVELY IN CENTRAL &
STATE GOVERNMENTS PROJECTS

BOTH BIG & SMALL

DALMIA CEMENT

HAS ESTABLISHED A REPUTATION FOR QUALITY AND DURABILITY



Other quality products :

Insulators

Refractories

Sanitary Wares (Highly glazed)

Stoneware Pipes (for underground drainage)

Reinforced Cement Concrete Pipes



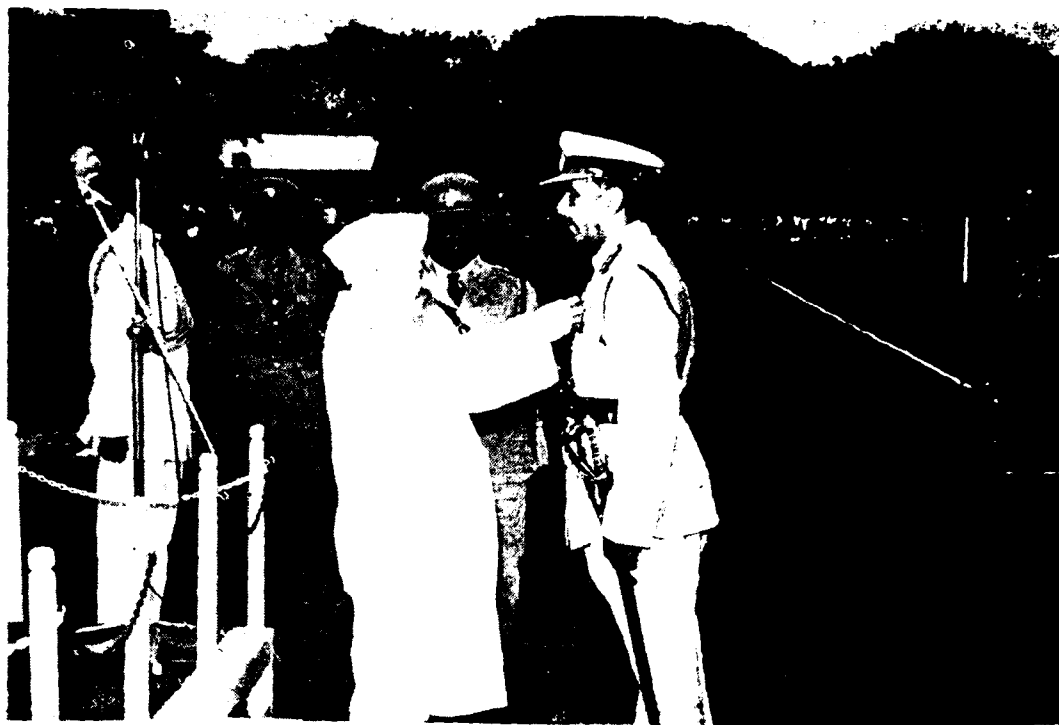
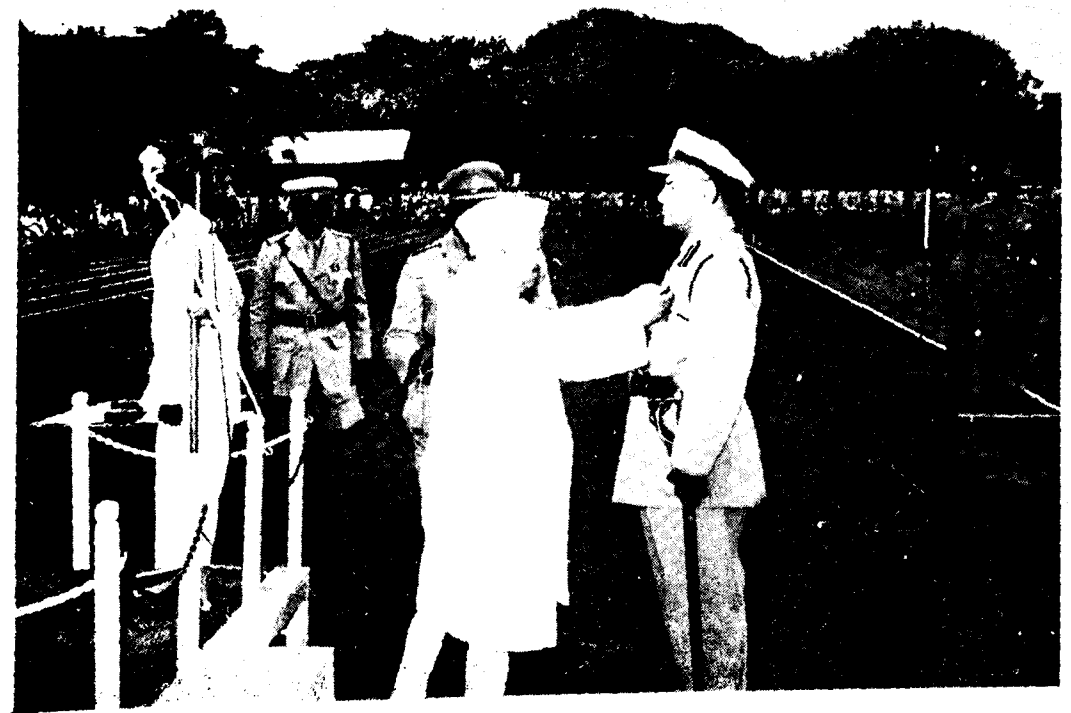
Dalmia Cement (Bharat) Limited

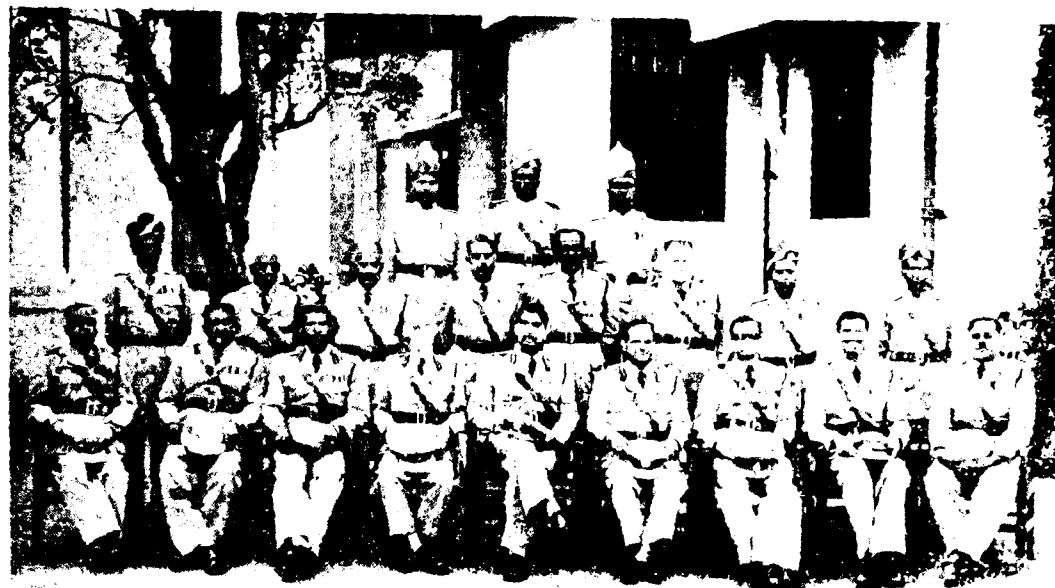
DALMIAPURAM

(Tiruchirapalli District)

Managing Agents :

M/s. Hari Brothers (Private) Limited New Delhi





from a little child or of a cycle or even a burglary? The film shows that the machinery of Law and Order is geared for instant action. By adopting the simple device of introducing a newly arrived villager in Madras city to the emergency police consequent to the loss of his purse, the happy result of taking a common man from one investigation to another thereby making him appreciate the services rendered by the police to the public has been achieved. Incidentally, this 35 m.m. documentary which is now being shown in the various theatres in Madras City and in districts has proved to be a box-office hit.

On the morning of the 31st August, 1959, a very solemn ceremony took place at the office of the Inspector-General of Police, Madras when a 15 foot granite memorial column surmounted by a stupa was unveiled by Sri W.R.S. Sathianathan, I.C.S., Chief Secretary to Government of Madras. It was fitting and proper that while the Madras Police rejoiced in having overcome the challenge of a hundred years they should commemorate those officers and men who had laid down their lives at the call of duty during that period. Wreaths were laid at the foot of the memorial by the Home Minister, Senior officers of the Police Department, by the Consular Corps and by a little boy, the son of a constable who had been killed on duty. In unveiling the memorial, the Chief Secretary stated that he had no doubt that those who had lost their lives on duty will serve as a lasting example of courage and devotion to duty to our police force.

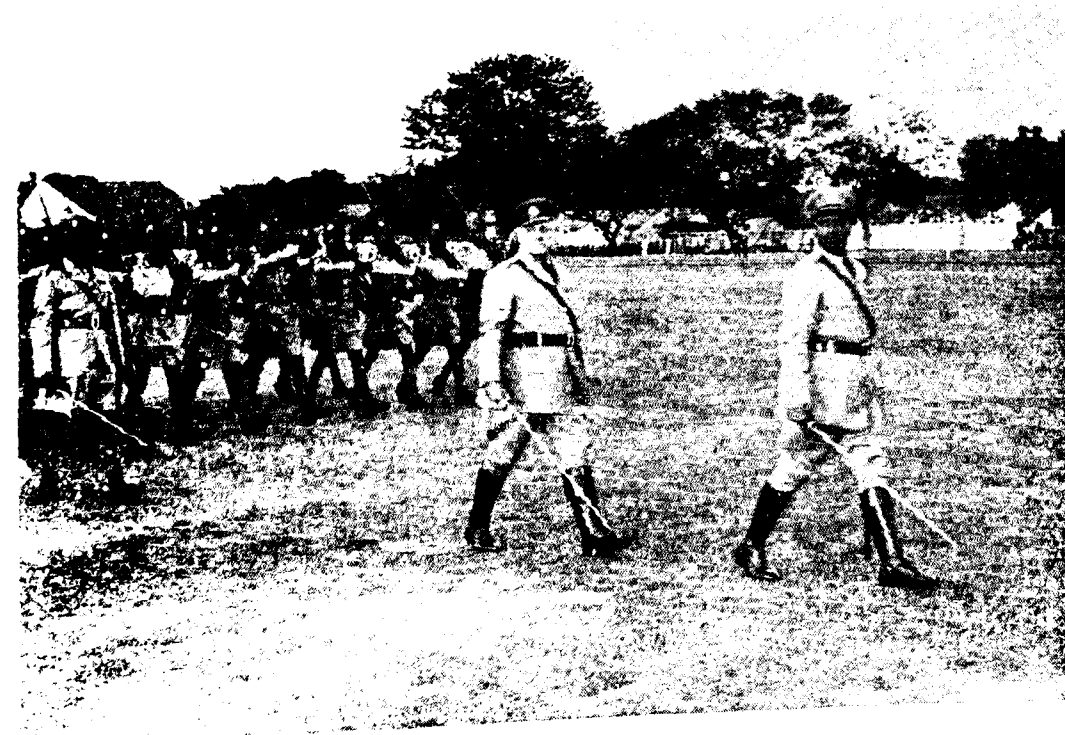
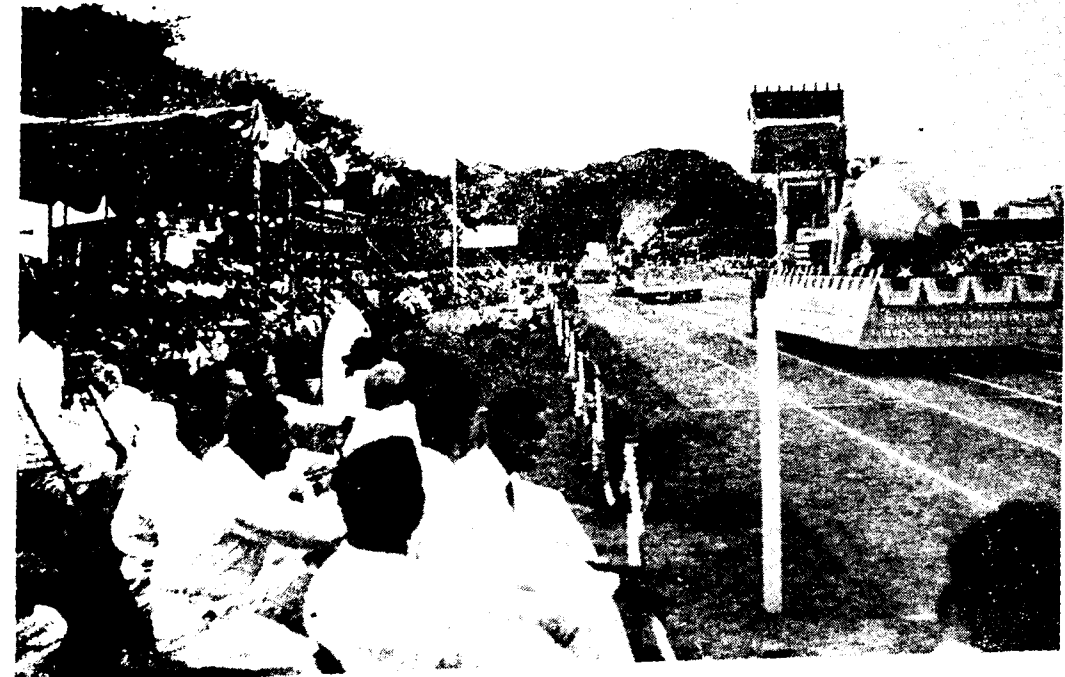
On the evening of the 31st August a very colourful and impressive pageant, consisting of 14 trailers drawn by tractors, depicting very graphically the various stages of development of the Madras Police during the last hundred years was conducted through 7½ miles of busy thoroughfare in Madras City ending with a review on the Marina by Sri S. K. Chettur, I.C.S., Home Secretary to Government. The

pageant was welcomed at a number of places on the route by the public who had put up decorated arches and banners. The pageant made a tremendous impact on the public and thousands of citizens gathered at all vantage points to cheer the police. What caught the imagination of the public was the last trailer which carried a Rocket with two constables in space suits ready to start on a flight to Mars to investigate a murder case in the year 2059. The public were also impressed by the brilliant illuminations of the Police Headquarters and of all police stations in the City.

On the first and second of September 1959, the State Police Sports were conducted at the Police Stadium at Egmore, Madras. At these Sports gold medals were presented to the winners of the essay competition in English and Tamil on the "Ideal Police Man" to which all College students were eligible. Silver medals were also awarded to police constables who gave the best suggestions for improving police work.

On the 3rd and 4th September, 1959 a brilliant Tattoo was conducted by 600 men of the Madras State Police at the Corporation Stadium, Madras. The first performance was inaugurated by Sri V. K. Krishna Menon, the Union Defence Minister. There were 19 items on the Tattoo programme, a special feature being the importation of Carnatic vocal and instrumental music into several of the items. The show was so popular that thousands of people had to be turned away for want of accommodation. By public demand the Tattoo was extended for two more days, the Stadium being packed to capacity on both days. It has now been decided to film the Tattoo so that it can be shown to larger audiences.

On the 5th September, 1959, a splendid ceremonial parade was conducted at the Police Stadium at Egmore, Madras, at which the Governor of Madras Sri Bishnuram Medhi, took the salute. At this parade, a widow of a police



constable and Sri S. Balakrishna Shetty, the Inspector-General of Police, and Sri O. L. Burrell, Deputy Inspector-General of Police were awarded the President's Police and Fire Service Medals. Other officers and men were awarded Police medals for distinguished service. The Governor paid a tribute to the fine record of selfless and efficient service rendered by the Madras Police during the last hundred years.

The week long Centenary celebrations were brought to a close on the 7th September, 1959 at a public meeting which was addressed by the Chief Minister, Sri K. Kamaraj, the Home Minister, Sri M. Bhaktavatsalam, and the Finance Minister Sri C. Subramaniam. This was followed by a drama in Tamil with the central theme of greater co-operation between the police and the public. There was a

brilliant cast of Cine stars and the performance was witnessed by a crowd of over 30,000 people.

During the week a series of broadcasts were arranged by the All India Radio, with a view to improve public relations. It is also worthy of note that a number of public spirited men came forward and donated permanent endowments of Rs. 15,000 to 16,000 in order to finance scholarships of at least Rs. 50 per mensem for the children of Policemen who wish to prosecute higher studies. It must be said that these Centenary celebrations have generated a tremendous amount of goodwill on the part of the public towards the Police in Madras State. A heavy responsibility now rests on the latter to consolidate the very favourable position which they now achieved in the matter of Police-Public relations.

He got drunk and he shot her.

Judge : The curse of drink ?

He : I had a fight with my brother-in-law, and I went out and got a drink.

Judge : The curse of drink.

He : Because I kept drinking, I wanted to shoot her. So I went out and got a revolver and went to my mother-in-law's house.

Judge : Oh, the curse of drink ! You were armed and you shot at her.

He : Yes, and I missed her ! The curse of drink !!!

THE CENTENARY SCHOLARSHIP SCHEME

BY

SRI R. M. MAHADEVAN M.A., B.SC., I.P.
Commissioner of Police, Madras

The word 'Freedom' has, in the wake of Independence, yielded place to the word, 'Welfare' and this new word looms large in our present-day thinking. The concern everywhere is for people's welfare, and the word has its echo in the ranks of the police department too.

Welfare in the police department has a great significance. One of the prime needs of a democracy is a good police force, and care and attention to welfare of police families is one of the surest means of getting such a force. Welfare in the police department has a wide compass. It covers good housing, water supply, sanitation, health services and facilities for sport and recreation. Then there is need for augmenting the family incomes through healthy, constructive and gainful occupations, to enable them to have a better standard of living. And finally welfare measures must meet the special needs of women and children, to give each police officer a happy home.

No man would be happier than if his children were given all the opportunities for a higher start in life. The Government of Madras has in its great interest in the welfare of its non-gazetted servants, given their children the concession of free schooling. But it is sad to see frequently police children of great merit unable to prosecute higher studies in Universities or technical institutions for the mere reason that the family finances do not permit them to do so. A start has been made to help such cases with 6 scholarships every year from the Madras Police Benevolent Fund, a fund to which every member of the police force subscribes. But this is hardly adequate.

While exploring the possibility of extending the scholarship facilities, suggestion came from several quarters that several public spirited

people would perhaps gladly offer such scholarships as a gesture towards the department on the occasion of its Centenary. When this suggestion was placed before several people, the idea caught on very rapidly and in a short time a large number of generous offers of scholarships have been made. In view of these offers a scheme has been finalised whereby those interested could make a lumpsum donation in cash or bonds, or in annual payments, which will finance scholarships of Rs. 50 p.m. per student. Some educational institutions and trusts have offered free studentships. The members of the Madras Police force greatly appreciate the generosity of the donors and convey their gratitude in full measure for their munificent donations.

LIST I

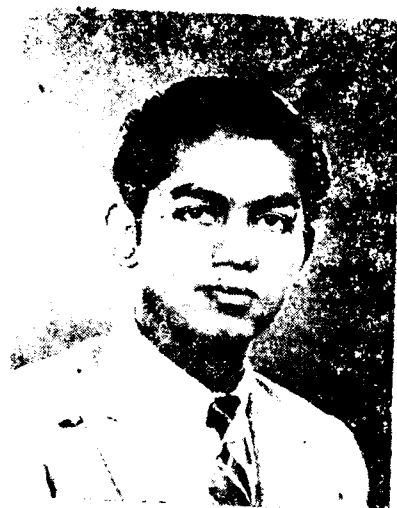
The following is the list of donors:—

Names of donors who have created permanent endowments of Rs. 15,000 - 16,000.



1. Sri A. Appavoo Thevar, of Ukkadai, Tanjore Dt. is a leading Mirasdar. He is

known for his charitable disposition and donation of lands for the Bhoodan Movement. He has also donated large sums of money for various public institutions in Tanjore District. He has donated one scholarship.

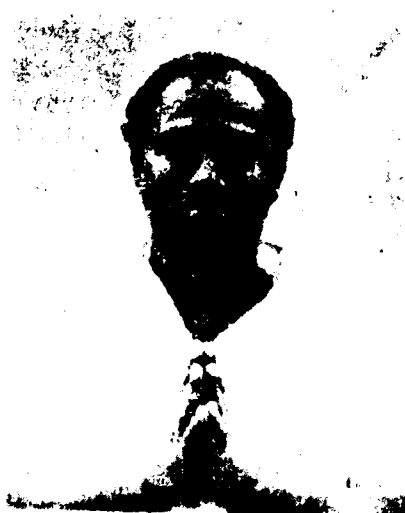


2. *Hariram Sait, Sri T. P. S.* is the Proprietor of T. P. Sokklal Ramsait Factory, Mukkudal, Tirunelveli District, a pioneer cigarette industry in the south. He takes an abiding interest in education and is running a High School. He also built the Mukkudal Hospital buildings and handed it over to the District Board. A Free Reading Room is also being run in memory of his father.

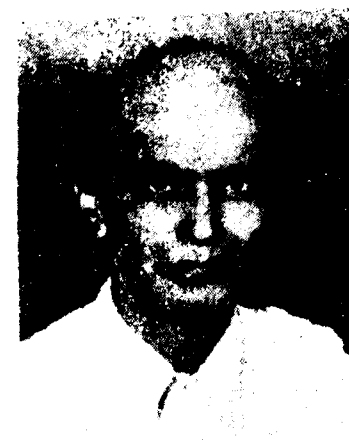


4. *Nagarajan, Sri A. P.* is a renowned script writer in the film industry besides being an actor himself. He has written dialogues and stories for several successful Tamil pictures. He has great appreciation for the work of the police force and has introduced several characters in his films depicting the life of policemen, the most outstanding film being "Thayai Pola Pillai-Noolai Pola Selai".

3. *Muthiah, Sri M. Ct.* son of the late Sri M. Ct. M. Chidambaram Chettiar, is a leading Industrialist and Banker. He is the Chairman of the Indian Overseas Bank Ltd. and the United India Fire and General Insurance Co., besides controlling several other concerns. He is connected with several leading Clubs and Educational Institutions. He is the Trustee of M. Ct. M. Chidambaram Chettiar Memorial Trust and other Charitable Trusts. He has offered a scholarship in the name of "Sri M. Ct. Muthiah Chettiar's Family Trust".



5. *Nagi Reddi, Sri B.* is a well-known film producer and publisher of a national Children's Magazine "Chandamama" in many languages. He owns the Vauhini-Vijaya Studios, which ranks as one of the best film studios in the East.



6. *Naidu, Sri G. D.* is a well-known Industrialist and Educationist of Coimbatore, who needs no introduction. He has endowed a fund with Rs. 55,000 called "The G. D. Naidu Scholarship Endowment Fund at Coimbatore" for the education of the children of poor and deserving Constables of Coimbatore District.



7. *Sivaji Ganesan, Sri* is a top ranking film actor of South India. He has donated large sums of money for many laudable causes like children's welfare, educational institutions etc.



8. *Tyagaraja Mudaliar, Sri V. S.* of Vadamangalam is a leading land-owner and industrialist of Tanjore District. He is the Chairman of the Thiru Arooran Sugars Ltd., and Director of the Central Board and Vice-President of the Local Board of the State Bank of India. He was connected with the administration of the Tirupathi Devasthanam for several years. He is connected with the Coimbatore District.

operative Movement and has donated liberally to medical, educational, religious and other deserving causes. He has endowed a scholarship to be named as "Vadapathimangalam S. Tyagaraja Mudaliar Scholarship".

9. *Thiru Arooran Sugars Ltd.* The Board of Directors have endowed a scholarship in the name Thiru Arooran Sugars Ltd., of which Sri V. S. Tyagaraja Mudaliar is the Chairman.



10. *Venkatapathy Naidu, Sri G. N.* is a leading industrialist of Coimbatore and Managing Director of the Prakash Mills (Private) Ltd., Coimbatore. He has donated one scholarship.



11. *Ramanathan Chettiar, Sri R., M.P.* was Mayor of Madras and also the Sheriff of Madras. He is a Member of the South Indian Chamber of Commerce. He is now a Member of Parliament and is a leading citizen of Madras. He has contributed towards one scholarship.



12. *Karuppiiah Mooppanar, Sri G.* is one of the leading Mirasdars of Tanjore District, who takes keen interest in public and social institutions and has given liberal donations for several charitable causes. He has donated one scholarship.

LIST II.

Names of donors who have undertaken to give annual scholarships permanently



13. *Anantharamakrishnan, Sri S.* is the Chairman of Messrs Simpson & Co. Ltd., Madras. He is a leading industrialist of the country and several important industries are under his efficient management: The 'Mail' a leading English daily, India Pistons, Perkins Diesel, Addison Paints, Simpson & Co. are some of the important concerns under his management. He has donated two scholarships in the name of Simpson & Co.



15. *Devarajulu, Sri G. K.* is Chairman of the South India Mill Owners Association and of the South India Textile Research Association besides being a leading industrialist of Coimbatore. He is the Managing Trustee of the Kuppaswamy Naidu Memorial Trust for Education and Medical Relief which has contributed two scholarships.

16. *Gopalakrishna, Sri K.* is the Managing Director of the Standard Motor Products of India Ltd., Madras. Due to his efforts, Madras State has got this factory to produce medium and small size cars. An industrialist and eminent businessman, he has donated one scholarship under the name "S. M. P. I. Scholarship".

17. *Kasturi & Sons (Private) Ltd.* has contributed a scholarship in the name of the "Hindu". The "Hindu" is a leading English daily newspaper of our State having a large circulation both inside and outside our country.



14. *Chidambaram, Sri M. A.*, following in the footsteps of his father the late Rajah Sri Annamalai Chettiar of Chettinad, is a prominent industrialist and businessman. A patron of the Turf, and a keen sportsman, he has donated two scholarships on behalf of the "South India Corporation (Agencies) Private Limited."



18. *Kothari, Sri D.C., M.A.* of Kothari & Sons is a leading businessman controlling a number of Textile Mills, Tea and Coffee Estates besides being leading Stock and Exchange Brokers. A former Governor of Rotary International, he has donated a scholarship in the name of his father, the late Mr. C. M. Kothari.



19. *Krishna, Sri T. S.*, Managing Director of T. V. Sundaram Iyengar & Sons (Private) Ltd., Madurai, has donated two scholarships on behalf of T. V. Sundaram Iyengar & Sons Limited. Sri T. S. Krishna is an eminent businessman of South India. The passenger and goods transport services of Messrs T. V. S. have earned a well deserved reputation for great efficiency. Sri T. S. Krishna is a member of the Board of Directors of the Life Insurance Corporation of India, the local Board of the State Bank of India and other business concerns.

20. *Loganathan, Sri C. S.* is a partner of Messrs. Tarapore & Co., Engineers and Contractors. He is the Chairman of the Kalinga Tubes Ltd., and the Travancore Cements Ltd., and a Director in the India Cements Ltd., Cauvery & Spinning Weaving Mills Ltd., Tirupathi Cotton Mills Ltd., South India Carbonic Gas Industries Ltd., and the Travancore Rayons Ltd. He is the Managing Director of Essel (P) Ltd. He has contributed one scholarship.



21. *Mahalingam, Sri N. B.Sc., A. M. I. E., M. L. A.* is a leading Industrialist, Transport Operator, Legislator, Journalist, Educationist and philanthropist all in one. He is the moving spirit behind the Polytechnic, the Municipal College and Maternity Hospital at Pollachi and he represents Pollachi Constituency in our Legislature. He has donated a scholarship under the name "Nachimuthu Industrial Association Scholarship".

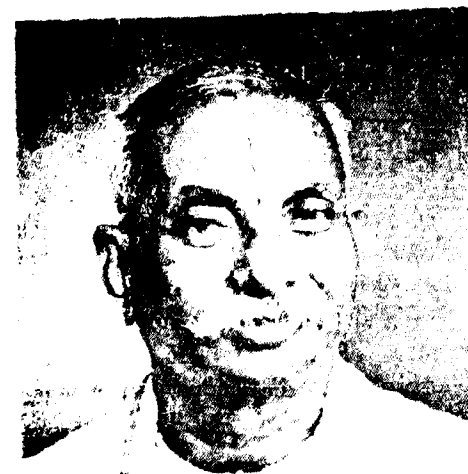


22. *Murugappa Chettiar, Sri A.M.M.* is the Managing Director of T. I. Cycles of India

Ltd., and is connected with a host of other, business and industrial enterprises and he is a member of the All India Council for Technical Education. He has donated a scholarship from the "A. M. M. Charities Trust" and offered to meet tuition fees for one first year student in one of the Alagappa Chettiar Colleges or the Polytechnic at Karaikudi.

23. *Perumal Chetty & Sons, Messrs, Madras*, is a well-known firm in Madras City and their products from Madras Pencil Factory and Hoe & Co., which they control, are well-known all over India. Sri V. Emberumanar of Hoe & Co. is the Sheriff of Madras and a Director on the local Board of the Reserve Bank of India. They have contributed one scholarship in the name of "V. Perumal Chetty & Sons".

24. *Ramalingaswamy, Sri S., B.A., B.L.* is the Secretary of the Raja Serfoji College, Tanjore. An active public worker associated with a number of public and social institutions in Tanjore District, he has donated two scholarships.



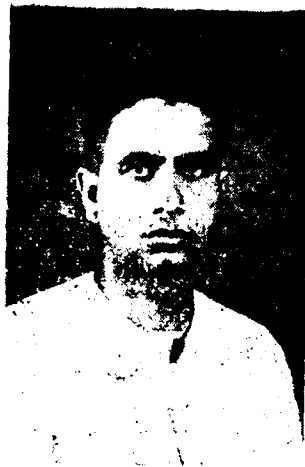
25. *Ramasamy Raja, Sri P. A. C.* is the Founder and Managing Director of Ramco Group of Industries, Rajapalayam, and the

cousin of late Sri P. S. Kumaraswamy Raja, former Chief Minister of Madras and former Governor of Orissa. A widely travelled man, a social worker and a philanthropist, he has instituted the P. A. C. Ramaswamy Raja Educational Charity Trust which has financed several schools, hospitals etc. He has donated one scholarship from the funds of "The P. A. C. Ramaswamy Raja Educational Charity Trust".



26. *Sam, Sri G. N.* is the Managing Director, Sujani Textiles Private Ltd., Coimbatore. He is not only a leading industrialist but a good sportsman, and a writer too, and his travel impressions in his book "Journey to Japan" make excellent reading. He has donated one scholarship on behalf of the Sujani Textiles (Private) Limited.

27. *Sankaralinga Iyer, Sri S. N. N.* is a Director of India Cements Ltd., and a leading Banker and Industrialist from Tirunelveli District. He is the Chairman of the Board of Trustees of the India Cements Educational Trust which has donated three scholarships to be called "The India Cements Educational Trust Scholarships".



28. *Sheik Jalaluddin, Janab S. M. S.* is the Secretary of the Governing Body of the Khader Mohideen College, Adirampattinam, Tanjore District. He has offered three scholarships by reserving 3 seats every year in the college in the names of the founders of the Trust, viz. (1) Late Ahamed Thamby Maricair (2) Late Naina Mohamed Levai Maricair and (3) Late Sheik Salath Sevai Maricair along with their eldest brother Khadir Mohideen Maricair.



29. *Somasundaram Pillai, Sri N.* is a member of the Anbanathapuram Vahiara Charities, Mayuram and Secretary and Correspondent of the A. V. C. College, Mayuram.

He has offered one scholarship towards the education of two students in the A. V. C. College, Mayuram.

30. *Subramania Desiga Swamikal.* His Holiness Sri La Sri Mahasannidhanam of Tiruvavaduthurai Adheenam. The Thiruvavaduthurai Adheenam founded about 500 years ago has been taking a keen interest in bringing out in print fine works on Tamil literature, Philosophy and Religion. The Adheenam has offered an annual grant of Rs. 2,000 towards 3 scholarships in the name of "Thiruvavaduthurai Adheenam".



31. *Sundaram Iyer, Sri K. P.* is the Chairman of the Madras Motors Private Ltd., Easun Engineering Co. Ltd., and the Enfield India Ltd., Tiruvottiyur, and a leading businessman of Madras. He has donated a scholarship to be designated the "Madras Motors Centenary Scholarship".

32. *Tarapore, Sri J. A., B.E., M. I. E.* is the Managing Director and Partner of Messrs Tarapore & Co., who are reputed

Building Contractors, not only in the State of Madras but also of India. They have undertaken construction of large dams and have been responsible for the construction of the Tungabhadra Dam, the Hirakud Dam, etc. It is understood that they are now constructing the Sherawadi Dam in Shimoga District, Mysore State. He is also the Chairman of the Indian Mutual General Insurance Society Ltd., and the South India Carbonic Gas Industries Ltd.



33. *Domodaran, Sri G. R. B. Sc., Elec., B. Sc. Mech (Durham), M. I. E. E. (London),*



34. *Raja Sir Muthiah Chettiar of Chettinad* a prominent and well-known industrialist and businessman.

TRAFFIC PLANNING FOR MADRAS CITY

BY

SRI R. M. MAHADEVAN, M.A., B.SC., I.P.,
Commissioner of Police, Madras

In urban society traffic is becoming a greater menace to life and hence a more pressing problem than crime. So far as Madras City at any rate is concerned this is true. Unfortunately what should be everybody's business has a tendency to become nobody's business.

The automobile is here to stay and in places where the authorities concerned and the public fail to co-operate in effectively tackling the problem, the wheeled vehicle will overrun cities and overwhelm them. The overall problem of traffic may never be completely solved but there is no reason why they should not be kept within limits. It is undoubtedly true that some traffic congestion is inevitable in a vital and thriving community but it will become dangerous if it assumes such serious proportions as to interfere with the guiding principles of traffic control, viz. to keep the roads open to distribute curb space fairly and to accommodate pedestrians without harassing any one segment of the population.

The control of traffic is both a thankless task and a serious headache to engineers and enforcement officials alike. More troubles arise from inadequate planning than from any other single cause. In Madras City itself we have seen experiment after experiment in controlling traffic, use of drums, side parking, centre parking and the like. What has so far been attempted strikes me as being only palliatives of doubtful value. The world over where density of traffic is high, specialised planning agencies are now playing an increasing part in regulating and controlling traffic. In comparison, the agency for Madras City

appears outmoded. What has been attempted is the day-to-day control of traffic without any serious planning for the future. The existing agency which might have suited an age when there was no real automotive traffic problem and when traffic planning was relegated to a minor place in street management, is woefully inadequate to-day. By the time most communities became aware that free flowing traffic was an essential to sound social progress as an adequate water supply or sewage system, cars were choking roads and causing terrific traffic problems. The pattern of Madras City was more or less established well before the advent of the motor vehicle and studies of modern city traffic have disclosed the depressing fact that the adoption of corrective measures is complicated by the existing road pattern designed for the horse and buggy. The only roads which can at all be considered as fairly modern with reasonable capacity to hold the traffic are the Marina, Mount Road and Poonamallee High Road, particularly after the exit of the Tramways. The capacity of the Mount Road has however been narrowed to some extent by the medial strips, which appear to have been built more with a view to beautifying the place rather than to meeting increased road demands, resulting from larger number of automobiles, increasing size of vehicles and increasing population.

Broadly speaking, the traffic problem is divided into what are called the 3 Es—Engineering, Enforcement and Education. There has to be a skilful blending of the 3 Es to solve the problem because emphasis only on one phase leads to shortcomings in others. It is

generally accepted however that a slightly greater emphasis has to be placed on traffic engineering in order to provide for the ever increasing volume of automobile traffic. In this we can draw from the experience of highly motorised countries. It was for the exchange of such ideas that an International Road Safety Congress was held in 1958 in Copenhagen. The ECAFE Traffic Seminar now being held at Bombay has the same objective.

The first lesson to be learnt from the experience of highly motorised countries is the need for a highly trained Engineering Cell to be in charge of Traffic planning for the present and future.

The manner in which roundabouts and medial strips have been constructed in the past and which appear as anachronisms to-day only serve to highlight the need for specially qualified engineers to be in charge. It is only recently also that the Highways Research Station is conducting surveys in a scientific manner on traffic problems.

It is necessary that the Traffic Engineering Cell and the Research Engineers work in close co-ordination. At present the City Corporation Engineers attend to traffic improvements in addition to their other multifarious duties with the result that delay occurs. The need therefore for a separate Engineering Cell is of paramount importance to-day.

A still bigger obstacle that has to be overcome is that of finance to cover new traffic projects. The time has come when traffic projects should not be shelved on grounds of financial stringency. Madras City is growing in importance, the population is increasing by leaps and bounds and it is estimated that since the last census, the population has increased by 4 lakhs bringing it to the region of 2 millions. The Harbour is now under a 16 crore project which would mean more ships calling and discharging cargo which will result in a further increase in traffic. Ever so many industries, main or ancillary, are cropping up

in and around Madras City as industrialists apparently do not believe in the policy of dispersal of industries. On the arterial roads of the City are springing up skyscrapers. All this will add to the already heavy traffic and unless we plan for the future, we will soon find ourselves in serious difficulties by way of traffic accidents and irksome delays.

I feel that a substantial amount, say a crore of rupees, should be set aside by the Government of Madras in the first instance for traffic development. In making this suggestion, I have purposely ignored any contribution which the Corporation, Highways Department or the Government of India may make. The Corporation has been repeatedly pressing Government for additional grants even for the proper maintenance of the City roads. Constructions of roundabouts and minor traffic project are undertaken by the Corporation only when ex-gratia grants are provided by Government. Their capacity to make any contribution appears doubtful. The Highways Department may be able to find some monies or get grants from the Government of India Road Fund but the bulk of the amount may have to be met by the Government of Madras in the interests of its Capital City.

In former years proposals for improving traffic conditions usually emanated from the Commissioner of Police. Such proposals were dealt with in a routine fashion and most of them floundered on the bedrock of finance. In 1959 Government constituted a Committee of officials and non-officials consisting of the Secretary, Home Department, as President and the Commissioner of Police, Mayor of Madras, Corporation Engineer, Highways Research Engineer and two or three non-officials as members. The purpose of this Committee was to put up to Government suggestions for approval and proposals for improvement of traffic conditions. This Committee has been doing substantial work and was a definite improvement on the previous procedure under which the Commissioner of Police alone was

responsible for submitting proposals. The Committee is however handicapped in that it cannot put up proposals which involve an expenditure of even a lakh of rupees. It is therefore my humble suggestion that once proposals are sent by the Traffic Sub-Committee, they should be referred to a High-Powered Committee of Ministers which could meet say once a quarter and after examining the proposals, sanction immediate grants from the Core Fund and direct the Engineering Cell to execute the works after observing the usual formalities regarding tenders, etc.

To achieve reasonably good motor roads where the personal injury and fatality rates is the minimum and where traffic moves smoothly and reasonably fast, they should be built with restricted access, dual carriage-ways and fly over junctions. Fly over junctions are no doubt expensive but if they could be constructed, there is little doubt that a very significant march would have been made in the solution of traffic problems.

Even in the case of the existing roads, there is considerable scope for widening them. Most of the arterial roads in Madras City would lend themselves to widening, if only the Corporation lights could be removed to a point behind the pedestrian walk. Even otherwise, the Corporation lights throw no light on the pedestrian pavements which are besides badly maintained and these two factors induce the pedestrian to take to the roadway. The lighting system in the City is for the most part by underground cable and to shift the lights will no doubt be expensive but it cannot be avoided if the road is to be widened. It may also be necessary to reduce the width of the pedestrian walks in areas where there is not much pedestrian traffic. I have examined the City roads with a view to the available scope for widening and I was most heartened to find that a substantial widening is possible; it is indeed surprising why this has not been undertaken till date. Arterial roads like the Mount Road,

Poonamallee High Road, Marina, Subash Chandra Bose Road, Edward Elliotts Road, Nungambakkam High Road, Tyagarayanagar High Road, Wall Tax Road could with alterations provide a much wider carriage way.

The width of the pedestrian walks varies considerably. Pedestrian walks are as much as 15-20 feet wide at some places on Mount Road itself. In important shopping centres pedestrian traffic will no doubt be high but a maximum width of 6-8 feet should be sufficient. In a few places like the Central and Mount Road it may be necessary to provide for bigger pedestrian walks but by and large I do not think the maximum width of the pedestrian walk need be more than 6-8 feet. The width of a pedestrian walk can be easily determined by a simple mathematical formula after taking a census of pedestrians using such walks. On some roads it may be necessary to restrict pedestrian walks to only one side, in order to increase the capacity of the road. Pedestrian walks on one side become inevitable, where permanent obstructions such as houses, shops, etc. stand in the way of widening the carriage way. It is true that, in places like Bombay, a whole row of buildings has been demolished in order to increase the capacity of the road but such a proposal would be expensive and the one crore fund that I have proposed would be inadequate.

The Marina, Mount Road, Poonamallee High Road and Subash Chandra Bose Road, I envisage, should be widened to permit two lanes of traffic to pass in each direction, i.e. 4 lanes in all. Unless 4 lanes of traffic are provided on these major arterial roads, congestion is bound to overtake us sooner or later. Where bus stops are to be provided leeways or recessed parking should be provided for. This would mean that, in several places, the existing bus shelters will have to be lifted and repositioned. The idea is that bus stops should not interfere with the free flow of traffic along

both the lanes on each side. Slow moving traffic such as hand-drawn rickshaws, bullock carts and the like, will of course upset the efficiency of the above suggestions. For instance, it is a common sight in Madras for a cart to pull up an incline in a meandering manner as it is easier to negotiate the road that way. I think the time has come when it would be necessary to legislate for banning the movement of all slow moving traffic excepting cycles in Madras City. It is also an affront to human dignity in the year 1960 to have men drawing vehicles like draught animals. In order that owners of such vehicles may not be put to too much inconvenience and with a view to providing time for labour employed in drawing or driving such vehicles to find alternative employment, the ban could be brought into force in say two years. The two year period should however be firmly fixed and no extension should be granted. If slow moving traffic is removed from the roads of Madras and the capacity of the road is increased, traffic will move more smoothly than it does to-day. The fact is that today the roads are unable to carry the load owing to a marked increase in the width of buses, lorries and contemporaneous increase in pedestrian traffic out of all proportion to the diminutive size of the roads. Further, on arterial roads there should be no cross-current turning traffic; the motorist who wants to turn round should do so only at the nearest roundabout or automatic signal. This would incidentally prevent taxis and auto-rickshaws moving round on these roads in circles searching for custom, which is a common sight to-day.

Pedestrians should be allowed to cross these arterial roads only by sub-ways; so far as Mount Road at any rate is concerned, a 3 radial underground sub-ways at Round Tana is an urgent necessity. These arterial roads should also have pavement guard railings throughout to prevent pedestrians from getting

on to the main road. On Mount Road, sub-ways would also be necessary to cross from Buhari Hotel to Dams Road and one from Simpson & Co. to Rajaji Hall side. The Round Tana island requires complete remodelling; in order to increase the width of the road here, a part of the Rajaji Hall compound should be acquired so that the carriage way on that section would be considerably increased from Durbar Restaurant up to Rajaji Hall entrance and infiltration would be possible into Triplicane Road. This newly acquired area could also serve as a parking area for motorists who come for shopping in this section.

On the Poonamallee High Road, sub-ways would be necessary, one connecting Buhari Hotel with the Moore Market, one the Central Station with General Hospital and the third connecting say the Nurses Quarters with the General Hospital. These are routes which carry very heavy traffic and when vehicles are stopped as now for permitting pedestrians to cross, a lot of confusion is created; the position will become more difficult when the proposed automatic signal is installed at Central Station in place of the now manually operated signal. On the Marina, sub-ways would be necessary one at the Pycrofts Junction with the Marina, one near the Widows Home, one opposite the University Buildings, connecting up near the statue of the Triumph of Labour and the fourth connecting the pedestrian walk opposite the Mahatma Gandhi's statue to a point near the Inspector-General's Office. On the Subash Chandra Bose Road, fortunately all shops are on one side till one approaches the Corporation Fruit Market. Sub-ways would be necessary at this point and near the High Court buildings connecting up with Armenian Street. It must be remembered in this connection that the Marina will be carrying an enormous amount of traffic especially on account of the development of the Harbour and fortunately an overbridge has already been

undertaken at the Beach Level Crossing. The Corporation is taking action to increase the carriage way of the Marina by knocking off the pedestrian walk near the Q.M.C. side right up to Widows' Home. Apparently the Corporation feels that cars could be parked in this area but I am opposed to this idea. I do not think that cars should be allowed to park on the Marina; instead they should be parked on a road which should be constructed near the seashore and behind the Lovers Path. The Sir Mahomed Ismail plan for the beautification of the Marina has provided for this and the Corporation have already constructed part of the road from the Iron Bridge up to the Marina Restaurant. This road should be extended right up to the All India Radio. From the point of view of road and traffic engineering, it is advisable that the carriage way of road should, as far as possible be uniform but the Marina road narrows down considerably between the All India Radio and the Oceanic Hotel. A large number of schools are located in this area and it has been necessary to restrict the speed of vehicles in this section. In view however of residential houses on both sides in this area, it may not be possible to increase the carriage way unless compounds and buildings are acquired at an enormous cost. If the road behind the Lovers Path could be extended and made to join near the Oceanic Hotel, it may help to ease the congestion to some degree as by the time the heavy traffic on the Marina reaches this point, some of it could be diverted by the Luz Church Road by connecting up the foreshore road with Luz Church Road near the Cathedral. At this point also a sub-way is necessary for allowing pedestrians to cross over from across the junction to the Archbishop's house especially for those proceeding to the beach.

Even the arterial roads with their fair lanes of traffic may not be able to bear the traffic in the foreseeable future and a suggestion was made by Sri S. K. Chettur, Secretary, Home

Department that fly over ways should be constructed on the Mount Road, Marina, Poonamallee High Road and on Subash Chandra Bose Road to meet the increasing traffic. Although such roads will prove a permanent long term solution, the cost of construction would unfortunately be considerable. An alternative to this is the construction of a parallel road to Mount Road. This road could run more or less parallel to the Railway Lines and could be reserved as an express way for heavy traffic. The road could start from Kathipara junction and connect up to Chintadripet Level Crossing.

Most modern cities have ring roads for heavy transport which thus avoids running through the busy crowded roads in the hearts of the towns. It would be worthwhile examining the possibility of such a road for Madras City commencing from the northern point—Basin Bridge—and connecting say New Avadi Road, Poonamallee High Road, Kathipara junction, Elliot Beach Road, South Beach Road and First Line Beach. This would practically serve the purposes of a ring road for Madras City.

At all roundabout and automatic signals, infiltration to the left should be permitted. At present this is not possible at any of the automatic signals for want of sufficient carriage way and as a result there is unnecessary holding up of traffic which could otherwise be diverted to the left. When infiltration is permitted, it has to be ensured that there are no blind corners and for this purpose acquisitions are inevitable. The pedestrian crossings should be at a distance from the actual junction.

Reference was made earlier about the traffic roundabouts which had been constructed in the past and which, it is now felt, are anachronisms. I refer to the islands at Gemini, Spencer's Roundabout, Buhari, at the junction of Eldams Road and T'nagar Road, the roundabout at the junction of Mowbrays Road and Luz Church Road, the Round Tana, etc. The

constructions of traffic islands has to be done by an engineer who has done some specialisation in this subject and the engineer who is selected to be in charge of the Engineering Cell should be deputed to foreign countries for this purpose. It will also be necessary to take traffic census at these areas in order to determine the size of the roundabout, curvature and the like, taking of course into consideration the increased wheel-base of present-day vehicles and their weaving radii.

To revert to the Mount Road, it is unfortunate that the carriage way of this road has been reduced very considerably by the provision of medial strips. Such medial strips carrying flowering plants may help to beautify the place but are certainly not in consonance with modern traffic engineering principles. The fact is that although the medial strip might not be more than 1 foot in width, vehicles have necessarily to play an extra foot or two on either side away from this medial strip to avoid the risk of contact and all this reduces the carriage way considerably. I feel that sooner or later these medial strips should be removed. As a matter of fact, the police also experimented with barrels but it was observed that with the removal of barrels, traffic seemed to adjust itself much better. The purpose will be well served by a central demarcation line, which could be provided by domes of 2" height and suitably painted. The other lines for lanes could be painted on the ground. As already stated, medial strips serve more as obstructions than any useful purpose. Similarly trees have been planted on the road sides and have attained considerable height and although such trees provide shade and lend beauty to the City, it may be found necessary in several places, especially on Poonamallee High Road, to cut these trees in order to increase the carriage way and to avoid the hazards of traffic caused by their shadow. Madras City is said to combine both the urban and rural aspects, the

latter aspect being no doubt due to the magnificent shade-giving trees found all over the City but one has to pay the price for the industrialisation and commercialisation of a town and trees, especially those which interfere with the successful solution of the traffic problems of a busy city, have to be sacrificed; trees of moderate size can be replanted after widening the road more suitably.

Lighting of roads is another specialised study which the Engineer in charge of the Engineering Cell should specialise in and it is hoped that with the repositioning of the Corporation street lights, action will be taken to ensure that the roads are adequately lit. If roads are adequately lit as in Calcutta, the use of dazzling headlights could be banned. There are several roads such as the Nungambakkam High Road which are practically steeped in darkness. The Corporation street lights with low wattage bulbs are scattered over long distances serving little or no purpose whatsoever.

Other bottlenecks which promote traffic congestion are the narrow bridges in the City. These bridges were constructed during the days of the horse and buggy and have outlived their purpose. The bridges in Wallajah, Nungambakkam, Harris Road, Chintadripet, Central Station, Triplicane, Edward Elliotts Bridge near the Office of the Inspector-General of Police and the one near the Mylapore Post Office have to be completely modernised allowing for a carriage way of not less than 40—50 feet. At these points it would also be desirable to have separate foot bridges for pedestrian traffic. The need for widening these bridges and for providing separate foot bridges for pedestrian traffic was brought before the Traffic Sub-Committee but, in view of the cost involved, the Committee has not seriously tackled the problem; this is one of the reasons which prompted me to suggest that there should be a high-powered Committee comprising of Ministers which could meet periodically to

With the best compliments of

STANVAC

The Name that stands for Progress

**IMPROVE
YOUR STANDARD**

WITH

FLAX GOODS

Flax is the world's strongest
natural fibre and Flax goods are
today manufactured in India only
by us

FLAX FIRE HOSE

(Shrunk & Burnetised)

"VARUNA"



Bursting pressure 600 lbs. per sq.
inch • conforms to Government
Specification No. G/Misc/57C •
Approved by Insurance Associa-
tion of India.

FLAX DELIVERY HOSE

Conforming to the Government
Specification No. G/Misc/58C.

**FLAX THREADS, TWINS &
CORDS**

For Leather Industry, Sports
Goods Industry & Textile
Industry, For Heavy Textile
Fabrication, Sack Sewing,
Fishing Net, Upholstery, Book
Binding, Packing, etc., etc.

FLAX CANVAS &

TARPAULINS

Of unusual strength and durability
Tarpaulins fully Waterproof,
Rotproof, made to actual sizes
with eyelets & corner pieces.
Stitched with strongest FLAX
threads. Twice as strong &
durable as cotton paulins.



COTTON & "FLAXOCOT"
(Cotton Flax Mix) **CANVAS
& TARPAULINS**

Admirable for Civil Military use
"FLAXOCOT" a speciality
in strength and pliability.

JAYSHREE TEXTILES LTD

RISHRA :: WEST BENGAL

examine the suggestions of the Traffic Sub-Committee and take on the spot decisions instead of allowing the proposal go through the usual channels which occasion delay and possibly cold storage. If a ministerial Committee could sanction the grants under the suggested one crore fund, the Engineer-in-charge could call for tenders and immediately get down to the execution of the job.

The Traffic Sub-Committee also examined the question whether it would not be possible to decrease the density of traffic on the Mount Road and Poonamallee High Road by providing for mofussil bus stands near the Government Poultry Farm and Khushaldas Gardens respectively. In taking a decision to this effect, the Sub-Committee felt that it would not only ease traffic conditions on these arterial roads but would also help in easing the congestion at the existing bus stand behind Annamalai Manram. If, on the other hand, the capacity of the roads could be increased as suggested by widening the roads or if the alternative route running parallel to Mount Road is constructed to carry heavy transport such as lorries, the proposal to provide new mofussil bus stands could be shelved, thereby avoiding the inconvenience which passengers coming from the mofussil will have to undergo in finding other means of transport from the mofussil bus stand to the city.

In regard to the suggested remodelling of certain roundabouts, the modern trend is to replace roundabouts by automatic signals wherever the volume of traffic justifies it. This is particularly necessary if four lanes of traffic are provided on the arterial roads, as otherwise the two line traffic will have to merge at the roundabouts into single file; it would be difficult and dangerous for the two lanes of traffic to negotiate a bend separately keeping to their respective lanes, even though the lanes may be clearly demarcated on the road. Also if two lanes of traffic are permitted to negotiate

the roundabouts, provision has to be made for a third lane of traffic which infiltrates from the left at these intersections.

There is yet the problem of stray cattle on roads with fast moving traffic. Few people realise the enormous amount of work that the police have to put in order to keep stray cattle off the road. Admittedly the work of seizing stray cattle is a most irksome job for the policeman. Apart from the hazards of rounding up such stray cattle for even cows have horns, policemen in uniform consider this work somewhat demeaning; nevertheless the police have been undertaking this work and impounding such cattle. The problem is however a never ending one for although the cattle may be impounded for a short time, they are back in circulation sooner or later. There is also the problem of temple cattle and even policemen can be superstitious and may be disinclined to impound temple cattle for fear of divine punishment. At one time there was a proposal to remove such temple cattle to a distance of 20 to 30 miles from the City and left in places where there was sufficient water and grazing pastures. The proposal was however dropped, as there was considerable public opposition both through the press and through the medium of letters. For the most part the pinjrapoles are unable to accommodate any more cattle. The management of such pinjrapoles are also reluctant to take on healthy animals and in the final analysis it is the poor policeman who does this unpleasant job of impounding stray cattle from day to day, fully aware that it is an unending task. A stage is bound to come when keeping cattle within the City limits would have to be banned as in Bombay. If the dairy farms which are now being opened under grants-in-aid are established on the outskirts of the City and if they are to meet the milk requirements of the City, the banning of cattle within the City limits could be resorted to without much inconvenience to the public.

There are other traffic problems of a minor nature which are being tackled by the Police. There is the problem of glaring headlights and the Traffic Sub-Committee have advocated that the top half of the headlight should be completely shaded. One school feels that the shading of the top half of the lights is insufficient and recommends that adequate dipping arrangements should be provided in every vehicle. It is easy to insist on all vehicles running in the City providing half shades for the lamps but the enforcement of dipping arrangements is difficult; for this reason the Traffic Sub-Committee decided on the former course. But the easiest solution would be to ban altogether the use of headlights as in Bombay and Calcutta as mentioned earlier in this report, but a precondition is that the Corporation should adequately light the city roads.

There is also the problem of unnecessary hooting of electric horns. A prominent E.N.T. Surgeon strongly advised banning the installation of double Bosch horns in motor vehicles, as they have an extremely high frequency and as their piercing sound is actually reported to have damaged the tympanic membranes of several individuals. In Calcutta the use of electric horns has been completely prohibited. My own view is that if proper pedestrian walks are provided and are maintained in good condition and guard railings are provided throughout the City and if the pedestrians could be trained to a better road sense and to avoid jay walking, Madras could fall in line with other cities and have its traffic moving along quietly without the use of electric horns. The City would be a quieter and healthier place to live in when the use of electric horns can be prohibited consistent with safety.

It has been suggested earlier that on arterial roads there should be sub-ways to permit of pedestrians crossing over from one side to the other. On roads which do not have heavy traffic, the construction of sub-ways would be

expensive but instead, lighted belisha beacons with clear indications of the zebra crossing on the road itself could be installed. For this purpose the Engineer-in-charge could select the places where provision should be made for such equipment in consultation with the Commissioner of Police.

Already skyscrapers are being built along the two busiest thoroughfares in Madras City, viz., on Mount Road and extension to the Poonamallee High Road, viz., the Subash Chandra Bose Road. When the Corporation licensed construction of these structures it was unfortunate that the police were not consulted as they would certainly have insisted on minimum parking space being provided in such buildings. When a new theatre for instance is constructed, the police insist on a minimum parking space for about 50 to 60 cars. For a building of the L. I. C. type there should have been provision for atleast 200 cars but although the building has been put into commission there is no parking space for even a single car within the precincts of the building itself. It would be advisable that the opinion of the Commissioner of Police is always taken before sanction is accorded for the construction of buildings which will affect traffic problems. The answer to this in some cases at least appears to be to make provision for underground parking or the ground floor should be reserved for parking, in all cases where there is insufficient compound for keeping vehicles. The lack of adequate parking facilities in the City, for vehicles is being more and more felt today. Parking has become another critical urban traffic question and it may be necessary to introduce a paying system with parking meters for permitting vehicles to tarry in a place. Private contractors or the Corporation could also come forward to provide garage facilities on hire in the more congested business areas of Madras City.

It may also be necessary to acquire open spaces off arterial roads for parking areas. If

four lanes of traffic are to move on the arterial roads, no central or curb parking can be permitted. Even temporary stoppage near curbs should be prohibited. It is therefore essential that suitable parking squares are immediately acquired at convenient distances for parking purposes.

Stress has been laid on the need for a road widening campaign, which should be urgently undertaken if we are to avoid the city traffic from getting a stranglehold on the community. The main suggestions in this report are that a new agency should be created for dealing with traffic engineering, the provision of a special road traffic fund and the constitution of a High Powered Ministerial Committee to take prompt decisions. There has been no considered traffic planning in the past and we have to begin planning from now on not only for present-day traffic but also for the ever increasing traffic of the future. What has been done in the past is at best of the nature of unpraised palliatives. The enormity of the traffic problem will be appreciated if one goes to the Marina on a Sunday for instance and sees the very large number of vehicles that collect there. Although the Marina is a broad enough road, the road is unable to cope with the present-day volume of traffic. The traffic staff who have been allocated to controlling traffic in other parts of the City are diverted to the Marina on holidays and in spite of this traffic does not move as smoothly as it should. If one halts at the Pycrofts junction, one could hear the criticisms levelled against the police for no fault of theirs. The policemen controlling pedestrian traffic at the Round Tana Roundabout undergo the same experience. An actual experiment was conducted at the Round Tana during rush hours and if pedestrian were allowed to cross over for two minutes at Round Tana, vehicular traffic choked the Mount Road as far as the eye could see both towards Rajaji Hall side and towards Buhari Hotel side. In order

to get the traffic moving freely again, it took another 12 minutes which in effect meant that pedestrians could not be allowed to cross over again from one side to the other for over 10 minutes. Pedestrians react most adversely to this delay and the policeman at the spot becomes the butt-end of jokes and criticisms. The construction of sub-ways in Round Tana has been suggested earlier and I feel that it should not be postponed any longer. The construction of an arcade or a shopping centre may brook delay but the construction of the sub-ways cannot bear postponement. In this very important shopping centre there is also difficulty for parking of cars. At the moment a makeshift arrangement has been made for allowing some cars to park opposite the Air Lines Hotel. This in turn creates a bottleneck and it is immediately necessary that a portion of the Rajaji Hall compound is acquired not only for increasing the capacity of Mount Road but also for finding adequate parking space. The widening of roads which has been suggested in this note applies not only to the arterial roads but should be extended to other roads throughout the City. Till recently the road from Adyar to Guindy did not even permit of two lanes of traffic, especially with the huge Leyland buses that ply on this road. It is good that the Corporation have recently undertaken to widen this road but the extent to which the road is being widened is insufficient. The Corporation are apparently reluctant to cut down the trees on one side of the road but taking a long view this is a short-sighted policy, particularly as new trees could be planted to serve the purpose. The bridge connecting Gandhinagar to Guindy is also so narrow that even two vehicles cannot cross each other. As already stated no bridge should have a carriage way of less than 40 feet and this is one of the bridges that requires attention. While on the subject of bridges the Marmalong Bridge connecting Saidapet with Guindy is another bottleneck and since there is heavy traffic

especially lorry traffic to the mofussil on this road, this bridge should without delay be reconstructed or modified. The bridge opposite the Saidapet Teachers' College is another narrow bridge requiring immediate attention.

Fortunately roads in Madras City are capable of development and if traffic development is undertaken rightaway, there is no reason why Madras City should not become a model city from the traffic engineering point of view. The work may be phased over a five year or ten year period and a full-time Engineering Cell put on the job, funds being made available as and when required. The amounts spent in foreign countries for traffic engineering and road development run into astronomical figures and the Rs. 1 crore fund suggested here is by comparison negligible. Madras has always been considered a model State from more than one angle and the Madras State will maintain this reputation by undertaking such a traffic development plan, thus forging ahead of other States in India and ahead even of other Eastern countries, barring possibly Singapore where traffic engineering is reported to have developed to a very considerable degree.

The suggestions so far made will apply practically to the entire City excepting for the shopping areas in Broadway, Kothawalhavadi and around where business is heavily concentrated. Trying to solve the traffic problems in this area has been like solving a Chinese puzzle. All the feeder roads leading to the Subash Chandra Bose Road are more in the nature of alleys than roads. The entire area is criss-crossed by lanes and by-lanes and the police have done the best possible in introducing a system on one-way traffic in these lanes and by-lanes and allowing two-way traffic on the broader roads connecting the criss-cross lanes. The only shortcoming on the enforcement side arises on the account of inadequate staff. A larger staff is required to ensure that one-way traffic lanes do not in fact become

two-way lanes in this area. It must be remembered in this connection that the entire strength of the traffic is only 399 and for a City with about one lakh of vehicles of all types and an area of 20 square miles, the staff is woefully inadequate to deal with the various traffic problems that arise. As a matter of fact, for the past two decades there has been an increase of only 56 traffic staff. Proposals have already been sent to the Government for a substantial increase. Unless there is decentralization in this business locality, the area hemmed in by Wall Tax Road, Subash Chandra Bose Road and the First Line Beach Road will always present a problem of the first magnitude to enforcement officials.

Some improvements can be effected by increasing the capacity of the Subash Chandra Bose Road near the vicinity of the Flower Bazaar Police Station. A demolition of the police building here will assist in a smoother movement of traffic, as an automatic signal at the Broadway junction near the Law College Police Station.

Reference has been made earlier to the need for replacement of roundabouts by automatic signals, especially where traffic moves in four lanes. In motorised countries a simple formula has been evolved whereby, if the traffic on the main road exceeds 400 to 500 vehicles per hour, automatic signals are installed in place of roundabouts. On this basis it may be necessary to introduce automatic signals at Gemini Roundabout, Spencer's Roundabout, Round Tana, Central Station, Broadway, at the junction of T. M. Nair Bridge and Poonamallee High Road. An experiment was conducted at the junction of T. M. Nair Bridge and the Poonamallee High Road by installing an automatic signal in the middle of the road; it was found that this automatic signal reduced the carriage way of the Poonamallee High Road with the result that on more than one occasion vehicles dashed against the automatic signal.

Possibly these automatic signals could be suspended at a height of 14 or 15 feet, provided they are easily visible from all approaches to this junction. In installing automatic signals therefore, this point has to be borne in mind viz., that no installation should be put up which would in anyway hinder the free movement of traffic or reduce the carriage way.

In addition to the engineering aspect of the traffic problem so far dealt with, there are two other aspects of the traffic problem, viz., the education and the enforcement angles. In foreign countries a good deal of time and money is spent on the educational aspect. Insurance Companies, Traffic Safety Organizations, Radio, Television, Automobile Associations, Exhibitions, Film, etc., are all put into commission in order to educate the public in regard to their duties so far as traffic is concerned. All these forums serve a very useful purpose in telling the motoring public on Do's and Don'ts but it presupposes an educated public. In Madras City the largest number of drivers is from the semi-illiterate class and therefore their education presents an even more difficult problem. They seem to understand only the language of prosecution and this applies to the State Transport drivers also. Pedestrians who belong to the literate class would of course benefit from propaganda of the types mentioned above. In the City of Madras little has been done in this field but a start is being made. So far as schools are concerned, they have been requested to include in their curriculum traffic education, as the school boy of to-day is the cyclist of to-morrow, the motor-cyclist the day after and the driver three days later. A pamphlet was recently prepared and issued to several drivers; as a next stage, it is now proposed to put up posters at suitable places drawing the attention of drivers and pedestrians to traffic hazards and telling them how to avoid them. For the benefit of cinema going people slides are put up

explaining the code of the road both to motorists and pedestrians. Much more could be done provided funds are made available and Insurance Companies who have a vital stake should be encouraged to come forward with a programme of traffic education. The police propose to lay more emphasis in the future on traffic education.

So far as the enforcement side is concerned, this is no doubt the most effective means of dealing with traffic, as every traffic violator must be taught that whenever he commits an irregularity he would be indicted before a court. This means a more adequate traffic staff, as mentioned earlier in this report. The police could also ensure higher standards by making the drivers' tests more rigorous. They could also insist on medical certificate in regard to satisfactory vision, particularly as automatic signals will be in greater use in the coming days. For the first time, the police are making a scientific study of accidents and collecting statistics, with a view to assess the major causes of accidents, the class of drivers most responsible for accidents, i.e. whether it is the driver of the pleasure car, of the State Transport or of transport vehicles such as lorries, and to ascertain whether accidents are more frequent during day time or night time or during rush hours and also whether particular spots are vulnerable in regard to traffic accidents and if so, whether the underlying cause could be remedied. This type of work has not been undertaken in the past and research staff specially trained for the purpose is needed; deputations of police officers to foreign countries for this purpose will also facilitate researches into such problems.

The availability of drivers has not kept pace with the number of vehicles that are being put on road in order to meet the demand for drivers, high standards have not perhaps been insisted on in the past. It would be helpful if more drivers training schools are started in various

parts of the country and especially in Madras City they could work under the auspices of the Automobile Association of South India.

In order that traffic signals may be uniform throughout the country the Inspector-General of Police who met in conference in Delhi in the year 1956 have decided that the Bombay pattern of traffic signalling should be adopted throughout the country. Traffic constables of Madras City have already undergone the training and after educating the public through the medium of newspapers the new signals will be adopted shortly.

While on the subject of signals, it has to be mentioned that some of the traffic signals in Madras City are somewhat inconveniently placed; for the most part they are grime encrusted, partly hidden and faded and consequently serve more to slow down the traffic than to ease its flow. At present the erection, maintenance etc. of traffic signals is the responsibility of the Corporation. It is suggested that the erection and maintenance should be entrusted to the police, who would ensure better maintenance for the greater efficiency of traffic control.

Conferences on traffic problems are being held at the highest level the world over, President Eisenhower himself having held one in U.S.A. The need for proper planning is also being highlighted by the Traffic Seminar at the ECAFE Session in Bombay now. The ideas contained in this report are not new and would have doubtless suggested themselves to many others. Only there has not so far been a determined effort to boil them down to a scheme of planned development in order to meet the ever growing menace of traffic problems. The purpose of this report is to highlight the need for such planning and execution and the desirability of having a special agency to undertake the work on a phased programme. Any delay in initiating the work will only make the problems more difficult to handle at a later date, meantime causing avoidable hardship to the motoring public and to pedestrians. The Government of India is proposing to encourage low cost vehicles within the means of the middle class and when this proposal comes through, the increase in the number of vehicles in Madras City will grow at a more rapid pace; it would be prudent to anticipate this eventuality and act before the problems, acute in all conscience, get worse.

Passer-by (to motorist at side of road)—“Have a puncture?”
Motorist: “No, thanks, I just had one.”

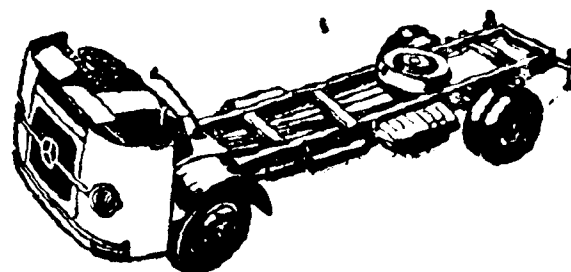
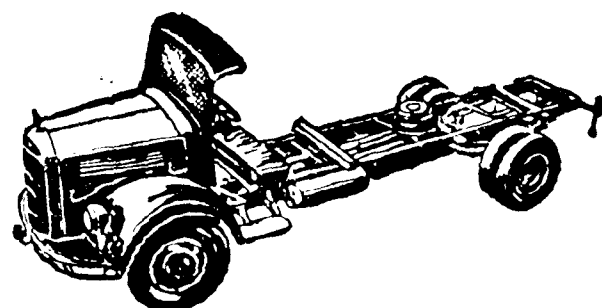


IT'S

TOUGH

POWERFUL

ECONOMICAL



**TATA
MERCEDES
BENZ**

DIESEL BUSES & TRUCKS

V. S. T. MOTORS PRIVATE LTD

MADRAS • SALEM

A NOTE EXPLAINING THE WELFARE SCHEMES OF THE MADRAS STATE POLICE

BY

SRI P. KUPPUSWAMY B.A., B.L., I. P.
D.I.G. of Police, Railways and Armed Police, Madras

Introduction

1. The object of this note is threefold. In the first place it is to inform the officers and men of the various steps taken for the improvement of the general welfare of the men and the progress achieved so far in the State. Though they have at present some idea of the welfare activities undertaken from what they have seen in their own or neighbouring districts, it is necessary that they have an overall picture of the work done in different districts for proper appreciation.

Secondly, by presenting the facts and narrating the achievements in the districts it is aimed at creating a friendly rivalry among the staff of the different districts to do something better than what has been done already.

Thirdly, it is the desire and the hope that the facts presented will serve to create the required enthusiasm among the families of the Constables and Head Constables for undertaking cheerfully jobs which are to their benefit. It has been noticed in some places that the men do not relish their womenfolk taking to certain types of jobs such as mat-making, carpet-making, charka-spinning and other forms of manual labour. This is due to certain age-long prejudices and false notions of position and dignity. Conditions are so fast changing that even the aristocracy of old days are put to the necessity of working with their hands, and the men therefore must cast away the wrong notions and should encourage their women and children to take up items of work which

are in fact dignified and remunerative. In certain districts to begin with, the charkas were not at all popular. So also was mat and carpet weaving. But when they soon found that these were paying and were after all not so difficult to learn and work, larger and larger numbers took to them. Shortly it is the intention to introduce a few more cottage and small-scale industries and the men must co-operate fully to benefit themselves.

The Officers in charge of these works and the Superintendents are requested to show the required interest as unless this is found, the schemes cannot progress. Imagination, interest and drive are required to increase the benefits to the families of the men.

2. *Welfare Funds previously in existence :—*
Till the year 1957, it cannot be said that the welfare work done by the Department was adequate—the main reason being lack of funds. The interest and the will to do things have however been existing for a long time. A start was made even as early as 1871 when a fund called the "Carr Compassionate Fund" was started with the very laudable object of giving succour to the destitute families of deceased members of the Police Force. Later in 1944, with a view to widening the scope of relief, another fund called "The Gasson Police Benevolent Fund" was started, the sole object of the fund being to relieve distress among non-gazetted officers and their families, caused by death, diseases or any other emergency

which in the opinion of the Central Committee deserved assistance.

3. *Birth of the Madras Police Benevolent Fund* :—But even with the starting of this fund in 1944, it was not possible for lack of adequate finance to provide various amenities to the men and their families. What was done did not even touch the fringe of the problem. The Government were interested in the general welfare of the citizens and for this purpose plans were laid. Taking this opportunity the Inspector-General of Police put up proposals to Government for the starting of the Benevolent Fund in the year 1957. According to the proposal of the Inspector-General of Police, all Gazetted officers are to make a fixed contribution *half-yearly* and those non-gazetted officers including the ministerial staff *who wished* to contribute to the fund are to pay fixed amounts *half-yearly*. To this amount the Government was to give a matching grant not exceeding Rs. 50,000 annually. It was for the first time a proposal of this magnitude was put up and also accepted by the Government. The Government also for the first time became aware of the needs of the policemen and the readiness of the officers and men to make contributions. When this proposal was accepted by Government, the real foundation for the welfare of the men was laid.

4. *Welfare work at present in the State in general* :—With the augmentation of the financial resources available for the welfare work through the income realised through a fete-tattoo held in 1956 and through the Madras Police Benevolent Fund, the pattern of welfare work in the Madras State today is the starting of handicrafts and cottage industries, setting up of recreational centres with radios, magazines and indoor games, laying out children's playground, organizing maternity and child-welfare centres and promoting literacy. Advantage has also been taken to start small scale industries through organizing

Co-operative Societies and making use of the grant and assistance given by the State Industries Department. Opportunity afforded to avail whatever assistance the Government of India and the All India Women's Welfare Association could give was also readily taken. They have been sizeable sums granted by these two, which have helped to start two small scale industries for the welfare of the Policemen. The assistance and co-operation extended by various aid programmes of other Nations and organisations were also fully sought and used.

5. *Organisation of the State Welfare Committee and District Committees* :—Each district has got a committee to organize and to look after the welfare work in the District. The wife of the Superintendent of Police is the President of the Welfare Committee in the District and the Reserve Inspector, the Secretary. Srimathi Lalitha Balakrishna Shetty, wife of the Inspector-General of Police, Madras, is the President of the State Police Welfare Organization. About a dozen Gazetted Police Officers of all ranks and the wives of some of these officers are members of the Committee in the State level. On the proposals of the Inspector-General of Police, the Government of Madras have in their G. O. Ms. No. 540, Home, dated 25.2.59 placed the Deputy Inspector-General of Police, Railways, Armed Police, and Training to be in charge of the welfare work also in the State. This would indicate the anxiety of the Inspector-General and the Government's interest in the Policemen's general welfare.

6. *Welfare Schemes in District* :—The laying of a firm foundation for the welfare work of the men was done. The general lines on which the State Police Welfare Organization is working has been explained in the aforesaid paragraphs. A review in detail about the welfare work done in the districts is given below :

7. *Tailoring* :—Tailoring is taken to by women naturally. So when the proposal was put up to teach tailoring to women in police lines there was no dearth for volunteers. To begin with, a few machines were supplied to the Armed Reserves and several have been taught to stitch. Sewing machines, embroidery materials and other requisites for the tailoring classes have been purchased from the funds provided.

8. *Ambar Charka and Kisan Charka Schemes* :—Ambar Charka and Kisan Charka Units are very popular. Many districts have adopted these two schemes. Spinning on these Charkas not only provides a useful occupation to the women but also provides supplemental earning to the families ranging from 0.25 nP to 0.50 nP per day per head depending upon the amount of work put forth by the women. Provided additional hours are put in daily, the income can be increased to 0.75 nP and even a rupee per day. It is up to each family to do its best. Ambar Charka and Kisan Charka schemes have been introduced and are progressing well in the Districts of Chingleput, Tanjore, Tiruchirapalli, Ramnad, Tirunelveli, Kanyakumari, Railway Police, Malabar Special Police, Tiruchirapalli and the Special Armed Police, Avadi.

9. *Brick manufacture* :—Madurai Urban District has started brick-making and the bricks manufactured are of fairly good quality, bringing in handsome profit.

10. *Poultry* :—Poultry farming has been included as part of the welfare work in the Railway Police. Good breeds like the Leghorns, Rhode Island Reds and Plymouth Rock are reared in select centres. It is at present in an experimental stage.

11. *Bee-hive* :—Similarly Bee-hive keeping is done by the Railway Policemen at Vriddachalam and by local policemen at Pudukkottai in Tiruchirapalli district. Depend-

ing on the success achieved, this will be extended to other places.

12. *Match-Stick* :—This scheme was started in Madras City first. The members of most of the families have taken to this. Enquiries in Srivilliputtur showed that on an average about Rs. 10 per head per month is earned. There is possibility of this scheme being extended to certain centres in Ramnad and North Arcot Districts which will have to be taken up by the Superintendents of Police concerned. The work is easy and even children can fill up the frames effortlessly. Besides being a pastime it gives additional remuneration.

13. *Woollen Sweaters* :—The family members of the Policemen in the District of Nilgiris are knitting woollen sweaters which are of good quality and pattern and have found ready market.

14. *Vegetable garden and fruit-bearing trees* :—Vegetable gardens have been raised in South Arcot, Tiruchirapalli, Salem and Railway Police, and the produce are sold in auction at cheap rates to the members of the Police families. In Salem and Tiruchirapalli attention is also being paid to raising fruit-bearing trees. In Tiruchirapalli the mango fruits were sold to the Armed Reserve men cheap.

15. *Distribution of Milk and other American Gift Articles* :—The Honorary Secretary of the Madras State Police Families Welfare Committee through the American Aid Programme has arranged for the regular supply of milk powder and other American gift articles such as corn, multipurpose food, vitamin tablets etc. to every District. The Guild of Service, the Red Cross Society and the Y.M.C.A. have also been supplying milk powder. The Superintendents of Police of each District in turn have arranged for free distribution of milk to the children of the Police personnel at convenient centres. Similarly other articles of American Aid are freely distributed to the families as and when stocks are received.

16. *Children's Play Field* :—A Children's Play Field was opened in November 1958 at the Special Armed Police camp, Avadi with necessary amenities. A sum of Rs. 412 was donated for this by the State Police Welfare Committee.

The Railway Police at Egmore, Tiruchirappalli and Podanur have also started on a modest scale a Children's Play Field at each of these places. Children's Play Fields have also been opened in the Malabar Special Police Line, Tiruchirappalli, the Armed Reserve Lines, Tiruchirappalli, and in Ramanathapuram Dist. Armed Reserve Lines.

17. *Children's School* :—For the benefit of the Police personnel, schools are run in the Districts of South Arcot and Ramanathapuram. Though there is no school run in the Special Armed Police Headquarters at Avadi, transport facilities are afforded for children to go to schools nearby and also for periodical excursions and picnics. Recently, at Vellore in North Arcot District, the local ladies club has shown a good gesture in opening a school for the Reserve Policemen.

18. *Cottage Industries* :—(1) *North Vellore Women's Cottage Industrial Co-operative Society, Vellore*. The North Vellore Women's Co-operative Society Cottage Industrial Society was registered under the Madras Co-operative Society's Act and started to function from 17-11-56. On date, the share capital of the Society is Rs. 1,553 with a membership of 534. All the members of the society are either the wives or relatives of the Policemen at Vellore.

A scheme was drawn up for training 30 members of the society in tailoring and embroidering and 20 more members in mat weaving at an estimated cost of Rs. 4,300 non-recurring and Rs. 13,200 recurring per annum. The Government of India had also sanctioned a grant of Rs. 10,000 representing the entire non-recurring expenditure and 50% of the recurring expenditure for implementing

the scheme—subject to the condition that the balance of expenditure of Rs. 6,600 is borne by the State Government. The Government of Madras accepted the grant and approved the scheme.

The wives of the Policemen at Vellore have been very enthusiastic in regard to the Society and about 50 women turn up everyday regularly for working on the mat looms and tailoring machine and for doing embroidery. Women receive wages for the work done by them. It had been possible for them to undertake the sizing of local Policemen's (1,200 uniforms) and stitch and supply uniforms to Vellore Municipality, Project Implementation Committee and for private merchants.

There are 14 sewing machines and 25 mat looms. The looms have been busy meeting the needs of the Government Hospital, Vellore, Government General Hospital, Madras, Commissioner of Police, Madras and Beggar Home, Avadi.

The accounts of the Society are managed by a senior Inspector of Co-operative Society attached exclusively for this Society. His pay etc., are being met by the Director of Industries and Commerce. The management of the Society is governed by 5 Directors, who are nominated by the Director of Industries and Commerce, Madras once in 2 years.

The Society is now working at a net profit of Rs. 800.63 and there is scope for increasing the profit still further. The Society is working on very sound lines. In fact, it has invited the appreciative remarks of the Director of Industries and Commerce, Madras who has said "The North Vellore Society has done commendable business. All other Societies add only to numerical strength."

(2) *Garment Making* : The Madhar Sangam of Armed Reserve lines at Alandur in Chingleput District has been affiliated to the Women's Indian Association. With the help of the

Women's Indian Association, a Garment making Unit has been started at a cost of Rs. 56,000. The working strength is about 50 women. They work in two shifts from 8 a.m. to 12 noon and from 1 p.m. to 5 p.m. There are seven sewing machines and an embroidery machine now available at the Centre.

The members of this Centre are at present being given specialised training in tailoring ready-made garments of all varieties, and the materials so far made have all been sold, the children of the Reserve men themselves buying the bulk. The earnings of the women employed range from ten annas a day to one rupee and sometimes even more depending upon the hours of work put in.

The North Arcot Society and the Garment Making Society, Alandur in Chingleput District, have a great future. They have already reached the standard to feel competent to execute large orders. In order that the Society may be in a position to compete with professional uniform makers in Madras City and submit tenders, Government was approached to give concession to this Society so that the tenders submitted by them may be considered even though, compared to others they may not be less. This has been agreed to by Government, and so, very soon, the Society will undertake large scale uniform making for the City Police, which means more hands can be employed.

(3) *Salem Police Women Co-operative Cottage Industrial Society Limited* :—On date the paid-up share capital is Rs. 413 with 393 members. In order to undertake carpet making, mat making and towels, the Society took loans. The executive management of the affairs of the Society vests in a Board of Directors consisting of 9 members who are nominated for a period of two years by the Director of Industries and Commerce.

Members are engaged in garment making, embroidery work, carpet weaving, korai mat weaving, sari and dhoti weaving. A working

capital of Rs. 6,000 was provided by the Director of Industries and Commerce for the purchase of raw materials etc. The carpets made here are of very good quality and the Industry has a future.

(5) *Envelope Making Unit in Madras City* :—Under a scheme sponsored by the Ministry of Industries and Commerce, Government of India, two Units for the manufacture of paper envelopes were sanctioned to the Women's Indian Association, Madras. The association very kindly allotted one of the Units to the Madras City Police Families Welfare Committee for implementation. The Unit has been given a free grant of Rs. 22,500 for non-recurring costs and Rs. 49,950 (half as free grant and half as loan) on easy terms for the recurring expenditure. The Unit which has been set up in the Kilpauk lines is now providing labour to about 25 women and steps are being taken to fully exploit the labour opportunities of this Unit. A similar Unit has been opened in the Pudupet Armed Reserve lines and in Kondithope and there are already 10 members working in each of these places. The envelope making industry is bound to provide steady labour and income to the women who work, because the quality of the envelopes made at these centres is good. The Government Press, Madras, has been taking the envelopes made at these centres for their use for the past two months. This has helped to increase the wages of the women employed.

19. *Madar Sangam* :—Madar Sangams have been started with the object of making the womenfolk gather in one common place, read books and periodicals and improve their knowledge. Books and periodicals are supplied. Periodical meetings are organised, covering topics like Hygiene, Child Welfare, Family Planning, Small Savings etc. The Sangams are functioning at the following places at present:

1. Madras City
2. Special Armed Police, Avadi

3. Chingleput District
4. Madurai Urban
5. Tirunelveli
6. Salem
7. C.I.D. Lines, Madras
8. Ootacamund and
9. Coimbatore.

20. *Balar Sangam* :—Special Armed Police, Avadi has also started a Balar Sangam on 27-4-1959. All children assemble in the Sangam premises and play happily. Toys of different types, rubber balls etc. are provided—besides the amenities available in the children's play field in the camp.

21. *Maternity Centres* :—Arrangements have been made in the Districts of Madurai, Tirunelveli, Coimbatore and Special Armed Police, Avadi, towards the welfare of the expectant mothers. Maternity assistants attend to their needs regularly.

22. *Entertainment through Cinema* :—A 35 m.m. Cinema Projector is now available with Special Armed Police, Avadi. Pictures are screened every week providing very good entertainment to the personnel and their families. There is also a 16 m. m. Projector available with the Special Armed Police, having been borrowed from the United States Information Service for screening educational films, news reels etc. So far 56 popular films on the 35 m. m. Projector have been shown to the men since the Projector started operating in November 1958. 16 m. m. films are also shown periodically. The United States Information Service and the Films Division of Government of India at Madras are good enough to give the films.

23. *Reading Rooms and Recreation Centres* :—Reading rooms and recreation centres have been opened in Tanjore, Madurai Urban, Tirunelveli, Salem and Special Armed Police Avadi. Newspapers, magazines and periodicals are being supplied to educate the personnel. In-

door games like Carrom, Ping-Pong etc. are also provided in these places for recreation.

24. *Information Centres* :—A Unit Information Centre was opened in the Special Armed Police, Avadi on the 16-1-1959. This is first of its kind in the Police Department. Here all the matters pertaining to Service, State and Central Administration, Police Organisation, Hygiene, Physiology, World News, Five Year Plan etc. are displayed in pictures to educate the personnel of the Force effectively.

25. *Fair Price Shops* :—On learning that there was difficulty in obtaining rice and as the price in the open market was rising, the Inspector-General of Police asked the Deputy Inspector-General of Police, Police, Armed Police, Training and Welfare, Madras to take up immediately the question of opening fair price shops as far as possible solely for the policemen and their families in all districts. Accordingly all the Superintendents of Police were instructed and the Revenue Board was also moved with the result that very quickly fair price shops were opened in all districts, as far as possible solely for the policemen. This has relieved the distress of the policemen and their family members since the shops are close to the lines and there is no need to walk long distances and wait in the queue. The price is also much lower than what is obtaining in the open market, at least 4 annas lower per measure. Now that there is sugar scarcity, some of these fair price shops have also taken to distributing sugar to the men.

26. *Scholarship Schemes* :—Though Government has been taking all possible steps to afford necessary facility to the public to educate children and giving concessions to the families of non-gazetted officers in respect of school fees etc., many Police Officers and men found it difficult to send the children for higher studies either in the Arts or in the Professional lines, such as Medicine and Engineering. Noticing that a number of charitable-minded gentlemen in the State were eager to

lend a helping hand to advance the interests of the children of the Policemen going in for higher studies, the Inspector-General of Police willingly accepted their offers of scholarships which have been many and of sizeable sums. The Government also agreed to accept these scholarships. A total of 44 scholarships have been offered and accepted. The interest accruing from these sums will be utilised for giving necessary financial assistance. A Committee constituted will go into the merits of all the applicants and choose the more worthy to whom scholarships will be given to pursue higher studies in Universities.

27. *Encouragement of Fine Arts* :—Apart from taking steps to improve the earnings of the family members it was considered necessary to encourage those who had talents for the fine arts such as music, dance, drama etc. to devote themselves to these. All India Police Cultural Meets are being held for the last 2 years and competitions are held in items pertaining to the fine arts. Some of the men and officers their family members from this State took part in these competitions and particularly this year they did very well at the Nainital Meet.

To encourage those who have aptitude for the Fine Arts a scheme is under examination which if accepted by the Government will enable the children of the Policemen being taught in their respective lines the various arts. Competitions at the District and State level will also be arranged to encourage those who do well.

28. *Gesture of the State Government during the Madras Police Centenary* :—In connection with the Centenary celebrations of the Madras Police, the Inspector-General of Police proposed to the Government that an increment should be granted to all the men as a gesture of the Government's goodwill towards the Department. The Government finally sanctioned a sum of Rs. 50,000 for the purpose of supplying clothes to the children of constables. The men and officers will fully appreciate this gesture on the part of the Government.

29. A review of the work done in the Districts and in the City has been furnished in these paragraphs. This should enlighten all those who go through this regarding the work carried on. It is hoped, as already expressed, that more and more will take to the various industries that will be sponsored and make all these a success.

Prisoner : "The Judge sent me here for the rest of my life."

Prison guard : "Got any complaint?"

Prisoner : "Do you call breaking rock with a hammer a rest?"

Force can extend token goodwill on occasions of marriage, social functions etc., in the locality by friendly participation and assistance. A call by the Policeman on a bereaved family will give him a place in their heart as nothing else will. Local festivals organised by the Public must not find the Police keeping aloof. The attempt, in short, be to remove the present detached official attitude. They must become a normal, native, indigenous element of the local public life.

The Armed Police must conduct camps all over the State. Along with their routine work in such camps they should also do social service in the locality. With their leadership they should be able to get a certain measure of public co-operation in such endeavours by way of free labour, material, etc. The system of selecting villages for development work by the Police in association with local Agents in the nature of Gramadan was started by our Governor Sri B. Ramakrishna Rao when he was Chief Minister in Hyderabad State. Under his inspiration the Police in Kerala too have started this activity in Trichur and Cannanore districts. This can be usefully continued in all districts.

Simultaneously, there must be an endeavour to remove misunderstandings about them and bring out their problems and difficulties. The Inspectors should meet the press representatives periodically and keep them informed of such of the Police activities as could be made known. The cooperation of these gentlemen is to be had both positively and negatively positively for intelligent and honest publicity and negatively by refraining from misinformed reports and criticisms.

Besides encouraging the prominent members of the public to join the Police Clubs wherever established, there shall be a 'Children's Wing' attached to them affording facilities free of charge for games. Children of policemen and officers and neighbours to the Club shall be admitted to the Wing.

2. *Propaganda and Publicity* :—The media of Propaganda and publicity are, of course, the Press, the Radio and the Cinema. In a highly literate and intelligent public having grasp of facts any programme of self-proclaimed propaganda will not pull much weight. Propaganda has, therefore, to be by publicity of factual information. The Public Relations Section of the Department must publish a monthly magazine with articles contributed by the members of the staff and well-known writers. The articles must primarily deal with the work done by the Force during the month selecting items that would be of general public interest. Every effort should be made to see that the magazine has not the appearance and atmosphere of an official bulletin. Circulation must be as extensive as possible. Occasional columns in newspapers and general periodicals dealing with subjects of topical interest would also be desirable. Frequent talks over the radio by members of the police should be arranged for. The talk must not be given by the high-ranking officers of the department but by men lower down, including, if possible, constables. The Information Department of the Government of India may be approached to produce documentary films dealing with the work of the Police. The Central Board of Film Censors must be requested to delete portions in films where the Police are portrayed in a manner which prejudices them in the eye of the public. It would also be advantageous if a few stories and lessons about the Police can be included in text-books for children. Cartoon stories with a propaganda motive and depicting the correct relations between the public and the police, running serially in periodicals may also be tried as they would have a sustained and continuous interest. Generally speaking, publication of even a portion of the highly interesting detective and investigation work done by the Police would serve to place the Force in a better light than at present in the public eye.

In the Police ranks there will be a number of dramatists, artists, musicians, writers, etc., whose talents are not made use of at present. A sufficient number of such artists could be collected in a central place and they could be made into a troupe to stage variety programmes. The Police Orchestra can form part of this troupe. This troupe could stage variety programmes in each town and could also offer programmes for local festivals. The skits and dramas staged by them could be so prepared as to contain the messages of the Police to the public and explain what the Police stand for in a welfare state. Various ways in which the Police can have public cooperation could also be shown in dramas and skits from which the public can take the cue.

A booklet incorporating all aspects of Police-Public relations should be prepared for the use of every Policeman. This booklet should contain lessons for emphasising the following traits :—

Courtesy,
Politeness,
Sympathy,
Patience,
Forbearance,
Restraint,
Helpful attitude,
Understanding,
Impartial outlook,
Unbiased mind,
Pleasing manners, etc., etc.

Lessons should be simple on each topic and should contain illustrations. Model interviews for receiving complaints, interrogation, investigation, enquiry etc., should be prepared showing side by side the wrong way and the right way.

The booklet should be prepared in the local language by a competent man on the subject and should be in a simple style with cartoons

and illustrations added. The book by Dale Carnegie 'How to win Friends and Influence People' will be helpful for preparing this.

All activities of the Public where the Police have to participate should also be illustrated in it.

3. *Necessary additional administrative provisions* :—Whatever be the efforts in the above direction, appreciable results cannot be had unless the public have a confidence in the Force. More than anything else, the one step that would generate public confidence is the eradication of corruption in all its forms. Stern, swift and effective departmental punishment should be meted out for proved offences. The idea is not that some members of the staff should be made the sacrificial sheep in return for the boon of the public favour. But unless an effective drive in this direction is started, the intelligent public of the State is not likely to stop and see the change in the working of the Police and their relation with the Public. It is the Police that handles anti-corruption cases. They have, therefore, a special duty to maintain at all times the highest standard of honesty, integrity unswerving sense of duty.

Closely allied with this is the problem of recruitment and training of the Force. The recruitment of the men as at present done is by the Superintendent of Police at the District Headquarters from persons who are present in response to notifications issued for the purpose. Before finalising the selection, their character and antecedents are, of course, enquired into. Better results can be had if the initial selection is made by the local inspectors, the selected candidates alone being present at the District Headquarters for a second selection from among them by the D.S.P. It may also be considered whether the age for recruitment may not be lowered by two or three years so that the candidates may be had for training well before their character has been formed and moulded in static patterns. This would mean the

continuation of training period by two or three years with consequent increase of expenditure.

Sub-Inspectors' posts must be largely filled by direct recruitment. The age for such recruitment should be fixed at 16 or 17, the minimum qualification being E.S.L.C. The selected candidates must be given four years' of intensive training and instruction in specially established staff colleges, the course including general collegiate instruction in language and subjects of the B. A., or B. Sc. standard.

In each district there must be an additional Circle Inspector in charge of Public Relations,

working under the District Superintendent of Police. His duty will be to coordinate the public relations activities in the District.

The Officer in immediate charge of the proposed staff college and the Circle Inspectors in charge of the Public Relations Section in the Districts must be required to undergo a TWI (Training within Industry) course at Bangalore or at the Tata Institute of Social Science at Bombay.

The above are only a few stray thoughts which may afford material to draw up a comprehensive scheme to improve police-public relations.

From "Police" July-August 1958.

Polygraph and Interrogation: EDITED BY ROBERT D. STEEL

A TRIBUTE TO LEONARDE KEELER, 1903—1949

BY

VIOLA STEVENS AND C. B. HANSCOM

Published with grateful acknowledgement to the Editor, "Police" (Pub. Charles C. Thomas, Illinois, U.S.A.). This article appeared in the July-August issue of the "Police", 1958

(Editor's Note :—Typical of the professional gains made by the police during the past quarter century has been the development of instrumental aids to interrogation. Tapping the emotional experience of the individual, the physiological changes that follow in the wake of the deception syndrome offer to the trained examiner data of important diagnostic value.

The name of Leonarde Keeler is transcribed for all time in the literature of interrogation and deception detection as a major contributor to the development of the polygraph and its associated techniques. It is altogether fitting to revive this factual account of his life and remarkable work.)

* * *

Leonarde Keeler was born at Berkeley, California, in 1903, the second in a family of three children. His father was a poet, lecturer and civic leader, and his mother an artist. When he was four, Keeler's mother died and Leonarde and his two sisters spent much of their early life in boarding schools on the East Coast.

When radio was in its infancy, Keeler built his own crystal receiving set. He tinkered with it constantly—built and rebuilt it. During this period he spent many weeks in a hospital

because of a serious illness. As soon as he had recovered somewhat, he had his radio set up and managed to have it wired into the rooms of other patients so that they too might enjoy the wonders of the newly-developed radio.

Keeler had a tremendous drive and ambition that led him into many adventuresome projects. During his school days he shipped to Australia on a freighter. He loved mountain climbing and with his boyhood friends, Doc Woolsey and Ralph Brandt, made many trips into the high Sierras in mid-winter. Later on, as one means of earning money for his college education, Leonarde organised parties and took them on mountain climbing expeditions. His attention to detail is found in his advance preparations for these trips and the logs he kept. Before starting out on a trip a schedule was drawn up, provisions needed were estimated down to the last bean, meals were planned, and work was delegated so that the trip would be pleasant and without mishap. During some of these trips, food was cached in designated spots to be used in the mid-winter trips when it was impossible to take much gear. Keeler was a daring climber and discovered a number of uncharted peaks in his climbs.

"Daddy, what is an angel?"

"A pedestrian who jumped too late."

Much of Keeler's college education was paid for by his own efforts. When he found that rattlesnake venom was in demand for use in making a serum to combat snake bite, he and one of his classmates went out into the hills and captured, rattlesnakes which they "milked" of their venom. This was done by holding the snake's head under a forked stick and catching the venom in a container.

Keeler's interest in crime detection and the polygraph was a result of his association with August Vollmer. The elder Keeler was a close friend of August Vollmer, the late Chief of Police of Berkeley, California, outstanding pioneer in the field of scientific crime detection and police administration. During his high-school period, Leonarde had a serious illness of long duration and upon recovery he seemed to be lacking some of his energy and enthusiasm for life. His father took him to visit August Vollmer for the purpose of meeting Captain C. D. Lee, then in charge of the records division, who was doing some work on photography and photo-micrography with reference to crime detection. This meeting did stimulate Leonarde's interest and he made an appointment to return, but in the meantime Chief Vollmer introduced him to Dr. John A. Larson who was conducting a polygraph test on a burglary suspect. From that moment on Keeler's life was dedicated.

Dr. Larson was accompanied by Keeler on visits to several state hospitals where tests were run on patients to discover the reactions of abnormal and subnormal persons. The first polygraph was rather clumsy and Keeler and Larson discussed the possibility of a portable instrument. Eventually both Larson and Keeler designed portable models. Keeler's instrument was developed commercially and sold during his lifetime to only law enforcement agencies or for medical uses with the exception of two or three machines which were leased for personnel work.

Chief Vollmer left Berkeley in 1923 for Los Angeles to recognize the police department in

that city. Keeler and his polygraph followed, where Keeler enrolled in the University of California at Los Angeles, but continued with experimental use of the polygraph. Some of his achievements at that time helped to lay the foundation for the acceptance of the polygraph technique in criminal investigation. In one instance he picked, out of a group of 125 policemen, the one who had stolen a revolver; in another case he found the least suspected girl in a sorority house was the culprit; he was successful in obtaining a confession from a murderer; and several bank holdups were cleared as a result of his ability to show the guilty person how obvious his reactions were.

When Vollmer left Los Angeles, Keeler transferred to Stanford University, majoring in psychology, where he was directed in his work by Professor Miles. He was busy during this period developing the model which is now known as the Keeler Polygraph. He invested so much time on this project that he didn't get the necessary credits for graduation and had to return later to take additional work for his degree. In the meantime he went to the Institute for Juvenile Research in Chicago, where he continued with his experiments and research in collaboration with Larson and George Haney. During that time (1929-1930) Keeler and his associates examined 500 convicts in Joliet, all of whom claimed they were innocent of the crimes charged. The examiners found only two of the entire group innocent of the charges against them.

Later Keeler examined hundreds of inmates of mental institutions in Illinois and Minnesota. He conducted research to discover if possible what correlation there might be between intelligence and reactions; to discover if there was any correlation between emotional instability and certain types of reaction patterns. Unfortunately, the results his research were never published because at the same time he was busy with case work and was much in demand as a lecturer on the use of the polygraph.

Between January 1 and December 31, 1931, for instance, Mr. Keeler gave 78 lectures on the polygraph to groups in a period of nine months, in addition to his Northwestern University lecture commitments and polygraph examinations.

In 1929, scientific crime detection was practically unheard of in the U.S. and police departments in their fight against crime did not have access to the modern scientific laboratories of today. As a result of the 1929 St. Valentine's Dy. massacre of seven gangsters in Chicago, Burt Massee, then vice-president of the Colgate-Palmolive-Peet organization, contributed the cash necessary to set up the first scientific crime detection laboratory in America. The laboratory was given to Northwestern University, under whose sponsorship it was operated for eight years. Mr. Massee asked Calvin Goddard, pioneer authority on firearms identification and scientific methods of crime detection, to head the laboratory and Col. Goddard soon asked Leonarde Keeler to join the staff.

Those first years at the Northwestern University Scientific Crime Detection Laboratory were exciting and fruitful years. Here a group of ambitious and enthusiastic young crime fighters applied science to the detection of deception and other phases of criminal investigation. Undoubtedly this laboratory, through the seminars for law enforcement officers, district attorneys, etc., gave impetus to the modernisation of police methods fostered by August Vollmer. Most of those who made up the original staff of the Scientific Crime Detection Laboratory of Northwestern University are still active in crime detection work, though some have passed on. Among those affiliated with the courses offered by Northwestern during those years who have died, were Dean John H. Wigmore, master of legal jurisprudence, August Vollmer, Calvin Goddard, and of course Leonarde Keeler and his wife Katherine.

Keeler married his college sweet-heart, Katherine Appelegate, in 1931 and she became one of the foremost examiners of questioned documents in the country. Mrs. Keeler enjoyed a phenomenal success in the field of document examination for a number of years, only to give up her business and take up flying seriously. During the war she joined the WAAFs and was killed in 1944 when her plane crashed.

During the eight years, from 1930 to 1938, Keeler and others working with him at Northwestern continued to experiment with the polygraph technique. Among those in the Laboratory at that time were Charles M. Wilson and Fred Inbau, who was awarded a fellowship at Northwestern University School of Law in order to conduct research in scientific methods of crime detection. Inbau became interested in the polygraph and has written one of the most authoritative works on the subject. The first issue of the American Journal of Police Science (now incorporated with the Journal of Criminal Law and Criminology) was issued by the Scientific Crime Detection Laboratory in January 1930. Contributors to that first issue included August Vollmer, Calvin Goddard, Leonarde Keeler and others. During these years also, experiments were conducted in the use of scopolamine and other "truth-serums."

Keeler's technique consisted of the specific response test (relevant-irrelevant), the peak of tension test, word association test, sensory tests, and psychopathic tests. When a subject reacted to the specific response test, the peak of tension test was often used successfully. Keeler employed the map technique to solve a number of famous cases. It was used by him in Seattle, Washington, in 1929 when Earl de Castro Mayer was under suspicion in the disappearance of James Eugene Bassett, an Annapolis graduate, whose automobile turned up in the possession of Mayer. Mayer pleaded innocence, gave a plausible reason for possession of the car, and offered to submit to truth

scrum to prove his innocence. Under the influence of the drug he admitted nothing and then offered to take a polygraph test. Mayer was a hardened criminal but when he saw his reactions on the machine, lost his composure and refused to answer any question. Keeler continued to question him and even though Mayer made no verbal replies, his reactions to Keeler's questions on the map helped to first place the disposal of the body in Washington, and then narrow it down to a particular section of the country. Later the body was located in the area Mayer's reactions indicated it would be found.

In another case involving a map test, Keeler identified from thousands in the camp the nine German POW's who had executed one of their number who deserted Nazism. One prisoner who refused to talk, by his reactions on the polygraph, narrowed the "Execution" area down to one compound and finally to the nine prisoners responsible.

In still another map test, Keeler was called to Boulder, Colorado to aid in the search for the rape-slayer of an 18 year-old coed. When he arrived the authorities had in custody a man whose wife had reported him to the police because she believed he was involved in the slaying. The suspect, Walker, first disclaimed any knowledge of the crime, but under the questioning of Keeler and the polygraph, finally told a fantastic story regarding a stranger who got into his car with the girl, bludgeoned the subject (Walker) over the head and while Walker was unconscious, the stranger apparently killed the girl and disappeared. Using the map test, however, Keeler located the gun which Walker had used in the slaying and later discarded, and the girl's school books, which he had thrown away after tearing her name from the front page so that they could not be identified. A partial confession was obtained from Walker when confronted with his reactions on the polygraph.

In 1938, Northwestern University sold the Scientific Crime Laboratory to the City of Chicago. Keeler, who had headed the Laboratory for some time, decided not to go with the Laboratory to the city and opened his own offices on LaSalle Street in Chicago. Early associates with him in the LaSalle Street Office were George Haney, George Smith, Lester G. Schreiber, and Alex Gregory. During this time he trained a few police officers in the use of the polygraph. The men were sent in by their departments and they received two weeks of instruction after which they were advised to return to their departments and use the technique with an experimental attitude and to return to the Laboratory for additional training at the end of six months. Many of his trainees did so, but Keeler felt that the training period itself should be expanded and lengthened. Shortly before his death, in 1949, Keeler had moved into new and larger quarters in order to accommodate the new training programme which was expanded to a six weeks period.

In one of Keeler's first classes was Col. Ralph Pierce of the U.S. Counter Intelligence School in Chicago. Pierce was the first U.S. Army polygraph examiner. He attended several of the two-weeks courses, and shortly thereafter the U.S. Army began to have Keeler train additional examiners and to purchase polygraphs for use in several departments of the Army.

One of the most widely publicized army cases solved by Keeler and Pierce was that of the Hesse Crown Jewel case. In this investigation approximately \$1,000,000 in jewels were recovered through the use of the polygraph, and the principals involved in the case were tried and imprisoned. Keeler flew to Germany where he testified at the trial; and incidentally, while there he examined subjects in numerous unsolved criminal cases.

In January 1941, a small group of polygraph examiners headed by Paul Trovillo, including

Arthur Eggert, George Eckerman, Verne Lyon, George Haney, John Reid, and Leonarde Keeler, met and discussed the desirability of setting up a national organisation of polygraph examiners.

Aims and objectives of the Society were discussed and the matter of a suitable name concerned the group even at the outset. After those preliminary meetings, however, the plan lay dormant for several years until 1945. In 1945, the U.S. Government requested Leonarde Keeler to screen a group of German POWs being held at Fort Getty, Rhode Island, prior to their being sent back to Germany to aid the U.S. Occupation Forces in governing the American sector of Germany.

Evenings at the Bay View Hotel, where the eight examiners Keeler had assembled for the screening project lived, were spent discussing the polygraph and the proposed society. Among the group was Paul Trovillo, who had originally suggested the idea of the association, as well as Charles Wilson, David Cowles, Alex Gregory, Russell Chatham, James Austin, Ralph Pierce, and Leonarde Keeler. Officers were elected with James Austine as the Secretary having the responsibility of drawing up the constitution and by-laws. Ralph Pierce was elected President and David Cowles, Vice-President. The Board consisted of Leonarde Keeler, Chairman and Harold Mulbar and Dr. LeMoyné Snyder as members. Another two years passed, however, before the Society was finally incorporated in Bismarck, North Dakota by the Secretary, James Austin. Much of the delay was caused by the inability of the members to agree upon a name, and it took considerable prodding by Keeler to get the ball rolling. The First Bulletin of the Society was issued in August of 1948, and thereafter for a year and a half the Bulletin was issued out of Keeler's office by Ralph Pierce.

The first meeting of the newly-formed group was in Chicago in October of 1949, shortly after the death of Keeler. Charles Wilson was

elected as the second President, and C. B. (Chick) Hanseom was elected Secretary-Treasurer. Keeler had looked forward to the first convention as he had high hopes for the Society. It is a fine tribute to the small and struggling organization that it has been able to hold a successful convention every year since that first one, an indication that the Society, like the polygraph, is here to stay. The later history of the Society, including the change, in 1953, from the original mouthfilling name of the International Society, for the Detection of Deception to the Academy for Scientific Interrogation, is familiar to both old and new members.

In 1946, Mr. Keeler was called to Oak Ridge to screen 850 employees, including scientists and top executives who were employed in or had access to the final products used in the building of fission materials. Most of the operators who had been on the Fort Getty project were taken by Keeler on the Oak Ridge project. After the initial screening, Mr. Keeler was given a contract for subsequent screening, which he later turned over to Russell Chatham.

Keeler's success with the polygraph did not consist solely of exposing the guilty. In almost as many cases the innocent were freed of suspicion through his use of the polygraph. In two well-known instances, innocent men were freed from prisons as a result of polygraph tests and the additional evidence uncovered. One of these cases, that of Joe Majczek, imprisoned eleven years for a murder he denied committing, was made into the motion picture CALL NORTHSIDE 777. KEELER appeared in this film himself.

A tremendous amount of personal testing and applicant screening for banks and business houses was performed by Keeler. Whenever petty thievery was discovered on the part of an employee confessed, Keeler advised against discharge, stating that such an employee taking cognizance of further testing invariably refrained from further pilfering.

FOR

Radio and Amplifier parts: Philips, Telefunken Transistors
and Diodes, Transistor Radios at Competitive prices

VISIT

ALPHA RADIOS & NOVELTIES PRIVATE LTD

9 MOUNT ROAD Opp: Mount Road Post Office MADRAS 2

(Phone No. 84771)

Authorised Dealers for MURPHY RADIOS

Showroom at:

177/179 MOUNT ROAD, MADRAS 2

(Opp: Casino Theatre)

ALWAYS CONTACT

M/s. LAKSHMI HOSIERY (Regd)

WATT GANJ, LUDHIANA

FOR MILITARY & POLICE, COTTON & WOOLLEN GARMENTS

(i.e.,) BANIAN'S COTTON WHITE, JERSEYS-SOCKS HOSE-TOPS Etc.

HALLO! COLD WEATHER IS HERE-

FOR THE COMPLETE RANGE OF BINNY'S QUALITY WOOLLEN GOODS

Please Contact

MISRILALL PARASMALL
BANGALORE 2

Mamulpet

Sole Selling Agents for **SOUTH INDIA & BOMBAY**

Coronet, Chancellor, Tourist, Everyman, & Coarse
Quality Rugs, Mufflers, Angola Shawls, and Varsity
Suitings are our Seasonal Specialities.

Show Room:

Avenue Road, opposite
Raja Market, Bangalore 2

PHONE:

2691

GRAMS:

'KATRELA'

தமிழ் நாட்டில்
எல்லோரும் விரும்புவது

“ஏ. ஆர். ஆர். சீவல்”

போன்-25

தந்தி: சீவல்



எங்களிடம் 10, 5, 2½, 1 பலம், அரைப் பலம், 1 அணு, அரையணு, காலணு
காலணுவிற்கு இரண்டு பொட்டலங்களும் கிடைக்கும். தேவைக்கு எழுதுங்கள்.

You can see it in his eye, his bearing and the way he dresses. Such self-confidence often indicates the influence of strong family traditions of refinement and culture.

THIS YOUNG MAN WILL GO FAR

When BINNY'S started manufacturing their quality cloth nearly eighty years ago young men discovered a new standard in textiles, for here was variety in colour, design and texture undreamt of before. As the years passed, BINNY'S continued to pioneer new materials including antirease suitings and union fabrics. Soon BINNY became a household word and buying BINNY'S a family tradition.

Today, more people are able to buy more cloth, but discerning people look for these reassuring BINNY'S trade marks on the cloth they buy:



BINNY'S

- a great name in textiles

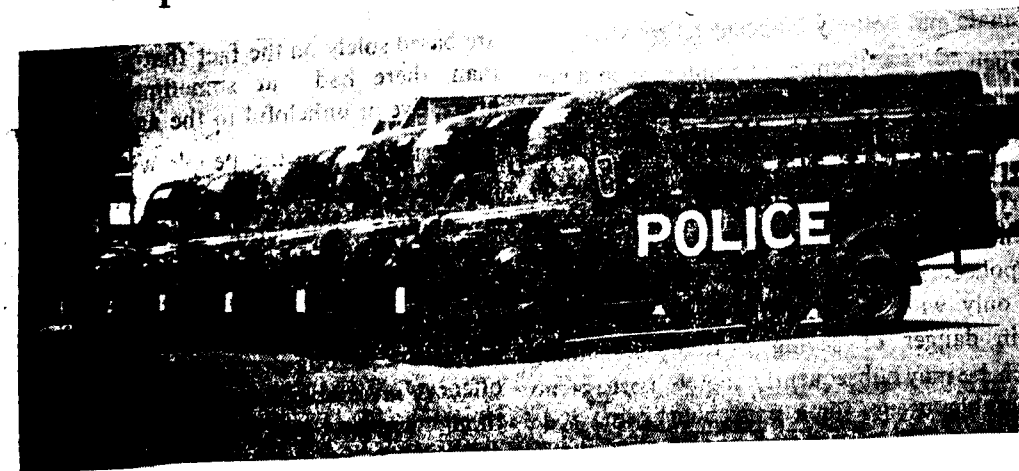
The Buckingham & Carnatic Co. Ltd.
The Bangalore Woollen, Cotton & Silk Mills Co. Ltd.
Managing Agents: BINNY & CO (MADRAS) LTD., Madras



SRI RAMA VILAS SERVICE (PRIVATE) LTD KUMBAKONAM

We always count upon the satisfaction of our Customers.

We construct bodies on chassis for Buses, Lorries and all kinds of special type Vans as for the Police Department according to specifications.



The Inspector-General of Police states :

" THE CONSTRUCTION OF TWENTY-ONE CLOSED TYPE VAN BODIES BY YOUR FIRM FOR THE POLICE DEPARTMENT WAS FOUND TO BE SATISFACTORY AND ACCORDING TO THE SPECIFICATIONS FOR POLICE USE. "

Our modern shellubrication service station has recently commenced night servicing of cars to cope up with the increasing demand from the customers' side.

There were times when it was not possible to prove the results of his examinations and these cases were often puzzling for want of an adequate explanation. On one occasion, Mr. Keeler ran the entire personnel of a bank when \$ 12,000 in cash was discovered missing from a safe deposit box. It appeared to be an "inside job" but all those tested ran clear. For ten years the mystery remained unsolved and the \$ 12,000, remained missing; then one day one of the missing \$ 100 bills appeared in a customer's deposit in the same bank from whence the \$ 12,000 disappeared. An alert teller spotted the bill and brought it to the attention of the president of the bank. The depositor, a wealthy woman, stated that she had taken the bill from her mother's safe deposit box, which had not been opened for years. In reconstructing the mysterious occurrence, it appears that the depositor who lost the \$ 12,000 opened his safe deposit box sometime before the loss was discovered and had inadvertently left the cash and securities in a booth. Immediately after that the woman in whose box the money was found had apparently opened her safe deposit vault in the same booth and had put the missing money back into her safe deposit box with her own papers and securities.

Increasing demands for Keeler's services in cases all over the country began to take toll of his health in the form of constantly rising blood pressure, and spent considerable time in the hospital from time to time. In spite of his failing health and at the urging of associates and others, he moved into larger quarters just a year and a half prior to his death, in order to train men for the Army, Navy, and other U.S. governmental agencies. Branches of the government were using the polygraph increasingly and these agencies requested that Keeler train men to operate the instruments they were purchasing. The programme was cut short by his death before Keeler had the opportunity to train any considerable number of men for the government services.

Early in 1949, Keeler suffered a minor stroke and was hospitalized in Chicago for weeks. He went to the Mayo Clinic for additional weeks, returning to Chicago in August. The first of September, his health apparently having improved sufficiently, he went to Sturgeon Bay to spend a week or two with C. M. Wilson, Superintendent of the Wisconsin State Crime Laboratory, who was vacationing at Jacksonport with his family. On September 7, Keeler suffered another more serious stroke from which he never rallied, dying on September 20, 1949.

For twenty-five years Mr. Keeler had worked unceasingly to bring the polygraph and its technique to the attention of law enforcement officers as a scientific aid to investigations. His efforts must be acknowledged successful when we consider the unspectacular and routine use of the lie detector today as contrasted to its use twenty years ago. And Keeler's direct responsibility for the use and acceptability of the lie detector technique is evidenced by the fact that Chicago and the Midwest, where Keeler practised for twenty years, might be called the polygraph centre of the world, for in no other location has the instrument and technique been as extensively used.

There has been considerable criticism directed against the use of the polygraph in the past few years, particularly since Keeler's death, and at times it appears that some ground has been lost, at least in public relations. The ever-increasing and successful use of the technique in the field of criminal investigation, however, indicates that criticism from persons who have only a superficial knowledge of the use of the instrument will have little effect upon the future of the polygraph among law enforcement agencies. Some constructive criticism might profitably be levied against the practices of a few individuals in the field, but the criticism should come from the polygraph examiners themselves, since the sincere members of the profession believe in the polygraph and its associated techniques and are concerned with their acceptance and future standing.

THE PATTERN OF POLICEMANSHIP

(This excellent article by Acting Chief Superintendent, Cyril M.M. Cook of the Bristol Constabulary Commandant, No. 7 District Police Training Centre, England appeared in the April/June 1959 issue of "The Police Journal." The subject-matter of the article is of eternal interest to Police Officers, and the principles enunciated by the author are worthy of being borne in mind by every Police Officer everywhere. We publish this article with grateful acknowledgements to the Editor of "The Police Journal" and the author. — Ed.)

MUCH THAT IS TAUGHT at a District Police Training Centre is not contained in any text book. Throughout the Initial (Basic) Course of Training—the thirteen weeks Course which every man and woman is given on entry to the Police Service—certain fundamental points are stressed continually, and, in particular time after time, reference is made, directly or indirectly, to the many qualities which the people of this country have grown to expect in the police. Among them are courage, helpfulness, cheerfulness, courtesy, truthfulness, honesty, absolute incorruptibility and loyalty. The following remarks are based upon matters brought to the attention of the recruits in training at the Centre which the present writer has the honour to command.

Both in times of peace and under war-time conditions, the members of the British Police service have shown the highest forms of bravery. Indeed, the fearlessness and complete disregard of personal danger which is so frequently displayed by policemen of all ranks—in tackling armed criminals, in saving people who are drowning, or in danger of death from fire or other causes—is accepted gratefully by the public as being part of the daily service which they can expect from the police.

The British policeman's reputation for helpfulness and cheerfulness is second to none. He is looked upon as being a guide, counsellor and friend; one to whom everyone can come in time of trouble or difficulty, and from whom ever-willing help is available. Frequently, in the course of his duties, he is approached by those who seek his help or advice in relation to something which is right outside the scope of his work. Time after time, people come to him regarding problems or occurrences which would enable him, quite lawfully, to say: "I'm sorry; that's nothing to do with me. I'm a policeman and that's not a police matter." But he never does say that. Everything which affects a member of the public is, by virtue of a long established tradition, something to do with him.

In initial training, stress is also laid on the fact that incidents which, in the course of time, become all too common in a policeman's experience, are of vital importance to the persons intimately concerned. The story of the man who comes to the police station to report that his wife is missing from home may become just a routine occurrence. But, as far as he is concerned, there is nothing routine about it. Nothing like this has ever happened to him before; the bottom has suddenly fallen out of his world! Unfortunately, with road conditions such as they are today, accidents occupy a great deal of a policeman's time but he must never become *blase* regarding them. The mother whose child has been injured even slightly, will certainly not regard the matter as a routine occurrence and the policeman must never give her—or anyone else—the impression that he thinks it is.

In his contacts with the public the policeman must, at all times, be perfectly polite. Courtesy costs nothing, except, perhaps, occasionally in controlling the temper. The majority of the

people with whom the policeman comes in contact will be polite to him and they will naturally, expect civility in return. He should give it willingly and cheerfully, and he should give it even when he does not receive it. From time to time he will come up against a person who doesn't like policemen, or one who believes in the maxim that "Attack is the best means of defence!" Having left a car stationary on the highway for a longer period than is permissible for example, and returning to find a policeman standing near it, they will become very aggressive, very rude and, frequently, very silly. Apart from casting veiled hints regarding the legitimacy of his birth, and suggesting that he will gain rapid promotion through having caught them in a trifling offence, they will loudly deplore his tendency to harass poor, unfortunate and entirely innocent citizens!

Whenever a policeman encounters such a person he should, if possible, be even more courteous than he normally would be. In the first place, nothing will annoy the irate person more, and, secondly, it is possible that this rudeness may be a deliberate attempt to make the policeman lose his temper. If he does so, not only will he look ridiculous, but he will be in danger of saying or doing something which he may subsequently regret. There is no acceptable excuse for a policeman being rude to anyone. It is part of his job to accept, cheerfully, the very occasional rudeness which he has to meet in the course of his duty.

No matter how difficult or unpleasant some part of police work may be, it can always be done courteously. A short time ago, when the members of a class from this Centre visited a local Magistrates' Court, they heard an excellent example of the good feeling which can be established between the police and the public. The Clerk read a letter from a woman defendant, pleading guilty to the charge and containing a postscript which read: "It was almost a pleasure to have been summoned by such a young, good-looking, charming and courteous

policeman!" It is obvious that not all members of the Service can qualify for the first two adjectives, but all can do their work in such a way as to merit the bestowal of the last two! The reputation of his Force, and of the Service as a whole, rests with each individual member of it. How often has one heard someone say: "What a splendid body of police they have at!" and, after agreeing, one has enquired why the person speaking thinks so, only to find that, perhaps several years ago, they had some contact with a policeman in that area who was cheerful, courteous and helpful. Ever since then, they have continued to speak well of the whole of that Force. On the other hand, unfortunately, one sometimes hear derogatory remarks regarding the police of a certain area and finds that the adverse opinions expressed are based solely on the fact that a single policeman there had, at sometime, been rude, aggressive or unhelpful to the aggrieved person.

The majority of the people with whom the policeman comes into contact are honest and law-abiding. Furthermore, the comparatively few whom he has to report or arrest are, in all probability, not wilful offenders. Apart from a small hard core of anti-social, persistent and deliberate wrong-doers, those who commit offences invariably do so through carelessness, thoughtlessness or ignorance. This applies especially to road traffic offences. No motorist has ever stopped his car looks around and said "Now, let me see, where I can leave my car to ensure that it causes the greatest possible obstruction and danger?" What happens is that on reaching the shop, office or place at which he intends to call, he leaves his car as near as possible to it, giving no thought to the fact that, as it is near a junction or a bend, he is creating danger and breaking the law.

It is equally certain that no man has ever said to his wife: "What a lovely day, my dear. Let's go out and drive to the danger of the public for a couple of hours!" He may say: "What a lovely day, my dear. Let's go for a

run in the car." She readily agrees and then, full of the joy of living engendered by the loveliness of the day, he drives too quickly round a bend, crosses the white line and collides with a vehicle coming the other way. He hadn't the slightest intention of doing so, of course. Such offences are the result of carelessness and not malice. Therefore, when a policeman is dealing with such people he should do so quite firmly, but always sympathetically. He should never create the impression that he is enjoying doing so.

Truthfulness is another virtue which is essential in a policeman, and continual stress is laid on two aspects of it in relation to the young policeman's work. Firstly, in his police career—and particularly during his probationary period—he will make mistakes. No one is infallible, and no one will expect him to be so. If he is truthful regarding any slip he makes, all will be well. If he makes an honest mistake, and he admits it, then every one of his colleagues from his Chief Constable downwards—will, if it is necessary, do everything possible to help him. But if he endeavours to cover up a mistake by lying, then he will cut the ground from under the feet of those who could put the matter right.

Secondly, he will frequently be called upon to give evidence and, generally before doing so, he will be required to take the oath. This procedure should never be regarded as a mere formality—just a few words to be spoken before he can commence his evidence—and he should never be tempted to deviate from the strict and absolute truthfulness which the taking of an oath involves. By reason of the high reputation which the police have established, the Courts of this country have grown to expect a policeman's evidence to be true. But although the Judge, the Recorder, the Jury or the Magistrates may believe him, if he is not speaking the truth there will always be at least one person in the Court, besides himself, who

will know that he is a liar—the prisoner or defendant.

On the whole, there is very little animosity between the criminal and the policeman in this country. Providing a man has been convicted by fair and honest evidence, he bears little or no ill-will. Indeed, frequently one of the first persons to whom a criminal comes when he is released from prison is the policeman whose skill put him behind prison walls. It is no secret that good crime detection is frequently based on "information received," and it is equally well known that much of this information is received from criminals. It is therefore, important from a purely practical point of view, as well as from the even more important moral one, that a policeman should not antagonise his potential informants by bearing false witness against them.

Furthermore, the probationary constable is reminded that the legal profession of this country also has a reputation which is second to none. When his evidence is being tested in cross-examination by a skilled solicitor or barrister, he will be in a very unhappy and very dangerous position if it is not strictly true. But, if he has spoken the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, then he has nothing to fear from the most severe grumbling by the greatest Queen's Counsel in the land.

The integrity of the policeman must be above question, despite the fact that probably no member of the community has greater opportunities for wrong-doing than he. The probationer is, no doubt, amazed to find how careless people are with their property, and astonished by the number of occasions on which he will find something which has been lost under circumstances where, if he was not strictly honest, he could retain it, and also by the frequency with which he will find lock-up premises insecure and so be provided with an easy opportunity for stealing. As with the vast majority of his colleagues, the temptation to

do so will never enter his mind, but it is there and it has to be faced.

The young policeman must be warned, too, to be chary of the person who wishes to give him something. Most citizens like the policeman but few will wish to give him something for nothing without some ulterior motive. It may be the subconscious one of providing a sort of "insurance" against future contingencies which may arise. The shop-keeper who doesn't want to take the money for the newspaper or for the packet of cigarettes which a policeman is buying may have purely altruistic motives, but it is very unlikely that he has!

From time to time, members of the Service fall from grace. When they do, the press makes a great splash about it, and one sees banner headlines "Policeman Sent to Prison" or "P.C. Convicted of House-breaking"! And that is splendid! Policemen are delighted to see these huge headlines, because they are clear proof that it is still unusual for a policeman to offend. As long as the erring policeman continues to rank with the concupiscent clergyman in attracting the full attention of the press the Service is safe. If ever the time comes when offences by police-men are so common that the newspapers do not trouble to headline them, then it will be in grave danger of losing its reputation for integrity and so losing the confidence of the public.

The members of the Service are happy, too, regarding the attitude of our Courts towards policemen who do wrong. It seems to be a generally accepted principle of British justice that the policeman who is convicted of an offence should receive a greater punishment than the ordinary man who is similarly found guilty. This was demonstrated in the recently widely publicised Brighton case when four men were convicted of offences involving corruption. Two were sent to prison for two years and the other two (who were policemen) for four years. Those who are trusted to set an example to other people must, of necessity, receive greater punishment when they fail to do so. As Mr.

Justice Thesiger said recently, in Manchester Crown Court:

"The administration of justice depends far more than many people realise on the integrity of the police force. If magistrates, jurors and judges cannot trust the police, people who are guilty cannot be convicted, nor can we be sure that those who seem to be guilty are not being falsely accused." (*Daily Telegraph*, 3rd December, 1958).

The children and young persons with whom the policeman comes into contact in his daily work are, of course, the citizens of the future; the men and women upon whom he will be dependent for the support and co-operation which are essential to the proper performance of his duties. He should, therefore, do everything possible to cultivate their trust, their friendship and their respect. One hears and reads a great deal today regarding the problem of juvenile delinquency but, as in most cases, it is the minority which attracts attention. We rarely, if ever, hear or read anything of the hundreds of thousands of youngsters who lead normal, healthy, decent lives.

In his work on the streets, the policeman can do a great deal to keep the younger generation free from moral and physical danger. He should keep in touch with them as much as he can—talk to them—take an interest in their doings—and make it clear to them that he is prepared to be their friend. A great deal of useful work in the prevention of juvenile crime is done by the clubs which are run by police forces or at which policemen give their services. Whilst the young policeman will not have much spare time during his probationary period—two years of intensive study and really hard work—he should, when it is ended, give serious consideration to helping his colleagues at these clubs. Anything at all that he can do to build up a friendly attitude between the youth of his

area and the police will bear fruit a hundred-fold.

Before he leaves the Training Centre the probationary constable is told how important it is that his demeanour and attitude towards his Force colleagues should be watched carefully. It is impressed upon him that, despite the hard work he has done, and no matter how great is the ability he has shown, he has gained only a basic knowledge of some of the more elementary points of police law and practice. During the remainder of his probationary period he will continue to receive instruction. He will continue to build up his theoretical knowledge, with the help of his Force Training Officer he will be given experience of different departments of the Force and he will return to a District Training Centre for two further Courses—the Intermediate and Final Probation Courses.

But it is in his contacts with the older and more experienced policemen with whom he will work that he will find the greatest opportunities for gaining useful knowledge. This applies, in particular to the "tutor" constables, those specially selected men who will show him around his beats and patrols at first. He should make it clear to them, by his eagerness and modest demeanour, that he is anxious to learn and fully conscious of their ability to teach him. Only thus will he gain the full benefit of the wealth of practical experience that they have had, and of the sound advice and guidance which they can give him.

Lastly, but by no means of least importance, the virtue of loyalty is strongly recommended to the young policeman. He must be loyal to his colleagues, to his officers, to his Force and to the Police Service. But, above all, he must be loyal to himself; if he is, he cannot then be false to any man.

BUILD BETTER RELATIONS

BY

DR. E. K. SWAMY, PH. D., J.P., M. COM., D. ECON., F.C.I. (BIRM.), A.B.I., A.I.R.A. (LOND.)

As Policemen you have to contact the public often. You would find them differ markedly in their traits, temperaments, needs, desires, likes and dislikes. In order to establish the correct attitude towards them, it is necessary that you should keep these things in mind, if you want to build better relations with them and thus bring credit to yourself and the police administration.

Remember that you are not mere wage earners. You are members of an essential service. You being the limbs of the law are expected to put duty before self-interest and you should render that service, irrespective of pay and position, to the people by building better relations. It means more amicable and friendly dealings with others by constantly cultivating a correct attitude towards them.

All persons are born with certain inherited tendencies or instincts but no one is born with a definite attitude of understanding, tolerance, tact, consideration for others etc. These attitudes are gradually acquired as one grows through training, environment and association. A person may not be wholly responsible for all his attitudes but is fully responsible for his good relations with others and his ability to get along with them. Emotionally immature people seem to blame others for every bad break they experience. Such traits do not build good relations.

Doubtless we have all had experiences with policeman who gave the impression that they were not the least bit concerned about establishing better relations with the public. The indifference of such policemen not only placed a reflection upon them as well as the Police force they represented.

A few years ago, I met in London, the Managing Director of a leading Industrial Corporation. In the course of a conversation he said, "Whether a Corporation or a Government employs one person or ten thousand people, your opinion of that organisation is formed mainly by the contact and dealings you had with the one person you dealt with."

Viewed in the proper perspective, the police cannot function effectively without the co-operative assistance and support of the public. Since the function of the police is to serve, they may best and most easily obtain public support and a proper public attitude by serving well. Any act of service by the police in itself is the best device for informing the public of the quality of Police service. Actions speak louder than words.

The treatment of the public at the Police stations when they call on business, and the handling of complaints and reports are all of great importance. The answering of the telephone or the offering of assistance to the citizen who calls at headquarters may seem to be a matter of small moment, but small matters bulk large on the aggregate. On them the reputation of the force is built. The policeman's dress, his appearance, his carriage and poise will all be taken into account by the citizen in appraising the force. The man on the beat is more than the eyes and ears of the force. On his beat he has excellent opportunity to make contacts with the public and win friends for the force.

The Policeman, to do his work well and to serve the public, must possess courage, integrity, self-control, physical stamina and abundant common sense. In addition to these attributes

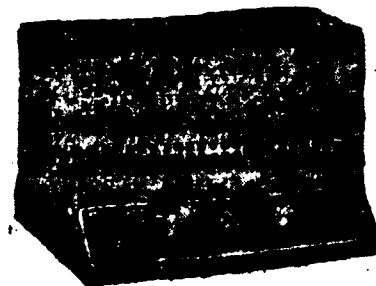
of character and temperament, he must command a working knowledge of laws, Ordinances, regulations and court procedure. Police service should be really efficient and effective and also must be popular like the London Policeman, who is popularly known as the "Bobby" and has won universal admiration and respect for "fairplay".

As loyal Police employees, it is your responsibility to constantly build better relations. When some one does something to fret you, instead of letting it ruffle your feelings, you should think of how many times you too have made mistakes. You should keep concentrating on more pleasant things—to spread happiness, amity and to establish correct attitude to "Build Better Relations".

Known for Quality and Reliability

★ ESCO AMPLIFIERS

★ ATLAS
TRANSFORMERS
AND BATTERY
ELIMINATORS



★ PHILIPS VALVES
AND
COMPONENTS



★ UNIVERSITY UNITS
AND HORNS

★ BALKAR UNITS
AND HORNS



★ TURNER MICROPHONES

★ GLOBE BATTERY CHARGERS



Phone: 85564

Gram: LALRADIO

CONTACT:

180 Mount Road
MADRAS 2

Head Office: BOMBAY

LALWANI RADIO CORPORATION

37/38 S. J. Park Road
BANGALORE 2

Branches: CALCUTTA DELHI

Phone: 782

Grams: VIR HOSIERY

VIR HOSIERY FACTORY (Regd.)

RAI BAHADUR ROAD
LUDHIANA

Specialists in

High Class Woollen Hosiery Government and Military Contractors

for

Socks, Stockings, Hosetops, Jerseys Pullover, Caps Confolters,
Gloves, Balaclava Caps, Mufflers, Scarves, Mittens, Vests,
Drawers, Ribbed Jerseys, Vests Winter etc. etc.

Telephone: No. 41

Telegram: "MYDEENCO"

Always Use Mydeen Tobacco

E. S. MYDEEN & CO
KUMBAKONAM

POLICE AND VIGILANCE WORK

BY

SRI P. N. SUBRAMANIAM,

Inspector of Police, Special Branch, C.I.D., Madras.

It is an accepted fact that the number of maladjusted and sexually prodigal women and neglected and wayward children of both sexes is steadily on the increase owing to the rapid process of urbanization and a consequent deterioration of moral standards. This has brought about a disquieting increase in juvenile crime and commercialised prostitution. Therefore, the salvage and rescue work of these fallen women and children should assume the same importance as, if not more than, that attached to the prevention and detection of crime by the Police.

The statistics of the total number of admissions in the Vigilance Homes in the State during the years 1955, 1956 and 1957 reveals a downward trend. 142 women were admitted in 1955, 133 in 1956 and 106 in 1957. If we rely on the downward curve of the graph representing yearly admissions and comfort ourselves with the belief that commercialised prostitution is rapidly disappearing from our society, we will be merely deluding ourselves. Commercialised prostitution is more the outcome of socio-economic causes than psycho-physical maladjustments. The persistence of this commercialised vice in one new form or other, under several covers, is admittedly an indication of the steady deterioration of the moral values held by our society. The semi-naries of this vice are the places owned or occupied by anti-social elements, who skilfully draw young women, either directly or with the help of pimps or procurers. These traffickers do not hesitate to assume the disguise of native doctors, film men and so on. Such places are beyond the pale of legislation although they are, for all intents and purposes, brothels

in disguise. It is also common for many men visitors to these places to take out their night-companions by cars, taxis or rickshaws, not only to evade the law but also to conceal their own identity. These mobile brothels are fast increasing in number. The battle against this vice should be fought by the Police with the least possible delay.

No doubt the Vigilance Service under the Chief Inspectress of Certified Schools, Madras, provides timely care, upbringing, reformation and rehabilitation of the fallen women. But, to rescue these women from the jaws of anti-social elements is a job that could be done effectively only by the police.

There are Vigilance shelters in Madurai, Coimbatore, Salem, Tiruchirapalli, Tanjore and Madras City. Of these, the last two are managed by the Vigilance Association while the rest are run by the Government. These are short-stay homes serving as feeders to the long-stay homes which are commonly known as Vigilance Homes. Devoted endeavour should be made and a variety of measure ceaselessly taken to make these institutions in the State increasingly effective and useful in the everwidening sphere of their activity. To feed these Vigilance shelters by rescuing women and girls neglected by society and despised by the public as a slur on civilisation is the job of the Police. Girls, who have been lured into towns and cities by traffickers who give them a picture of a bright and luxurious future are soon disillusioned and they are in need of shelter and protection from these anti-social sharks. In order that there may be an effective combing up of towns and cities in the State for these fallen women, there should be a

JULY-SEPT. '59]

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

77

Vigilance Wing in the Police Department which is devoted solely to the noble task of rescue and rehabilitation of these unfortunate victims. No doubt, the Department of Certified Schools and Vigilance Service is rendering tireless service to the socially handicapped and morally delinquent women. It cannot be gainsaid that this institution is contributing its laudable share to the social crusade against commercial vice and immoral traffic in women and girls. But without the willing and enthusiastic co-operation of the Police, the Vigilance Service will only be fighting a losing battle.

towns like Madurai, Coimbatore, Tiruchirapalli, Tanjore and Salem and gather all useful information about the fallen girls and rescue them and put them in Vigilance shelters.

There should be a separate wing in the Criminal Investigation Department to tackle this hydraheaded problem of commercialized prostitution which is assuming larger proportions day by day. The Vigilance Wing should consist of an able and experienced Inspector, 4 Sub-Inspectors and 8 H. Cs. The staff of this Vigilance Wing should be able to move from place to place, especially in big cities and

In the Vigilance shelters the authorities should separate the rescued girls from girls who seek voluntary admission into these institutions and make a thorough study of their mental set-up and social background and treat them for their maladjusted and perverted sexual tendencies. In addition to educating these girls in social and moral hygiene, such an all-round educational and vocational training should be given to these women that they may be reclaimed as useful members of society. The State Probation Department should step into make pre-release investigation and after-care of the discharges from the Vigilance Home. With the ardent endeavour of the social workers coupled with stringent measures of the Police the battle against this anti-social crime could easily be won.

A POLICEMAN'S PRAYER

BY

SRI P. N. VENKATARAMANI, B.A., B.T.,
Inspector of Police, Crime Branch, C.J.D., Madras

I hear the people say my lot is bad,
In joy I stem the tide like every lad ;
And sharks and whales shall I fight day and night :
Let duty's path be lit with reason's light.

No flask of wine nor lust of flesh may lure,
Nor Belial's soft and greasy palm secure
Thy son, who danger braves, whom temptors ahun,—
Who hunts the thief and thug in rain and sun.

No threat or fear shall my judgment sway,
Nor sham hypocrisy beguile my way ;
Give me strength and hope that I may serve
The rich and poor alike without reserve.

Give me the courage, conviction and strength
That I may speak the lovely truth at length,
Despite the ugly wrath I may behold
On fiery, frowning faces, stern and cold.

No power or pride of politics may stall
The even flow of joy in duty's call :
Let selfless service shape my thoughts and deeds
And always make me mind the people's needs,

Copy of letter dated 6—9—59 from Lt. Genl. P. Kumaramangalam,
Defence Services Staff College, Wellington, Nilgiris to Sri S. Balakrishna Shetty, Inspector-General of Police, Madras.

I enjoyed my trip to Madras very much..... and delighted us right through the week. My staff and students, my family, and I myself as an individual, very much appreciated the invitation, and the opportunities that were given to us to see the displays that your fine policemen, police horses, and police dogs put up. Many of the items in the Tattoo were worthy of circus professionals, and I really can hardly believe that the Police Constables, and point duty men could co-operate in such a wonderful manner! Not only should we congratulate you, on this huge success, but ourselves as belonging to Madras State where such Officers and men are working.

Copy of letter dated 10—9—59 from Smt. Mona Hensman J. P., B. A. (Hons.) Lond., Principal, The Ethiraj College, Victoria Crescent Building, 22 Commander-in-Chief Road, Egmore, Madras-8 to Sri S. Balakrishna Shetty, Inspector-General of Police, Madras.

You must be having a very heavy Mail with letters from people congratulating you on the Police Centenary Celebration last week. I would, however, like to pay my humble tribute to the magnificent programme of events that enthralled

I only wish we could live for another hundred years to see what the show will be like in 2059. I doubt whether even the men that are to come can beat your record!

"Excuse me, sir, do you happen to have seen a policeman anywhere about here?"
"I am sorry, but I have not seen a sign of one?"
"All right, hurry up and give me your watch and pocket book then."

Crime for the Quarter ending 30-9-1934 in Madras State

Serial No.	Name of District	Area in sq. miles	Population	Total number of crimes	Offences relating to coins	Offences relating to currency and bank notes	Murder	Kidnapping	Dacoity and preparation for	Robbery	House-breaking	Theft, ordinary and cattle	Criminal Assault	Total number of juveniles concerned	Police men for 10,000 of population
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)	(11)	(12)	(13)	(14)	(15)	(16)
1	Madras City	49.4	14 lakhs.	1,621	...	...	5	5	...	6	39	970	68	53	26
2	Tiruchirapalli	5,571.13	...	1,258	...	...	17	16	2	7	238	594	7	10	8
3	Tiruchirapalli Rly. Dist.	2,451.5	26,95,071	318	...	...	...	...	...	1	5	28	5	15	...
4	Chingleput	4,271.4	33,27,108	2,063	...	...	26	9	...	9	315	902	159	29	9.7
5	South Arcot	4,208	27,90,651	2,246	...	...	27	8	2	8	328	826	107	24	6
6	Tanjore	3,742.01	28,82,670	831	...	...	55	...	...	3	273	432	68	24	7
7	Madurai North	3,099.24	16,22,989	875	...	...	12	1	1	7	107	362	23	23	6
8	Madurai Urban	1,769.76	12,68,828	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	12
9	Ramanathapuram	599	23,09,938	3,728	...	3	30	17	...	13	177	585	33	11	8
10	Tirunelveli	4,337	24,45,967	1,015	...	18	9	...	...	10	197	449	60	49	7
11	Kanyakumari	646	8,24,000	581	2	...	8	2	2	3	75	200	106	14	8
12	Coimbatore	6,024	31,54,296	1,174	...	...	64	18	7	17	367	557	67	46	6
13	Nilgiris	1,098.14	2,79,359	123	...	...	2	...	...	...	45	65	11	3	13.1
14	North Arcot	4,654	28,65,235	1,127	...	...	8	5	...	...	244	133	...	28	5.3
15	Salem	6,894.8	30,97,220	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	6

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

(Issued under the authority of the Inspector-General of Police, Madras)

Editor:

G. V. Narayanan, M.A., I.P.S.

Assistant Editors:

M. D. Ebenezer, B.A.

P. Scetharaman

CONTENTS

	PAGE
1. EDITORIAL	1
2. A TALK BY DR. C. P. RAMASWAMI IYER TO THE HONORARY PRESIDENCY MAGISTRATES OF MADRAS CITY	3
3. THE PHILADELPHIA POLICEWOMEN'S UNIT	5
4. HOW TO GET ALONG WITH YOUR BOSS (Sri N. R. Sreenivasan, I.P.S.)	12
5. THE IDEAL POLICEMAN (Kumari S. Visalakshi Meera)	16
6. RANDOM THOUGHTS ON INVESTIGATION (Sri G. V. Narayanan, I.P.S.)	19
7. SCOTLAND YARD'S GREATEST SECRET (Anthony Abbot)	26
8. CONTROL OF LORRY TRAFFIC (Sri P. J. Manuel)	30
9. TESTIMONIAL COMPULSION (Sri P. Sundararajan)	36
10. TRUTH STRANGER THAN FICTION (Sri E. T. Vedomuthu)	43
11. AN INTERESTING CASE OF COMPULSIVE NEUROSIS (Sri G. V. Narayanan, I.P.S.)	45
12. HOME FOR THE DESTITUTE AND THE DISABLED (Sri A. V. Srinivasan)	49
13. THE SEVENTH ALL-INDIA POLICE DUTY MEET, 1959	52
14. ஸ்ரீமதி நூற்றாண்டு விழா (Srimathi A. Balammal)	59
5. LEGAL CAUSERIE	63

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

Vol. X

OCTOBER - DECEMBER, 1959

No. 4

EDITORIAL

During the last quarter of 1959, the Madras State Police team took part in the Seventh All-India Police Duty Meet at Patna and gained fresh laurels. Following the Duty Meet there were the Inter-Range Games Meet at Coimbatore and the Inter-State South Zone Games Meet at Mysore. At the Zonal meet we lost to Kerala in Volley-ball, to Mysore in Hockey, and to Andhra in Foot-ball. Only our Gymnastics team passed the Zonal level and qualified itself for the finals at Delhi. We would like to invite the attention of all Police Officers of the State who are readers of the Journal to take stock of the position and try to effect improvement by recruiting good sportsmen for appointment to the Force. In Volume IX, No. 4 of the Madras Police Journal, we already had occasion to refer to the imperative need for enlistment of sportsmen in the Force, and it is our earnest hope that something tangible will be done in this regard before long, failing which there is the danger of our losing the high place we have so far occupied in the Games and Athletic fields at All-India Meets.

To those officers and men who took part in the Seventh All-India Police Duty Meet at Patna and particularly to those who won trophies, viz. Sub-Inspector Durai Singh of Madras City Police, Sub-Inspector Paramasivam of the C. I. D., C. I. D. Photographer, Sri Babu Kumaresan, Subedar Ramachandra Menon of M. S. P., and H. C. Krishnaswami of the Coimbatore Armed Reserve, we offer our congratulations. The performance of this team at the All-India Duty Meet was probably the best for any year so far and we wish our representatives a still better record in the coming year.

7/14/1960, MSU
MSU (10)
69358

FOR EVERYTHING IN:

**Electrical, Electronic and Technical
Equipment**

TELEPHONES—TELEGRAPH INSTRUMENTS
RADIO COMMUNICATION—RADIO
BROADCASTING EQUIPMENTS

TEST INSTRUMENTS FOR EDUCATION
RESEARCH AND INDUSTRIES

MOTWANE PRIVATE LTD

INCORPORATING

**CHICAGO TELEPHONE & RADIO CO
PRIVATE LTD**

(Established 1919)

PIONEERS OF RADIO SOUND SYSTEMS
LOUDSPEAKERS AND ELECTRONICS

196, Mount Road

P. O. Box No. 396

MADRAS-2

Telephone: 85357

Telegram: "CHIPHONE"

A Talk by Dr. C. P. Ramaswami Iyer to The Honorary Presidency Magistrates of Madras City

(Reproduced as far as possible from memory by Shri F. V. Arul, I.P.)

I am indeed happy to be in the midst of Honorary Presidency Magistrates who are performing praiseworthy functions. The presence of a lady magistrate here (Mrs. Mona Hensman) reminds me of the fact that when I was the Law Member of the Government of Madras I appointed the first lady Honorary Presidency Magistrate in India. She was Mrs. Muthulakshmi Reddi. Later, I appointed other lady magistrates also. These lady magistrates soon made a mark of not showing any sympathy at all with the prisoner in the dock (laughter). They were even more severe with women accused (more laughter). I would appeal to the lady magistrates of today to have more compassion because the purpose of the law is intrinsically reformation and not retribution.

Now coming to the office of honorary magistrates I would like to tell you that there is a hoary tradition about it. The ancient Greeks were a small community governed by the principles of democracy. Every Greek had to undertake legislative, magisterial and martial duties by turn. You will remember that Socrates was tried for sedition not by a small bench of judges, but by a judicial body of over 800. This was due to the practice of training every citizen in the law. You will thus appreciate that the office of honorary magistrate is of considerable antiquity.

This institution has been adopted extensively in Britain from the earliest times. Trial by jury is the rule rather than the exception. Even in this country panchayat rule was much in vogue prior to the British connection.

Actually it goes as far back as Vedic times. Every village had its panchayat and the members thereof had to settle all disputes and grievances arising in the community. This was achieved more by argument, discussion, persuasion and conciliation. They even had to indemnify the victims of dacoity and robbery. The value of this system has been recognised by our present rulers who have recently enacted the Panchayat Act.

Law has to be considered in three of its aspects. The first is that it is the experience of ages. Apart from this social aspect, it is retributive in character because it seeks to punish the wrong doer as well as to protect the innocent. The attempt to reform and rehabilitate is its third aspect. It is this which I would like to stress this evening. There is no use in giving short prison sentences. They have no reformatory effect but merely serve to increase the expenditure of the State. The practice in England is to give long suspended sentences and no bar is placed against the employment of the accused either in Government service or industrial establishments or commercial houses. Thus a full opportunity is given to the culprit to rehabilitate himself. If he fails to avail himself of this opportunity he is sent back to prison for a longer term. I would commend to all of you this example. A very much greater use should be made of probation. Doubtless a few legislative amendments may be necessary.

I must say that the administration of law is getting very much more simple as years succeed year. Time was when a lawyer, steeped in

the intricacies of ancient law, claimed very high fees for his services. All this is changing with modern codification. Take, for instance, the law relating to land tenure and ownership. This Gordian knot has been cut by the simple socialistic scheme of getting rid of the landlord altogether (laughter). I see an eminent income-tax lawyer in your midst. His labours too are being diminished progressively by the phenomenon of mounting taxes so much so ere long there will be hardly any income to be taxed (laughter).

And so I reiterate that the administration of law is getting simpler in modern times and therefore it is not necessary for you honorary magistrates to be steeped in case law or to be able to quote a score of precedents. What is needed is sound commonsense, integrity and human compassion.

In closing, I would like to congratulate you all on the fine service you are rendering to the State and to the public. I thank you all for the spontaneity and cordiality of your welcome.

An analysis of Poisoning Cases in Madras and Andhra in 1957

An analysis of the cases of human poisoning which were reported in Madras and Andhra States in the year 1957 reveals some interesting features. In Madras, there were 116 cases of poisoning by copper sulphate, 17 by a Nitrite, 12 by Zinc phosphide, 50 by Alcohol, 34 by Kerosene, 13 by Dhatura, 10 by Madar and 222 cases by parts of the Oleander plant being consumed. In Andhra, in the same period there were only 10 cases of copper poisoning, 32 of Nitrite poisoning, 11 of Dhatura poisoning, 20 of Alcohol poisoning, 36 of Oleander poisoning and 6 of Opium poisoning. The total number of poisoning cases reported from Madras that year were 587 and from Andhra 169. These statistics show that while in Madras Copper sulphate and Oleander were the favourite poisons, with Kerosene, Madar and Nitrite following far behind, in Andhra, Nitrite, Oleander and Dhatura were the favourite poisons used for killing. Arsenic, Nitrite and Dhatura were the poisons most often used in homicides. There were 7 cases of death by Folidol poisoning in Madras in 1957, and all these were suicide cases.

THE PHILADELPHIA POLICEWOMEN'S UNIT

(Extract from the F.B.I. "Law Enforcement Bulletin", issue of October, 1957, Vol. 26, No. 10. Reprinted with grateful acknowledgement to the Editor of the F.B.I. Law Enforcement Bulletin.)

History of the Unit

The position of policewoman must be recognized as an outstanding opportunity for girls interested in a profession. This phase of law enforcement has progressed rapidly in scope and importance, and today, through its influence on juvenile delinquency, it is conceded as being a possible key to the reduction of the unfortunate present-day crime statistics. The policewoman's assignment is an interesting, highly specialized task covering a multitude of activities. It offers to the girl on the threshold of her career a chance to engage in fascinating, adventurous work while rendering a valuable service to her community.

Today's gratifying status was not achieved overnight. Ever since the first woman in 1893 invaded this heretofore masculine field of endeavour, the policewoman has found it necessary to prove her merit and indispensability. March 1, 1957, marked the 21st anniversary of the introduction of policewomen into the Philadelphia Police Department. As was true in similar cases throughout the entire country, there was marked animosity and resistance on the part of many policemen when women were first employed by the department. Some thought it was a case of window dressing; others thought that it was a publicity stunt, and there is no doubt that in numerous instances these pioneers were subjected to ridicule and abuse. Much credit must be given to their steadfast persistence and firm belief that they had a valuable contribution to make to the profession of law enforcement. It was only through the maintenance of these ideals that we have been able to attain our favourable status of today.

The Policewomen's Unit was first formed in Philadelphia when on March 1, 1936, the Mayor appointed a senior policewoman and four policewomen. Following the trend in other major cities, these women were secured in the hope that they would make a distinctive contribution to the prevention of juvenile delinquency. The unit was established as a part of the Crime Prevention Division, Bureau of Police, and was housed in an abandoned school building at 1117, Pine Street. The policewomen were charged with the handling of predelinquent juveniles, boys and girls under 16 years, but they performed a few other police functions. They supervised recreation for neighbourhood boys and girls, organized a bootblacks' club, made arrangements for underprivileged children to attend summer camp and also took youngsters to the circus. One of the major projects was a campaign against youthful scavengers and the restraining of boy bootblacks and children engaged in street peddling.

By 1939, the policewomen's activities were expanded to include investigations of morals cases, shoplifters and lost children, and later they were used to assist the health department and other police units in all cases involving women and girls. They were also assigned to the vice squad in the investigation of Philadelphia's "Barbary Coast," and as a result of their undercover work many of the notorious bars were raided and closed. In 1943, six additional policewomen were appointed, four of them being assigned to the Detective Bureau.

New difficulties faced the unit as a result of World War II. The city was filled with servicemen and the accompanying "Victory Girls." This necessitated continual patrol by policewomen in railroad stations, hotels, all-night theatres, central city luncheonettes, and bars.

Merit Examinations

In 1944, the November grand jury, after investigating juvenile delinquency in Philadelphia, recommended an increase in policewomen personnel. By this time, police work as a career for women was definitely recognized, and Philadelphia, as a step toward professionalization, set up merit examinations. On February 1, 1945, 10 policewomen were appointed through competitive civil service examinations. With this increase in personnel, alternating shifts were initiated and tours of duty were spread over the peak hours, and for the first time intensive night and day patrols were instituted. On December 15, 1945, headquarters were established in the administration building, Board of Education, and all activities were expanded. Policewomen, in addition to patrol duty, performed social case work with the opportunity of offering counsel and guidance to mal-adjusted and delinquent girls. They were also assigned to matron duty, to guarding women prisoners, and to investigating fortune tellers and morals cases. A public relations programme was instituted, and policewomen appeared as speakers to explain their duties and to urge the public's assistance in juvenile crime prevention. In 1950, the pay scale of policewomen was raised to equal that of their brother officers and they were admitted to the police pension fund. The Crime Prevention Division was renamed the Juvenile Aid Bureau, although the Policewomen's Unit continued to function as a separate unit. In 1951, all policewomen were ordered to secure uniforms to be worn on special assignment but not to be worn on general duty.

In August 1954, the Policewomen's Unit, numbering 40 women, was abolished as a separate group, and the women were integrated into the various squads of the Juvenile Aid

Bureau. They were equipped with .38 caliber police service revolvers, received instructions at the Police Academy pistol range, and were ordered to carry the weapons at all times. The ranks of policewoman lieutenant and policewoman sergeant were created by civil service. An examination was given and one policewoman lieutenant and two policewomen sergeants were appointed. Administratively, all policewomen are assigned to the Juvenile Aid Bureau, but they are available upon request for special assignments to all squads and units of the police department. At the present time they have two definite squads working alternate weekly tours of duty. They investigate all complaints concerning juveniles and offer 24-hour coverage. Policewomen are constantly assigned to the Juvenile Aid Bureau headquarters squad, which specializes in gang control, liquor and arson, vandalism, human relations, and curfew enforcement, and are also assigned to the Juvenile Aid Bureau morals squad where they handle juveniles who are sex offenders or victims of sex criminals.

Duties

In perhaps no other city in the country is the work of the policewoman as broad in scope as in the Philadelphia Police Department. In the juvenile field they investigate offences ranging from homicide, rape, robbery and burglary down through the various gang situations to inquiries regarding missing and runaway children. During 1956, over 16,000 hours were expended by policewomen on special assignments. These include the guarding of female prisoners and witnesses, escorting out-of-town female prisoners, and conducting special investigations where the services of women are needed. Policewomen are also detailed in uniform to sporting events where large crowds of juveniles will be in attendance.

National Recognition

The Philadelphia policewomen received national recognition and honor in 1955 and 1956 because of their excellent undercover work in breaking the back of a million-dollar drug racket. For weeks and months they

worked under cover in constant danger in order to secure information which would enable the narcotic squad to make the necessary arrests. Several of the girls were taken out of the training school and placed in secret assignments. Others were later assigned to undercover jobs. This was difficult, dangerous work. They had to learn the underworld "junkie" vocabulary and also had to be familiar with the various drugs, how they were used, and their effects. They had to develop the ability to avoid situations wherein they were urged to participate in "hophead" parties.

Interesting Experiences

There have been many other interesting and praiseworthy performances on the part of various policewomen. One night a policewoman, while off duty and dressed in dungarees, was walking with her dog, suddenly a man over 6 feet tall and weighing 200 pounds leaped from the bushes and grabbed her. She fought him off, drew her service revolver and chased the man until she finally caught him hiding under an automobile. The policewoman held him at gunpoint until the arrival of police cars.

On another occasion, while patrolling in her personal car, a policewoman saw a man trying to assault a young girl. She quickly stopped the automobile, drew her service revolver, searched him against the wall and then walked him at gunpoint three blocks to the nearest police station. This was a particularly dangerous arrest inasmuch as a hostile crowd surrounded them and kept threatening the policewoman and urging the prisoner to escape.

Some of our policewomen have done excellent work with various special squads in the apprehension of burglars and robbers. Another noteworthy accomplishment was the case of a serviceman who climbed out on the ninth floor window ledge of the Pennsylvania Suburban Railroad Station. For hours he kept the police at bay while he threatened to jump. Two policewomen, dressed in civilian clothes,

got out on the window ledge and were able to take him back into the room where hidden officers seized him.

One of the most exciting experiences in which I had the pleasure to participate was an extortion case wherein a large Philadelphia department store was threatened with bombing if a package containing \$500 was not placed at an appointed spot. I proceeded as a decoy to a taproom at which time the extortioner gave instructions to take a taxicab and proceed to a certain street designated by a white flag. Here I was to get out of the cab, walk down the street, drop the money, and keep on going. You can be sure that he had selected a very, very dark street for the pay off spot. I complied with the instructions and dropped the prepared package, expecting any minute to come face to face with the extortioner. Within a few minutes, detectives who had been covering my actions placed a 17-year-old boy and his mother under arrest.

"Badge and Key Award"

Each month the Philadelphia Police Department presents what is known as a "Badge and Key Award" to the police officer who has shown outstanding performance of duty and rendered extraordinary service to the department. Policewoman Doris Fanning was the first woman to receive this award for her undercover work in the narcotic roundup, but not all of the policewoman's assignments are as glamorous and adventurous. In fact, they constitute a very small segment of her every-day work.

Qualifications

Efforts are constantly being made to secure outstanding candidates for the position of policewoman. The applicant must be a citizen of the United States and must have been a *bona fide* resident of the city of Philadelphia for at least one year immediately prior to appointment. She cannot be appointed before her 21st birthday or after her 31st. The minimum educational requirement at the time of this writing is graduation from an accredited high

BHAWOO KASHINATH & Co., (Madras)

No. 4, PATULLA ROAD, MADRAS-2

Government & Railway Clothing Contractors,

Suppliers of Waterproof Garments,

all kinds of Head Wears,

metal buttons etc.

FOR ALL YOUR REQUIREMENTS OF HOSIERY GOODS SUCH AS

Jerseys, Socks, Stockings,
Gloves, Vests, Hosetops etc.

PLEASE CONTACT

The Swadeshi Mfg. Syndicate Ltd.

HIGH CLASS HOSIERY MANUFACTURERS
GOVERNMENT & MILITARY CONTRACTORS
CIVIL LINES, LUDHIANA

Tele { Gram : "SYNDICATE"
Phone : 46

DALMIA CEMENT

THE BRAND OF QUALITY

USED EXTENSIVELY IN CENTRAL &
STATE GOVERNMENT PROJECTS

BOTH BIG & SMALL

DALMIA CEMENT

HAS ESTABLISHED A REPUTATION FOR QUALITY AND DURABILITY



Other quality products :

Insulators
Refractories
Sanitary Wares (Highly glazed)
Stoneware Pipes (for underground drainage)
Reinforced Cement Concrete Pipes



Dalmia Cement (Bharat) Limited

DALMIAPURAM (Tiruchirapalli District)

Managing Agents :

M/s. Hari Brothers (Private) Limited, New Delhi

school. All applicants must possess a valid Pennsylvania driver's licence. Because of the physical standards required and the necessity for good physical condition to meet emergency situations, all applicants must be at least 5 feet 2 inches tall, weigh at least 110 pounds, have at least 20/30 vision in each eye without artificial correction, and must be in overall sound physical condition.

The question is often asked, "What personal qualities make a good policewoman?" It is obvious that these qualities must include high moral character, good reputation, honesty and integrity, but experience has clearly shown that the ultimate degree of success and happiness achieved by women in this field depends in great measure upon their innate personal attributes and sincere desire to serve. Among those attributes should be emotional balance and the ability to work with others, dependability, keen powers of observation and retentive memory, a sympathetic understanding of human behaviour, and a pleasant personality and appearance. The ideal policewoman must be firm but fair, consistent and uniform in her decisions, and must like people and have the ability to get along with them. Due to the nature of the work, the policewoman is required to work around the clock on alternating tours of duty. This requires a flexible person who can be called upon to forego personal plans in order to fulfil emergency assignment.

Examinations

The examination for applicants consists of a written test, a medical examination, a psychiatric examination, and a qualifying oral test. Each candidate must obtain a passing score on the written test in order to have her name placed on the eligible list. Applicants are fingerprinted, and no candidate who has been convicted of any crime, misdemeanour or felony will be considered. Ten points are added to the earned rating of any applicant who is entitled to veterans' preference. Immediately after entrance on duty each employee is required to sign a loyalty oath and questionnaire and is subject to severe penalties for falsification.

The questionnaire inquires minutely into any possible past or present membership in Communist or Fascist organizations. Failure to sign invalidates the appointment.

Advantages of the job

The position of policewoman offers young girls a guaranteed livelihood with many substantial benefits including job security, opportunity for promotion through competitive examinations, retirement provisions, annual vacation, sick leave, and a health and welfare program, together with annual increments based on merit. Minimum starting salary for the policewoman is \$3,925 per year with progressive accruals until she reaches in 5 years the full pay salary of \$4,930.

Training Program

We are particularly proud of our training program, which was first inaugurated in April 1955. At that time all recruits were sent to the Police Academy and given a thorough 5-week training course in criminal law and procedure, laws of arrest, report writing, techniques of interrogation and interview, defensive tactics, use of firearms, first-aid, rules and regulations of the department, city ordinances, testifying in court, and narcotics investigation. The Juvenile Aid Bureau also conducts a 2-week indoctrination with our own personnel. An in-service training course has also been set up and is a continuous and integral part of the Juvenile Aid Bureau program.

The primary function of a policewoman is in the area of crime prevention and the investigation of juveniles who come to the attention of the police. She is, first of all, a police officer with full powers of arrest. She enforces all laws and ordinances with particular reference to the criminal behaviour or delinquency of women and children. The policewoman follows through her investigations, writes reports, makes arrests and appears in court to testify against those charged with the various violations. It is obvious, therefore, that she must have continual training in the Penal Code and be familiar with arrest procedure and techniques.

It is also important that a policewoman be able to write a comprehensive, adequate report and present competent courtroom testimony.

Performance Ratings

Every third week following her appointment, performance ratings are presented to each employee to assist her, by means of constructive criticism submitted by her immediate superiors, in developing the techniques and skills of the position. At the conclusion of the 6-month probationary period the policewoman has obtained a knowledge of the job requirements, its advantages and disadvantages. In addition, her superiors have had an opportunity to observe her job performance and can analyze her ability to function. A probationer can

be dismissed if she does not earn a satisfactory rating during this period.

Asset

The policewoman is a valuable asset to law enforcement, and her position is one which calls for keen observation and sound judgment, together with a deep sense of appreciation of human behaviour. While the policewoman is not expected to be a trained psychologist or sociologist, through investigation and interviews she must try to determine and evaluate the various factors which lead up to the juvenile offence. This is truly police work with a social point of view. The Philadelphia policewoman performs the dual role of protecting society through detection and apprehension of wrongdoers and of preventing crime through the implementation of sound deterrent practices.

Johnnie—"As soon as I realised it was crooked business I got out of it."
Bertie—"How much?"

"But, doctor," said the worried patient, "are you sure I'll pull through? I've heard of cases where the doctor has made a wrong diagnosis, and treated some one for pneumonia who has afterward died of typhoid fever."

"Nonsense," spluttered the affronted physician. "When I treat a patient for pneumonia, he dies of pneumonia."

"I just found out your uncle's an undertaker. I thought you told me he was a doctor."
"Nope, I just said he followed the medical profession."

HOW TO GET ALONG WITH YOUR BOSS

BY

N. R. SRINIVASAN, I.P.S.,
(Inspector-General of Police, Kerala State)

No other single act of an officer pleases his boss more than his doing his job efficiently. There is no short cut to win his heart, nor is there a substitute for it. Doing the job thoroughly and ably is a *sine qua non* to get along with your boss. Perhaps that is not all that is required as some officers imagine. "I am doing my job to the best of my ability. I do not care what my Boss thinks about me," is a wrong or negative attitude of mind.

You need not be subservient. You can put forward your point of view to your boss. You can even urge your view-point in any matter. You should not, however, feel aggrieved, disappointed or dwarfed if your opinion is not accepted. Your duty ends with the expression of your views. Your boss has a bigger pattern before him. Yours is comparatively smaller. The recognition of your limitation is essential. Once your boss takes up a decision on an issue, there is no scope for two points of view—yours and his. It is as much yours as it is his. Mental acquiescence of this position is called for. Your view vanishes into his and there is only one direction to be faithfully carried out by you. He, being your boss, has a right to tell you what you should do and also pass judgment on what you do. To go on grumbling of interference from above and go about saying that what you do is not what you would or should have done is a negative tendency, apt to demoralise administrative machinery.

All have their likes and dislikes. No two persons are identical in this respect. To get to know the likes and dislikes of a person with whom you have to transact business is part of education. There are bosses who like their

subordinate officers dropping in without previous notice. Others desire a ring up at least before you appear before them. There are still others who insist on fixing up an appointment by correspondence for calling on them. You must therefore find out the inclinations of your boss in this regard.

To err is human. Your boss is also human. He too is liable to commit mistakes. You must give allowance for that. To exaggerate your boss's mistakes is to fail to reflect on human nature and is uncharitable.

All have worries. Some try to get over them. Others fall a victim to them. To think that you have plenty and your boss has none or considerably less is, to say the least, incorrect. Some, like the Frenchman, communicate them to all those whom they meet and others, like the Englishman, do not admit they have worries. Take it for granted that your boss has enough of worries and that your personal worries if communicated to him will only make him more miserable. Avoid telling your boss your personal worries and requests. If unavoidable, you certainly can, but don't be under the delusion that you can pluck sympathy and commiseration by placing before him a long list of your worries. Your boss is apt to develop an attitude of avoiding you.

Keep your boss informed of all matters of interest—major of course, minor too. What is minor in your judgment may be helpful to your boss. It may be a connecting link in a chain which your boss is welding with pieces of information he is already in possession of. All that he has may appear to him to be meaningless. With the bit of information you pass on, minor

OCT-DEC. '59]

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

13

though to you, a meaningful picture may unfold itself to your boss.

Do not hang about your boss always. Some may like it but many may not. If at all you gain something by so doing, you lose heavily otherwise. Your colleagues may distrust you. You may be looked down upon by them. They will not co-operate with you. On the top of

these, all the ill-luck arising out of their transactions with the boss will be traced to your evil influence with the boss, though you may, in fact, be innocent.

Work hard. Be sincere in your work and trustworthy in your conduct. What little you may lack in ability will be covered by these qualities.

Shoe Traps Assailant

Early before daybreak on the morning of September 29, 1957, a woman of Chula Vista, California, was awakened by the smell of cigarette smoke in her room. She saw the form of a man standing near her bed, smoking a cigarette. Startled, she reached for a light switch but the man grabbed her by the throat and threatened, "Shut up or I'll kill you." The victim managed to free herself, started to scream and attempted to run from the room. The intruder grabbed her and tried to choke her. Again she was able to elude him and run into a hallway. The man then fled from the house.

In the search of the house for evidence, police officers found a man's right shoe. This shoe was sent to the FBI Laboratory for comparison with the shoes worn by a suspect at the time of his arrest. The Laboratory report stated, upon completion of the comparison, that the size of the shoe and the placement of the toe impressions inside the shoe were such that the shoe found at the scene of the assault could have been worn by the suspect and that there were no dissimilarities between the foot impression inside this shoe and that inside the right shoe taken from the subject at the time of his arrest. It was further pointed out that the general wear characteristics of the soles and heels on these two shoes were similar.

The services of the FBI Laboratory expert were requested for the trial, but the subject decided to change his plea to guilty just three days before the date set for the trial. He was sentenced to serve from 1 to 20 years in the California State Prison.

—from the "FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin," (April 1959), Vol. 28, No. 4.

medals and certificates awarded to policemen who show their bravery in many ways.

To conclude this essay, the ideal policeman is the one who achieves the golden mean between loyalty to his duties and service to the public by inspiring confidence in the public who will then look upon him as a friend and as a protector, instead of as a necessary evil.

No doubt, it may be difficult for a policeman to achieve this golden mean. But that cannot be helped if he wants to be an ideal policeman. A policeman's life is not an easy one. In the words of the Sergeant of Police in Gilbert's 'Pirates of Penzance,'

"When constabulary duty's to be done,
A policeman's lot is not a happy one."

Testimony of Handwriting Expert Sole Basis for Conviction

The police, while investigating a report that the defendant's wife had disappeared, found that the certificate of ownership of her car had been assigned to one John Bowman. The car was found three or four blocks from the defendant's home, but no trace of a John Bowman could be found. After suspecting that the certificate had been forged, the police invited the defendant to submit samples of his handwriting, which he did voluntarily. These samples and other authenticated specimens of the defendant's handwriting and that of his wife were submitted to a handwriting expert. At the trial of the defendant for alleged forgery of the certificate of ownership, the expert testified that after studying all the specimens of handwriting, he was of the opinion that the writing on the certificate was that of the defendant and not his wife. No other proof of the defendant's alleged forgery was submitted, nor any direct proof that the defendant had exercised possession or dominion over the car or the certificate. The defendant's wife did not testify because she could not be found. The jury found the defendant guilty of forgery with intent to prejudice, injure, damage and defraud. The Superior Court of New Jersey, Appellate Division, reversing on other grounds, held that a jury could properly find the defendant guilty of a crime requiring specific intent where the evidence was wholly circumstantial and based solely on the testimony of a handwriting expert. *State v. Bilna*, 134 A. 2d. 738 (N.J., 1957).

The court noted that the opinion of a handwriting expert is no longer considered a low order of evidence to be accorded little evidential weight. The court stated, however, that the expert's opinion is on the same plane as other evidence, and the weight given it will depend on the clearness with which the expert demonstrates the basis for his opinion. Thus, since the jury believed the testimony of the handwriting expert, and the act of forgery itself is sufficient to imply an intent to defraud in the content of the circumstances of this particular case, the court said there was adequate basis for conviction of a crime requiring specific intent.

—Journal of "Criminal Law," "Criminology" and "Police Science," Vol. 49.
Also reported in the *Australian Police Journal*, Vol. 13, No. 3 for July, 1959.

RANDOM THOUGHTS ON INVESTIGATION

BY

SRI G. V. NARAYANAN, I.P.S.,
(Principal, Police Training College, Vellore)

The mere observing and recording of obvious evidence, as, say, an ordinary citizen would do, will not meet the standards required of real police work. Of course it is the oral evidence of witnesses as given before the court which usually proves a case ultimately, but this oral evidence must needs be assessed against the facts and details observed and recorded by the investigating police officer, and there has to be perfect compatibility between the oral testimony of witnesses on the one hand and what has been recorded after local observation by the investigating officer, on the other. And there should also be compatibility between the oral testimony of one witness and the oral testimony of another witness. Therefore there is necessity for the highest degree of accuracy and attention to the minutest details on the part of the investigating officer when examining and describing material evidence. The exact distances, positions, sizes and descriptions of objects must be noted, as well as their relative positions, and a plan or photograph is always essential. Photographs sometimes mislead through the two-dimensional representation of three-dimensional space and a plan drawn to scale and a photograph with explanatory particulars added, will be very useful. The exact distances may be vital, and any ambiguity or indefiniteness may destroy the effect of what would otherwise be a strong circumstance. An investigating officer must always remember that the absence of proof which diligence could have secured is the one big cause for the acquittal of the guilty by a Court of Law.

We have always felt that many seeming contradictions could easily be reconciled and explained if only the investigating officer had probed them further. Witnesses A and B

may be in a room, one facing the other and they may depose differently merely because one saw in one direction and the other in another. This, instead of disproving the evidence mutually, may be explainable to the court as the result of each speaking the truth and, we may add, the explaining is strictly the duty of the investigator. Another regular experience in our Courts of Law is an almost incredible variance and inaccuracy in the testimony of honest witnesses as to questions concerning time, distance, colour, speed and other matters of description. This may be because of the investigating officer not going deep enough into the testimony when he first examined the witnesses, or may be because he found out different ideas from various witnesses and set them into a certain shape as understood by him, and then put this shape into the recorded testimony of the other witnesses in the honest belief that since facts were that way, these other witnesses should also have noticed them thus-wise. In such a case, an investigating officer should, before writing the evidence down, get the witness to demonstrate his position and put the facts to him as he understood them and ask him if he also saw them the same way. For, then, if the witness did not see them the way he understood, it means either that the investigating officer had grasped facts wrongly or that the previous witness had not expressed correctly or that the two witnesses had not been together at the same time and place but had probably followed each other after a lapse of time at the scene. Observations—astronomical or terrestrial—are very much subject to the time-space factor, and variations in time-space in respect of witnesses do certainly affect the points noticed. But this is no excuse

for failure on the part of the investigating officer to understand facts correctly or explain them in his investigation. This will certainly involve much time and labour. But we expect the judge to understand and decide a case as the evidence has made it out to be, and it is the duty of the investigating officer to see that the full and correct picture is put before the judge, with a clear explanation of seeming discrepancies.

But this does not mean "touching up." You cannot squeeze true evidence into a pre-fabricated steel frame. It has to be given naturally and as it came. Where two expressions of testimony are at apparent variance, it is the investigating officer's duty to explain how and why they are at variance. Where he cannot explain the seeming discrepancies, he must let them go down into record as they are, rather than alter or suppress parts of them. The more the facts presented at a trial, the more the chance of a just decision being reached in the case. And it is none of prosecution's role to ensure that a conviction is got where bits of evidence are mutually and irreconcilably contradictory. If this irreconcilability is so great that definite falsehood is indicated, the investigating officer need not even charge the case. Where the issue is open, it is his duty to let the court judge the evidence in the light of what the investigating officer himself has observed and in the light of facts brought out in cross-examination and re-examination.

Sodermann gives many specific instances of faulty perception and memory on the part of witnesses, leading to wrong description of colours and other facts. Memory depends on the depth and recency of the mental image and this, in turn, depends on factors like prolonged observation, association of ideas, physical peculiarities of the eyes, lighting conditions, conditions of shock, auto-suggestions or suggestions gathered in the mind from what others say, and so on. Mistakes do occur in regard to testimonial details on account of the faulty perception and memory of witnesses, and these have a permanently damaging effect on the

trustworthiness of the concerned witness. The plain truth here is that that witness is unworthy of credence whose perceptive and cognitive powers are demonstrably faulty or inadequate. But where the perceptive and cognitive powers of the investigating officers are proved to be inadequate, the consequences to the case are still worse. There was a murder case trial recalled by Fricke, Judge of the Los Angeles Superior Criminal Court, where the question was whether there was liquor in the apartment of the deceased. The investigating officer had failed to notice and record the presence of a bottle of liquor—which a pressman's camera had fortunately recorded for ever beyond doubt, with even the name on the label of the bottle perfectly discernible in the photograph. Naturally the failure of the investigating officer to record this fact cost the case. Such instances of faulty observations are to be avoided by the investigating officer. These mistakes damn the reputation of the investigating officer so fully that he is rarely trusted thereafter, and probably justifiably so.

Other factors being proper, the reason why an investigating officer is sometimes perfunctory in regard to observation is usually that he has considered that the case is proved to his own satisfaction, and in so doing he overlooks the fact that much of what he considers evidence and what he considers as reconcilable are still to be proved so to the Judge by means of recorded material in the investigation. He—nay, we—may not always agree with the rules of admissibility of evidence, but the cold fact is that these rules do exist and the court can only look at evidence that is lawfully presented before it. And not just any evidence, or any quantum of evidence, but it should be adequate evidence as per the law, and where corroboration is material or necessary, it should also be there.

It is appropriate here to consider what the learned Judges of the High Court of Judicature at Madras had to say in a recent case (Criminal Appeal No. 600 of 1959) :—

"It is highly regrettable that the medical witness was not asked anything about the character of the injury; and whether it was an injury merely likely to cause death, or sufficient in the ordinary course of nature to cause death. We need not emphasise that it is of the greatest importance that, in murder cases, such facts should be carefully elicited by the prosecution from the Medical Officer who has held the autopsy.

"Where the circumstantial evidence establishes the guilt of the accused upon the charge of murder, some further evidence is necessary, establishing some connection between the accused and the victim, in relation to the time and locality of offence, or to the crime itself.

"Before taking leave of the case, we are constrained to observe that we do feel the moral conviction that the accused was probably guilty of participating in the murder itself. We are most reluctant that an offender in such a grave crime should escape retributive justice, and we have to observe that this is directly due to the very defective investigation of this case. Investigation in this was neither alert nor industrious. Considering that the accused lived in a neighbouring village and that many villagers would have been astir at dawn when the old woman went out, surely industrious investigation could have unearthed pieces of evidence relating to the movements both of the victim and of the accused. If only such evidence had been forthcoming to show that the accused was seen in that locality at about that time, or even proceeding towards it, the situation would have been far different. If as we suspect, the umbrella (M.O. 6) was not the weapon of offence at all, it is clear that the investigation has

been imperfect upon this vital aspect also. We desire that our views to this effect should be forwarded to the proper authorities, so that hereafter at least an alert and thorough investigation might procure all relevant pieces of evidence, where proof of such a grave crime depends upon circumstantial evidence alone, in order to enable the courts to mete out full justice."

The above is not a solitary expression of opinion. The Hon'ble Mr. Justice Soma-sundaram, writing in the Madras Police Journal (Vol. III, 1958) states :—

"In the course of hearing cases, the Judges also know what the truth is. But as Judges we could act only on the admissible evidence on record. Even if an accused is guilty we have to acquit him, if the legal evidence is not satisfactory."

Now, no man investigating a case to-day can tell what evidence will in future be of importance. He may spend days in finding the person who has committed a homicide only to find that the accused admits the homicide but claims that it was in self-defence; by that time much of the evidence which would shed light upon the claim of self-defence may have disappeared. Let us consider therefore how we can avoid such a mistake in investigation. There are always certain basic probabilities apparent in each case and it is to be expected of all mature investigators to take all probabilities into account and seek all types of evidence which may have a bearing on each. If there is an allegation of rape it is equally on the cards that the

- (i) accused had suffered finger nail scratches from the victim's fingers—for which both the victim's finger nails and the accused person's body have to be examined;
- (ii) that the clothing of the victim and accused may have tears or damages or blood or seminal stains or adhering

- hairs or other material (such as the earth or dust of the room or place);
- (iii) that there may be witnesses who heard a cry or expression of complaint or noticed some kind of special subsequent conduct;
 - (iv) that there may be fingerprints and foot-prints in and around the place of occurrence;
 - (v) that, after all, there was no rape but the prosecutrix fearing exposure, had complained—which takes the investigating officer to the question of previous relationship between the parties and a host of other points having a bearing on the episode;
 - (vi) that there was malicious false complaint and so on.

Each case is a peculiar tangle of currents and cross-currents, facts and falsehoods and motives. Of course experience teaches what all to look for in each case. What an investigating officer overlooks, his superior, looking at facts from a higher level and in a broader perspective, can often notice and suggest. Investigation is never one man's job. The supervisory officers have to look critically at the investigation all the time and from the very start and suggest the other possibilities when the investigating officer is examining the few approaches that strike him as probable. Evidence should be gathered with all these probabilities in view. It is only as the investigation progresses that the facts take shape and the investigating officer can confidently stake his all on one approach.

In many cases it is found that the investigating officer had erred by passing up as immaterial or unnecessary available evidence which, later on, frequently when it is too late, turned out

to be of great importance. This error invariably happens at the early stages of the investigation when trends are not crystal-clear. And the investigating officer should remember that even when the facts are clear to his own mind, it is not enough, unless they are clear enough when examined as evidence through the coloured glass of the Evidence Act which the Judge is going to do during the trial. At the early stages therefore, when evident facts seem clear and demonstrative as to just what had happened, the trained and experienced officer should refrain from drawing the apparently obvious conclusions in haste, but proceed with the same degree of care and with the same regard for every available bit of evidence, as though the entire affair were still shrouded with mystery. He must come out with his charge-sheet in the case only when he has looked at all aspects and satisfied himself that one approach alone is the correct approach, and even then only when he finds that every circumstance he has considered to be evidence is capable of being let in as evidence in court. The apparently obvious suicide may turn out to be a murder. Our advice therefore is that where there is an investigating officer toiling to gather evidence, all his supervisory officers should study the facts and trends closely, go into all possibilities and guide the investigating officer by frequent conference and advice as to what all lines of approach he should make initially and what all evidence he should examine before deciding on a certain opinion in the case. Generally, they should look at the picture as a Judge would, and not allow the investigating officer to settle down to a particular pattern of thinking till all the facts fit and all the facts point to only one conclusion.

As a famous judge once pointed out, "Looking back over a personal experience in court rooms for over forty years, I am satisfied that more miscarriages of justice result from insufficient preparation and presentation of evidence than any other cause. The officer who feels dissatisfied because a defendant, whom he believes guilty, has been acquitted is usually himself to blame for the acquittal."

Genius in police work, as in every other line of endeavour, means simply the infinite capacity for observing and making use of details. I can still recall a day when my friend, the Superintendent of Police, Special Police Establishment, Madras, took me to a hotel at Vellore (my headquarters) to check up if a certain official of the Military Engineering Services, against whom a charge of corruption was pending, had or had not stayed in the hotel on a certain day when he was supposed to have been at Cochin and received a bribe. We found that he was. This line of approach let him out of the case, but there was nothing for us to feel peeved about, as that was how the truth stood. The case had been built up on the basis of laborious local investigation at Cochin. The investigating officer had even made enquiries at Vellore. It transpired that the investigating officer's enquiries at Vellore had been casual. He had perused the hotel register—without realising that the accused had stayed in one room

on one day and moved the next day into another room where he stayed for four days. The investigating officer had come in the fond hope of getting evidence to corroborate the ideas he had gathered at Cochin during the investigation, and he got what he wanted, namely, that the accused was in the hotel only from the 20th February till the 23rd February. He did not even consider whether the accused could have arrived in the hotel on the 19th February, which was the truth, and which the Superintendent of Police, Special Police Establishment, found out after more careful check of the bill books and the other registers of the hotel. The case went down the drain, naturally. This is what happens when investigating officers start proceeding on preconceived theories! The case exemplifies what we have observed regarding the duties of the supervisory officer. With good supervision, the mistakes of the investigating officer could be checked properly.

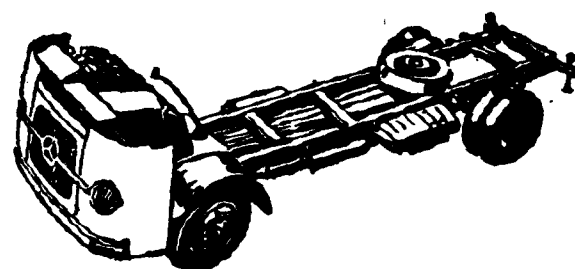
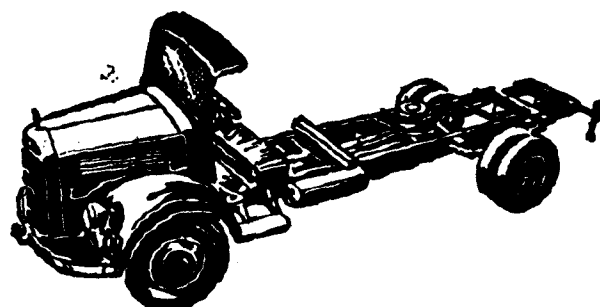
The officer saw a drunk weaving down the sidewalk and followed him. Every time he came to a lamp post, the drunk staggered slowly around it into the street and then back to the sidewalk.

"You'd better come with me, bud," said the officer, tapping him on the shoulder. "You're not fit to navigate."

"I'm awri," said the drunk. "It's those poshts. They come whizzing by. But I jump out of the way, don't I?"



IT'S
TOUGH
POWERFUL
ECONOMICAL



**TATA
MERCEDES
BENZ**

DIESEL BUSES & TRUCKS

V. S. T. MOTORS PRIVATE LTD

MADRAS • SALEM

FOR

Radio and Amplifier parts: Philips, Telefunken Transistors
and Diodes, Transistor Radios at Competitive prices

VISIT

ALPHA RADIOS & NOVELTIES PRIVATE LTD

9 MOUNT ROAD Opp: Mount Road Post Office MADRAS 2
(Phone No. 84771)

Authorised Dealers for MURPHY RADIOS

Showroom at:
177/179 MOUNT ROAD, MADRAS 2
(Opp: Casino Theatre)

ALWAYS CONTACT

M/s. LAKSHMI HOSIERY (Regd)
WATT GANJ, LUDHIANA

FOR MILITARY & POLICE, COTTON & WOOLLEN GARMENTS

i.e., BANIAN COTTON WHITE, JERSEYS-SOCKS, HOSE-TOPS ETC.

With the best compliments of

STANVAC

The Name that stands for Progress

**IMPROVE
YOUR STANDARD**

WITH

FLAX GOODS

Flax is the world's strongest
natural fibre and Flax goods are
today manufactured in India only
by us

FLAX FIRE HOSE

(Shrunk & Burnetised)

"VARUNA"



Bursting pressure 600 lbs. per sq.
Inch • conforms to Government
Specification No. G/Misc/57C •
Approved by Insurance Associa-
tion of India.

FLAX DELIVERY HOSE

Conforming to the Government
Specification No. G/Misc/58C.

**FLAX THREADS, TWINS &
CORDS**

For Leather Industry, Sports
Goods Industry & Textile
Industry, For Heavy Textile
Fabrication, Sack Sewing,
Fishing Net, Upholstery, Book
Binding, Packing, etc., etc.

FLAX CANVAS &

TARPAULINS

Of unusual strength and durability
Tarpaulins fully Waterproof,
Rotproof, made to actual sizes
with eyelets & corner pieces.
Stitched with strongest FLAX
threads. Twice as strong &
durable as cotton paulins.



COTTON & "FLAXOCOT"
(Cotton Flax Mix) CANVAS
& TARPAULINS

Admirable for Civil, Military use.
"FLAXOCOT" a speciality
in strength and pliability.

JAYSHREE TEXTILES LTD

RISHRA :: WEST BENGAL

SCOTLAND YARD'S GREATEST SECRET

BY

ANTHONY ABBOT

(With grateful acknowledgements to the *Writer and to the Readers' Digest*, in the 1948 issue of which the following was published.)

One moonlight night more than 100 years ago, crowds of London citizens gathering in Coldbath Fields to protest against a Tory Government, were attacked by marching men in unfamiliar uniforms. These were the "bobbies," Sir Robert Peel's newly created Metropolitan Police. In the uproar that followed, one of Peel's constables was slain.

Charged with murder, seven rioters were jailed. But the coroner's jury returned a verdict of "justifiable homicide," because the officer had tried to stifle the sacred right of free speech. Delighted citizens presented each jurymen with a silver cup.

To this day Scotland Yard, remembering that lesson, regards the average citizen with unshakable respect. Politeness is the bobbies' rule; even on most dangerous posts the London police carry no firearms except in emergencies; their only weapon is a 15 inch truncheon.

Yet Scotland Yard's record, both in solving and preventing crimes, is astonishing. In 1945, the United States had 6,847 murders and manslaughters and 4,387 manslaughters by negligence, drunken driving, etc.—a total of 11,234. England in 1945, the latest reported period, had 64 murders and 142 manslaughters, a total of 206 not counting the negligent manslaughters, estimated at about 200. Only 5 English murders remained unsolved. It is anybody's guess how many murders remain unsolved in the United States every year.

What is the secret of such efficiency? A brilliant French sleuth may trust to his intuition or "hunch;" the FBI agent will depend on

logic, laboratory resources, legal training and marksmanship. But the Scotland Yard Inspector prides himself above all else on an understanding of human nature, based on organised knowledge.

From the day the felon enters an English prison his habits are observed and listed in a serial catalogue and cross-index of tastes and preferences, accents and oddities of speech, quirks of character or personality. Just as important as his fingerprints, height and coloration are the facts that he hates boiled potatoes, likes to hum old chapel tunes and can roll a cigarette with his left hand. Nine hundred and ninety-nine of these annotated eccentricities may never be used, but the thousandth can be of extraordinary value.

A classic example is the Mary Ennis case. On a rainy Sunday morning, a constable, trudging through the downpour in a long street of seedy houses, halted to stare at a yellow curtain flapping in a second storey window.

He knew that Mary Ennis, a recluse living alone in the house, always slept with her bedroom windows tightly closed. Why throw them open in a storm like this? Investigating, the Constable found a broken kitchen door lock. Upstairs, on the bed in the front room, strangled with a towel, lay the last of Mary Ennis. A wall safe had been burned open with an oxyacetylene torch and the contents rifled. Then the murderer had dawdled in the kitchen, munching bread and gooseberry jam.

A search of insurance papers revealed the motive. The spinster had inherited a small,

OCT.-DEC. '59]

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

27

not very valuable collection of antique jewellery. That an experienced thief had stolen her glittering hoard was clear because he had worn gloves even while eating, but because a seam of one glove was ripped, a cloudy fragment of skin-print from a human finger was lifted from a shelf of the wall safe. There was also on the bedroom floor, a little clod of silvery clay.

Later in the day, Yard Inspectors assembled to compare findings. From the fingerprint department, seven cards partially matched the fingerprint fragment. Soil resembling the clay was to be found in quantity only near the village of Dorking. Chisel marks on the Ennis backdoor resembled those made by tools of several ex-convicts. Most startling of all was information from the personality catalogue; of 20 thieves known to eat a meal at the scene of their misdeeds, only one evinced a special fondness for gooseberry jam.

The problem narrowed down to whether there was any known burglar who: (a) lived near Dorking; (b) had previously used a certain type of chisel; (c) had a finger print that might coincide with the fragment; and (d) was fond of gooseberry jam. One man, and one only—James Scully—answered all four specifications. He confessed and was hanged for the murder of Mary Ennis.

British sleuths believe that mechanical or scientific devices can only assist, never supplant, the human resourcefulness of an experienced investigator. That trust dominates the old fashioned building by the Thames, Scotland Yard. It is the headquarters of the London Metropolitan Police. It is also the fortress of the Criminal Investigation Department, the home office of an anticrime brain trust.

"In preventing and solving crimes, our concentrated population works for us," Mr. Ronald Howe, the Edgar Hoover of the Yard, explained. "And our island position, unlike that of the United States, makes it hard for crooks to escape. Then, too, the national habit of our people, living for generations in the same neighbourhood, makes it almost

impossible for a stranger to hide out anywhere; a new man in a neighbourhood is conspicuous. One great difference between law enforcement in the United States and England lies in the fact that our people are actively behind us, determined to crush law-breaking. The man in the street is our strongest asset and we, on our part, lean over backward to protect his rights. We have never needed the third degree."

Precisely because they do scrupulously respect civil rights, the Yardmen are sometimes prone to feats of fervid imagination and land their man, such as in the case of the poisoned blondes.

All England was agog with talk of "pink pills for pale pretties." Strolling abroad after dusk, a mysterious, brown-whiskered gallant would seek the acquaintance of some lass, invariably buxom and yellow haired. He would buy her a supper and then, over dessert or savory, confide that he was a physician. To his practised eye, his companion looked a little peaked. Undoubtedly she needed a tonic. Why not just swallow these invigorating pink pills? Two hours later the girl, having taken the medicine, would die.

An anonymous note let the Yard to suspect a certain Dr. Neil Cream. This physician who most certainly did have a fancy for roaming in the gloaming, became aware one April twilight that he was being followed; indeed, those C.I.D. men were determined to make him notice them. For six blocks a giant dock hand would trail the Doctor, then give way to a sly little pugilist in cap and jersey, to be succeeded by a pig-tailed Chinese.

This dogging continued for days. If Dr. Cream sat down on a park bench, a shadow squatted patiently behind the bushes. Let him enter a shop and the pursuer loitered just outside. It got to be more than what human nerves could endure; Dr. Cream plunged into a pub and called feebly for ale. In his despondency, Dr. Cream confided to a jovial and muscular customer nearby that he was being hounded by unknown enemies. He

even pointed out the ruffian who had followed him in. "Listen, matcy," said the affable stranger, "no pal of mine is going to be bothered by the likes of 'im."

Saying which, he swaggered up to the mysterious shadow. "You're annoying my friend," he declared. "Leave."

The other man squared off, but one blow knocked him down; the next moment he was scrambling under the swinging half doors.

Thus began a queer friendship. For several nights the stranger protected Dr. Cream; so intimate did they become that the impostor from the Yard was finally invited into Dr. Cream's rooms. There he picked up a jar of the pink pills and a piece of writing paper duplicating that used for the anonymous note accusing Dr. Cream. The killer had written it himself, out of bravado.

Every graduate of Peel House, a training school for detectives of Scotland Yard, hears as part of his study in human behaviour the tale of the drumbeater of Bayswater. Bertram Webb, a prosperous London accountant, was found dead in his Bayswater flat from a pistol wound. He seemed not to have an enemy in the world, and there was not a clue until Chief Inspector Horwell learned that the victim had returned home suddenly from his club. Then he suspected that some one had been "beating the drum" i.e., ringing door bells and breaking in if no one answers. The detective's theory was that Webb was shot when he surprised such an intruder.

Agents found one neighbour who remembered a stranger at her door the day before, soliciting business for the Warwick Garage. There was no Warwick Garage in all Bayswater. Inspector Horwell went to the files seeking some reference to Warwick in the personal details about known drum-beaters. At last he came upon a certain Frederick Stewart—who had an aunt living on Warwick Road.

When loot from the murdered man's flat was found in Stewart's possession, he confessed.

Mementos of some of the Yard's triumphs are kept in a stonewalled chamber called the Black Museum. Among the grisly assortment of hack saws, poison pellets, counterfeit pound notes and forged wills is the page of a ship's register signed, "Mr. John Robinson and Son."

In the year 1910 a patent-medicine man known in the Hall of Infamy as Dr. Harley Crippen received a visit from Mr. Walter Dew of the Yard. The C.I.D. Inspector enquired about Belle, the doctor's domineering, badgering spouse. For six months no one had seen or heard of her, and the ladies of a church aid society were becoming curious. The soft-voiced little doctor shrugged: Belle had simply run off with a vaudeville harmonica player and was probably in Canada.

Asking permission to look over the house, the detective prowled from cellar to attic, and finding nothing suspicious, went his way. But by chance he left a tobacco pouch behind: Three days later he came back for it, only to find the doctor vanished. With him, so neighbours declared, went a beauteous lass named Ethel Lee Neve. His suspicions revived, the Inspector searched the house again, and this time unearthed the corpse of the missing Belle Crippen, buried under a coal bin.

Having gathered all the facts he could about the missing pair—including the detail that Dr. Crippen was addicted to the novels of Dickens—Inspector Dew sent out information about them, especially to ocean-going ship masters, and made sure that it reached every vessel bound for Canada.

And now, for the first time in history, the new fangled wireless telegraph was used to capture a criminal. Out of the ether Captain Kendall of the ship "Montrose," bound for Quebec, reported that amongst his passengers were "John Robinson and Son." The Captain added that Master Robinson's trousers seemed too taut across the hips. In the dark of the hurricane deck, passengers had caught glimpses of the pair kissing. And in less fervid moments

the soft-voiced man read David Copperfield aloud.

At Gravesend, Inspector Dew boarded a ship faster than the "Montrose." Meanwhile, again by wireless, the whole world knew that Dr. Crippen and his young lady had been found. When they were arrested on the Quebec gang plank by Inspector Dew, the only surprised persons were the fugitives themselves. Dr. Crippen was hanged; Ethel who had taken no part in the murder was freed to repent her sins.

In questioning suspects, Yardmen, as always, depend on their ability to judge human nature. Never in a hurry and never oppressive, they are always polite, even kindly. Sometimes they don't question a suspect at all; they let him stew in his own worries.

One such instance was that of a handsome young libertine, suspected of murdering a

girl and dismembering her body. The evidence against him was slim. Chief Constable Wensley seated the prisoner at a large table and surrounded him with a ring of silent men. Hour after hour passed, the night wearing thin, as the suspected man sat with his captors. There was not a sound save the ticking of a wheezy clock.

Then, just as dawn was breaking, Inspector Wensley called the man and seated him by an open window. On a wall across the street, Wensley had had spread a large theatrical poster of a magician named Horace Golden. After fifteen minutes of quiet quizzing, the suspect suddenly staggered up and croaked:

"I did it. I killed her." The poster he had seen in the crimson glow of sunrise showed the famous magician's trick, advertised in letters two feet high: "Sawing a Woman in half!"

Old Hen—"Let me give you a piece of good advice."
Young Hen—"What is it?"
Old Hen—"An egg a day keeps the axe away."

CONTROL OF LORRY TRAFFIC

BY

SRI P. J. MANUEL,
(Traffic Sergeant, Madurai City)

The Motor Vehicles (Amendment) Act, No. 100 of 1956, has ample provisions to meet the need for better control over the increasing lorry traffic. Failure to take advantage of these provisions and unsatisfactory methods of check adopted throughout the State have resulted in Government considering such drastic measures as the total prohibition of lorry traffic on highways during certain hours.

Control of lorry traffic, in theory, is very simple. Section 86 of the Motor Vehicles Act requires the driver of a transport vehicle to be in possession of his driving licence while driving. You 'book' a driver for a traffic violation, and, as provided for in Section 129 of Motor Vehicles Act, seize his driving licence, issue a temporary acknowledgement stipulating its validity to, say, 7 days, to ensure his appearance in court. As the driver cannot drive a vehicle after the 7th day, he is forced to appear in court. If not, he runs the risk of being caught for driving in contravention of Section 86 and of arrest under Section 128. Attending court means losing a day's batta—daily allowance—as driver. Since the driver now knows that the Law catches up with him quickly, he develops a respect for the law. In practice, unfortunately, it is far from being so simple, although it could be made so.

The biggest problem is to ensure the appearance of the driver, roaming over the whole State, driving his vehicle, in the local court at the time specified. All drivers ignore the "binding" over done by checking officers. All except a few local drivers continue to dodge court summons. A warrant is finally obtained—months after the case was detected—with the endorsement of the court under Section 130

of the Motor Vehicles Act to collect the 'Fine' amount or to execute the warrant. Process servers carry the warrant all over the State and collect the 'Fine' amounts from the owners who pay up fearing retribution as a lorry can be traced more easily than a driver and 'booked' again. The driver by this time has probably left service and got re-employed under another lorry-owner. After you 'booked' him, he very often hears nothing further about it. He has not even lost a day's 'batta' by attending court. This is the main cause of the supreme indifference exhibited by most lorry drivers to driving regulations. He is seldom caught. If caught, the owner takes the rap.

A driver, away from his headquarters, will, out of the hire-charges collected by him, draw diesel oil (he wants to go home), check up engine oil (he does not like to be stranded on the road), check up headlamps—bright lights only—(he likes to drive in comfort) and obtain a false bill for a minor repair never carried out (this is to meet his incidental expenses). But, check up tail lamps for loose contacts or change a fused bulb? No! Who cares? A little Fiat car coming up from behind and getting a rude shock by bumping into the rear? Well, he is welcome to the experience. A little Fiat has no business to be so careless on the highways used by giants.

During a number of night checks recently, all lorries leaving town were stopped and checked for lights. Only 25% had all the lights required by law. All others were stopped and told that they will not be booked if they will set right all lights before proceeding. The drivers were allowed to send their cleaners into town for bulbs, wires etc. Every night, quite a few

OCT.-DEC. '59]

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

31

drivers chose to collect a 'P. Notice' rather than set right the defects.

The number of police checks made is negligible as compared with the volume of lorry traffic. Only traffic police in large towns and M.V.T. staff in districts carry out regular checks. Others, and sometimes even these traffic officers, shy from lorries—especially those operating long distances—because of the fear of not being able to trace the drivers and thus accumulating Pending Motor Petty Cases, especially when quarterly returns are due. It is a pity that even the small number of checks made are often made improperly.

Effective enforcement of Section 86 alone will check the complacency of drivers, infuse confidence in checking officers and lay down a solid foundation for proper control over lorry traffic.

At present, nearly 50% of lorry drivers on the roads drive vehicles in contravention of Section 86. The dodges of drivers are many. To cite a few: (1) D. L. sent to R.T.O. for renewal, for first aid endorsement, for a badge etc., (2) D.L. seized by the police in another town—acknowledgement not given. (3) D.L. seized by the police in another town—acknowledgement produced—date of validity not mentioned. (Date of acknowledgement months old or even years old.)

The last mentioned is the worst obstacle of all. A driver charged in Motor Petty Case No. 1/58 of Palladam Station, Coimbatore district produced a "D.L. seized" slip signed by a H.C., during a check recently. When the driver was arrested and let out on bail through his local agent and served with a notice for production of his D.L., he went to Palladam, paid the fine and returned with his D.L.

There are far too many drivers on the roads with such slips. I have not seen a single acknowledgement given by a police officer in proper form. Even the Madras City Police Traffic Staff merely endorse "D.L. seized" on the P. notices served by them. These are produced in lieu of D.L.'s months later. There

is no way of knowing if the driver had since got his licence back and is continuing to use the P. notice as a D.L. An old driver recently explained to me how he could safely lock up his D.L., get a "D.L. seized" slip and get along with it for nearly 3 years. Exaggeration? I have seen several 2 year-old slips. If you offer a lorry driver an acknowledgement for a D. L. without stipulating its period of validity or Rs. 25, I am sure he will choose the former without hesitation, unless he is already in possession of such an acknowledgement. With the help of the slip unwittingly given by you he will leave a trail of pending motor petty cases all over the State, driving his vehicle with a shocking disregard for any law. When cornered eventually, he is liable to try the final grand dodge of obtaining a duplicate licence from the R.T.O. A recently seized D.L. is the 6th reissue of the original.

Get into your best uniform. Choose any spot on a highway, miles away from any town and try to stop lorries after lighting up time. A few drivers, who recognize you as a Traffic Officer—and only then—pull up, as they know they will have to encounter you again. But most of the drivers ignore you and flash past. That is the amount of respect they have for the law. Then, just try to see how many of those drivers you could trace and bring to book and how soon.

All this is due to the careless ways adopted by us. A carelessly written out "D.L. seized" slip benefits only the driver. It is a permanent, written, legal guarantee to the driver against prosecution under Section 86 anywhere in the State.

To regain control over the lorry traffic, the things to be done are clear. Firstly, stop giving carelessly written out acknowledgements for driving licences seized, without mentioning the period of validity of the acknowledgement. Secondly, when you run into a driver armed with one of the many excuses, or a "D.L. seized" slip that is more than 2 weeks old, instead of a driving licence, or a temporary acknowledgement, whose validity has not

expired, serve a notice on him for contravening Section 86 (3), and, for production of his D.L. under Section 86, arrest him under Section 128 (2) (b), and release him on bail through his local agent or broker. Incidentally, this will help other stations where the driver is wanted. It is better to check one vehicle properly than to check a dozen vehicles half-heartedly.

Once the driver is convinced that his old dodges are of no avail, he will begin to take his responsibilities as a driver more seriously. Driving manners will improve. Accidents will become rare. The roads will be safer for all users.

There are a few other things that could help. Copies of the (Amendment) Act No. 100 of 1956 are not available, even to traffic officers. (Editor: We respectfully draw the attention of senior officers everywhere to this matter).

There should be an arrangement by which, when drivers hand in their licences for renewal etc., the R.T.O. should give them a temporary

authorisation stipulating the period of validity of such authorization — in Form L. — vide Rule 38 M.V. Rules.

Officers in a police circle get together once a month. So do the Inspectors and Gazetted Officers in a district. When a criminal extends his operations across a district border, the police of both districts put their heads together. The Crime Branch, the Special Branch and all other branches manage to keep in touch with their counterparts in other parts of the State and have a system for the exchange of intelligence. A traffic officer in Salem district calling his counterpart in adjoining Trichy district and giving information about an illicit taxi bound for Trichy, is unheard of. Once the car slips through his net, he just shrugs his tired shoulders and goes home.

Lorry traffic is not confined to a town or even a district. It is State-wide. Only co-ordinated action throughout the State will bring the desired results. A 'get-together' of all traffic control officers is strongly indicated.

John Smith happened to witness a minor hold-up. In due time, the police arrived, and one officer asked the witness his name.

"John Smith," said Smith.

"Cut the comedy," snapped the officer. "What's your real name?"

"All right," said Smith, "put me down as Winston Churchill."

"That's more like it," said the officer. "You can't fool me with that Smith Stuff."

PRINCIPLES OF POLICE CONDUCT

1. Policemen will accept it as their duty to uphold the Constitution and respect the rights of citizens guaranteed by it.
2. The real tests of Police efficiency are the preparedness of the Police and the action taken to prevent the occurrence of crimes and to solve them.
3. Policemen will regard themselves as members of the public in all respects notwithstanding the fact that they have been vested with certain powers and responsibilities.
4. Policemen cannot perform their duties successfully unless the general public approves of their existence, actions and behaviour.
5. The necessity for the use of force diminishes proportionately to the extent to which public co-operation is secured.
6. Policemen shall enforce the law as has been enacted firmly and will not question the propriety of individual laws.
7. Policemen will not take upon themselves the task of punishing any member of the society who has transgressed the law.
8. Policemen shall offer ready service and friendship to all members of the public irrespective of their position and creed.
9. Policemen shall be courteous and good-humoured and will exercise forbearance in conduct and shall be ready at all times to offer the sacrifice of their own lives in protecting and preserving life.
10. In the event of disturbances, force may be used, if persuasion, advice and warning have proved futile.
11. Policemen will be thoroughly honest in their behaviour and will not reduce their effectiveness in administration by intrigues which would affect their impartiality and loyalty.
12. Policemen will conduct their public and private life in such a manner that the public comes to regard them as exemplary citizens.

TESTIMONIAL COMPULSION

BY

SRI P. SUNDARARAJAN,

(Inspector of Police and Assistant Law Instructor, Police Training College, Vellore).

One of the fundamentals of the British system of Criminal Jurisprudence is the protection given to the accused against self-incrimination. As we in India followed the British system this principle was accepted and embodied in our Constitution and our Criminal Law. The same principle has also been adopted by many other democratic countries also, especially the United States of America.

Article 20 (3) of our Constitution reads: "No person, accused of an offence, shall be compelled to be a witness against himself." It is a fundamental right of every citizen of the Republic of India that when he is accused of an offence, he shall not be compelled to be a witness against himself. It is a privilege guaranteed under the Constitution and like every other privilege has to be claimed and asserted. It is open to the accused to waive this privilege. Once it is waived, the privilege cannot be claimed in respect of the same transaction. The production given under Article 20 (3) of the Constitution is available only for the accused and not for witnesses. Its counterpart in respect of giving immunity to witnesses is Section 132 of the Indian Evidence Act. A witness can be compelled to answer certain questions even though the answer to such questions would incriminate him to a criminal charge, but if the witness seeks protection under Section 132 Evidence Act the answers to such questions cannot be used against him in any subsequent trial against him, except when he is charged for perjury.

The phrase "accused of an offence" occurring in Article 20 (3) of the Constitution is not confined to a person against whom a charge-

sheet is laid in court. It includes a person against whom a formal accusation relating to the commission of an offence has been levelled, which in the normal course may result in prosecution. Offence as defined in the General Clauses Act means "any act or commission made punishable by law for the time being in force."

The phrase "to be a witness" means "to furnish evidence." Evidence can be furnished through the lips or by production of a thing or a document or by other modes. According to Section 139 Evidence Act, a person producing a document on summons is not a witness. This section is meant to regulate cross-examination and it cannot be a guide to the meaning of the word, "witness." Witness is a person who furnishes evidence. Therefore it cannot be argued that when an accused is compelled to produce a document, he is not compelled to be a witness against himself and that such compulsion would not amount to testimonial compulsion. Such compulsion would be hit by Article 20 (3). Their Lordships of the Supreme Court observed in *M. P. Sharma vs Satish Chandra* :—"Indeed, every positive volitional act which furnishes evidence is testimony, and testimonial compulsion connotes coercion which procures the positive volitional evidentiary acts of the person as opposed to the negative attitude of silence or submission on his part." The phrase used in the Article is "to be a witness" and not "to appear as a witness." The scope of the phrase is not limited to what transpires in the court room but also extends to what happens in the course of the investigation. Neither

OCT.-DEC. '59]

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

37

the court nor the Investigating Officer can compel an accused to furnish evidence against himself. Furnishing evidence includes giving oral evidence, producing documents and making intelligible gestures as in the case of a dumb witness, and the like. If the accused is compelled to furnish evidence in any of these modes against himself and if such evidence is reasonably likely to support a prosecution against him, he may claim the guarantee provided under Article 20 (3) of the Constitution.

The leading case on the subject is the decision of the Supreme Court in *M. P. Sharma vs Satish Chandra* (1954 Cr.L.J. 865). In this case it was contended on behalf of the petitioner that searches conducted by the Delhi Special Police Establishment in the offices of the Dalmia Jain Airways Ltd. and its allied concerns in pursuance of warrants issued under Section 96 Cr.P.C. by the District Magistrate, Delhi, and the consequent seizure of documents were hit by Article 20 (3), because the searches and seizure of documents amounted to compulsory procuring of incriminatory evidence from the accused himself. Their Lordships rejected this contention and held that the searches and seizure of incriminating documents by the police did not involve any volitional act on the part of the accused and that the evidence so obtained was not hit by Article 20 (3). It may, therefore, be seen that Section 96 Cr.P.C. which regulates the issue of search warrants by Magistrates is not repugnant to the Constitutional protection against self-incrimination.

Section 94 Cr.P.C. authorises courts and officers-in-charge of police stations to require any person (including an accused) to produce any document or other thing necessary for any investigation, inquiry, trial or other proceeding. Is this section repugnant to Article 20 (3) in so far as it relates to an accused? The points for consideration are :—

(i) Did the production of document or other thing by the accused in compliance with the direction of the court or other police officer

involve any volitional act on the part of the accused?

(ii) Was such volitional act obtained by coercion or not?

There can be no doubt that the production of any document or other thing involves a volitional act and that there is a certain amount of coercion in the direction. The accused cannot disobey the direction. Failure to produce the document or thing is punishable under Section 188 I.P.C.

A Division Bench of the Madras High Court held that a direction from the magistrate to an accused asking him to produce certain documents is hit by Article 20 (3) (*In re Swarnalingam Chettiar*, 1956 Cr.L.J. 248).

The Calcutta High Court observed that even if documents seized under a search warrant were returned to the person from whom they were seized on the latter executing a bond for their production whenever required, he may plead that in view of Article 20 (3) of the Constitution, he cannot, in spite of the bond, be compelled to produce them (*In re Ste. vs. Srivastava*, 1956 Cr.L.J. 1936).

The Kerala High Court held that the Magistrate committed a grave violation of the right guaranteed by Article 20 (3) of the Constitution in issuing a notice to the accused to produce in court the document impugned as forgery. (*In re Krishnan Kesavan*, 1957 Cr.L.J. 755).

A Division Bench of the Orissa High Court observed that a direction by a Magistrate ordering an accused to produce public documents in his possession under Section 94 Cr.P.C. is not hit by Article 20 (3). Their Lordships held that the Foodgrains Procurement Stock Register maintained by the accused acting as the agent of the Government under the Orissa Foodgrains Control Order, is a public document and the accused can be compelled to produce the same. (*In re Madanlal Jojordia*, 1958 Cr.L.J. 59). This decision is contrary to the other decisions on the subject. So far as

HALLO! COLD WEATHER IS HERE-

FOR THE COMPLETE RANGE OF BINNY'S QUALITY WOOLLEN GOODS

Please Contact

MISRILALL PARASMALL

Mamulpet

BANGALORE 2

Sole Selling Agents for SOUTH INDIA & BOMBAY

Coronet, Chancellor, Tourist, Everyman, & Coarse
Quality Rugs, Mufflers, Angola Shawls, and Varsity
Suitings are our Seasonal Specialities.

Show Room:

Avenue Road, opposite
Raja Market, Bangalore 2

PHONE:
2691

GRAMS:

'KATRELA'

தமிழ் நாட்டில்
எல்லோரும் விரும்புவது

“ஏ. ஆர். ஆர். சீவல்”

போன்: 25

தந்தி: சீவல்



ARR

ஏ.ஆர்.ஆர். சீவல்

கும்பகோணம்

A.R.R. SEEVAL FACTORY, KUMBakonam

எங்களிடம் 10, 5, 2½, 1 பலம், அரைப் பலம், 1 அணு, அரையணு, காலணு
காலணுவிற்கு இரண்டு பொட்டலங்களும் கிடைக்கும். தேவைக்கு எழுதுங்கள்.

Known for Quality and Reliability

★ ESCO AMPLIFIERS

★ ATLAS
TRANSFORMERS
AND BATTERY
ELIMINATORS

★ PHILIPS VALVES
AND
COMPONENTS

★ TURNER MICROPHONES

★ GLOBE BATTERY CHARGERS

Gram: LALRADIO

Phone: 85564

CONTACT:

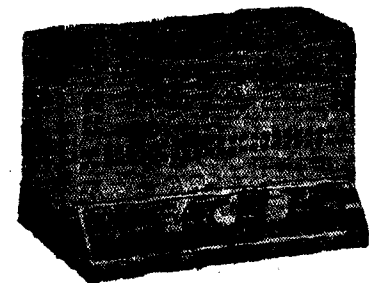
180 Mount Road
MADRAS 2

Head Office: BOMBAY

LALWANI RADIO CORPORATION

Branch
37/38 S. J. Park Road
BANGALORE 2

Branches: CALCUTTA DELHI



★ UNIVERSITY UNITS
AND HORNS

★ BALKAR UNITS
AND HORNS



Phone: 782

Grams: VIR HOSIERY

VIR HOSIERY FACTORY (Regd.)

RAI BAHADUR ROAD
LUDHIANA

Specialists in

High Class Woollen Hosiery Government and Military Contractors

for

Socks, Stockings, Hosetops, Jerseys Pullover, Caps Confolters,
Gloves, Balaclava Caps, Mufflers, Scarves, Mittens, Vests,
Drawers, Ribbed Jerseys, Vests Winter etc. etc.

we, in Madras State, are concerned, the decision in *In re Swarnalingam Chettiar* holds good.

Are questions put to the accused under Section 342 Cr.P.C. hit by Article 20 (3)? The court puts to the accused in the form of questions the prosecution evidence and records his answers. The accused is not compelled to answer these questions. It is open to him to refuse to answer any question or to give a false answer in which case the court may draw an adverse inference against the accused. In spite of the provision making the court draw adverse inferences, it cannot be said that the accused is compelled to give evidence against himself. A Division Bench of the Allahabad High Court held that Section 342 Cr.P.C. does not convert an accused into a witness and compel him to be a witness against himself and that any answer given by the accused may be given the same weight, as any piece of evidence can form the basis of conviction, even though it is not evidence as defined in Section 3 Evidence Act (*Banwarilal vs State*, 1956 Cr.L.J. 664).

Is Section 27 Evidence Act repugnant to Article 20 (3)? Section 27 Evidence Act makes so much of the information as distinctly leads to the discovery of a new fact, admissible, because the truth of the information is guaranteed by the discovery. If it appears that the accused had been compelled to make such a confession, it would be barred by Article 20 (3).

The Allahabad High Court has held that when the facts of the case disclosed that the accused was compulsorily subjected to treatment which furnished evidence of discovery of the dead body at his instance, the evidence of discovery of the dead body was hit by Article 20 (3) (*Dhoomsingh vs State*, 1957 Cr.L.J. 431).

A Division Bench of the Andhra High Court held that Article 20 (3) and Section 27 Evidence Act may be reconciled and that information voluntarily obtained from an accused relating distinctly to the fact thereby discovered, is not

hit by Article 20 (3). Their Lordships observed that it would, however, amount to testimonial compulsion if the information was extracted from the accused by compulsion (*Madugula Jeremiah* 1957, Cr.L.J. 1071).

Let us now see the extent to which fingerprints, sample signature, specimen writing etc. taken from the accused are affected by Article 20 (3).

Section 73 of the Evidence Act authorises courts to order any person present in court to write any words or figures for the purpose of enabling the court to compare the words or figures so written with any words or figures alleged to have been written by such person. This section applies also to fingerprints. This section can be invoked only for the purpose of enabling the court to compare the signatures, etc. The scope of the section is limited and it cannot be used for the purpose of filling up the gap in the evidence adduced by either the prosecution or the defence. The comparison of signature, etc., by the court under this section is not evidence as defined under Section 3 Evidence Act. In this view, any words or figures, etc., written by the accused under compulsion may not be hit by Article 20 (3). It cannot be said that there is no coercion in an order issued under Section 73 Evidence Act. If the order is issued at the instance of the prosecution, then it would be repugnant to Article 20 (3). *Somasundaram, J.*, of the Madras High Court, held that a direction by the court asking the accused to give his thumb-impression amounts to testimonial compulsion (*In re Rajamuthukoil Pillai*, 1956 Cr.L.J. 1333). The same Judge held in *In re Sheik Md. Hussain*, 1957 Cr.L.J. 73, that the thumb-impression taken by the police on a slip of paper which was later on produced in court, cannot amount to testimonial compulsion.

The following decision by the Orissa High Court may be of interest. There it was held that the accused cannot be compelled to give his thumb impression as directed by the Magistrate. The court observed that if the accused

himself submits to give his thumb-impression or if he did not raise any objection at any stage to give his thumb-impression, he cannot seek the aid of the Constitutional guarantee under Article 20 (3). An element of coercion is necessary for invoking the aid of Article 20 (3) (1957 Cr.L.J. 982). According to this decision, a direction by a court to an accused to give his thumb-impression, etc., by itself is not repugnant to Article 20 (3).

In this connection the decision of a Division Bench of the Madras High Court *In re Palani Goundan*, 1957 Cr.L.J. 976 may be of the greatest import and significance. Their Lordships observed that "any incriminating or relevant object or document or other form of evidence can be seized under process of law from the custody or person of the accused, but the accused cannot be compelled to produce it." It would follow from the person of the accused though he may be unwilling to part with it. If he happens to swallow a stolen article can be seized from the person of the accused and made to undergo the necessary medical process or treatment with a view to have the article extracted from his body. Similarly, if a police officer finds an accused charged with murder wearing blood-stained clothes, such clothes may be seized from him, though he may not be willing to surrender them. Incriminating evidence such as document, etc., can be seized from the custody or person of an accused by force and against his will but he cannot be compelled to produce them. So also there can be no objection to an accused person being taken to a doctor for the examination of injuries on him so as to ascertain whether he could not have participated in an occurrence. He can also be taken to an identification parade to enable the prosecution witnesses to observe his physical features with a view to identifying him. The taking of thumb-impression or the signature of an accused does not stand on a different footing from the seizure of document or other facts of evidence from the person of the accused. It is an act of

another to which he is obliged to submit and not the 'positive volitional' evidentiary act of the accused.

An accused who is found in a state of intoxication is arrested by the police and taken to a doctor for medical examination. The doctor observes and records the physical features and other symptoms exhibited by the accused. The symptoms observed by the doctor could not amount to testimonial compulsion. In this connection, there is yet another question. Is it lawful to take samples of blood and urine from persons accused of being drunk, for ascertaining the percentage of alcohol in such samples? Applying the arguments of their Lordships in the case discussed *supra*, it would follow that the taking of a sample of blood is an act of another to which the accused is obliged to submit and is not the positive volitional evidentiary act of the accused. The same argument cannot be extended in respect of urine because the collection of urine involves the positive volitional act of the accused. If urine can be tapped straight from the bladder by puncturing it, then there is no positive volitional act on the part of the accused. In this view, taking blood and urine samples from an accused against his will may not amount to testimonial compulsion. There is no reported decision on this subject. The observations made by their Lordships of the Madras High Court in *In re Palani Goundan* are of far reaching importance to prosecutors. They are supported by Justice Tek Chand of the Punjab High Court. In *Pakhan Singh*, 1958 Cr.L.J. 1084, His Lordship observed that "the privilege under Article 20 (3) has to be claimed and that if it is not claimed, the benefit would be deemed to have been waived. Truth is not endangered when compulsion is used for the exhibition of any identifying marks on it, for the purpose of comparison with evidence produced at the trial. The finger-prints, foot prints, palm prints, photographs of the accused for purposes of comparison with those found at the scene of crime, do not lose their probative character, whether they have been obtained

voluntarily or involuntarily. In principle, resort to compulsion requiring the accused to exhibit his body for purposes of establishing identity is not objectionable, because by so doing the accused is not compelled to give false evidence. In fact he does not testify at all and the physical facts which are noticed speak for themselves." The Judge held that the taking of thumb, finger and palm impressions of the accused in the Court of the Magistrate under his direction was not in contravention of Article 20 (3).

A Division Bench of the Allahabad High Court held that an order directing an accused to furnish his specimen writing under Section 73 Evidence Act is not hit by Article 20 (3) and that the accused cannot refuse to give the specimen writing when ordered by the court to give it. If he refuses to give, the court can legally draw a presumption against him under any other provision of law. It will not amount to testimonial compulsion (1958 Cr.L.J. 134 *In re Ram Swarup*).

The last in the series, at the moment, is a decision by a Division Bench of the Mysore High Court in *re Govinda Reddy and others*, 1958 Cr.L.J. 1489. Their Lordships observed that "the accused cannot be compelled to produce any evidence against himself but such evidence can be taken or seized from him even if it be quite against his will, provided that such taking or seizure is legally permissible. It is legally permissible to take the measurements, which includes finger impressions and foot prints, of any person who has been arrested in connection with an offence punishable with rigorous imprisonment for a term of one year or upwards." Section 4 of the Identification of Prisoners Act (1920) authorises such taking of measurements. Section 6 states that if the person refuses or resists the taking of measurements, it shall be lawful to use all

means necessary to secure the taking thereof. Section 5 of the same Act authorises Magistrates to direct any person to allow his measurements to be taken.

A Division Bench of the Madhya Pradesh High Court held that Section 5 of the Madhya Bharat Identification of Prisoners Act is repugnant to Article 20 (3) to the extent that it empowers a Magistrate to direct an accused person to give his thumb-impression, specimen writing and signature for comparison with other documents to be used against the accused (*Brij Bhusan Ragunandan Prasad vs The State*, 1957 Cr.L.J. 854).

To sum up, it appears to be lawful :—

- (1) To search premises belonging to the accused and recover documents and other things ;
- (2) to put questions to the accused under Section 342 Cr.P.C. and use the answers against him ;
- (3) to record the thumb-impressions, foot-print or signature of the accused in the course of investigation ;
- (4) to seize any incriminating or relevant object or document or other form of evidence, under process of law, from the accused ;
- (5) to subject an accused to medical examination ; and
- (6) to take samples of blood and urine from a drunken person.

It appears to be unlawful :—

- (1) to compel an accused to make a confession falling under Section 27 Evidence Act ;
- (2) to direct an accused to produce incriminatory documents.

You can see it in his eye, his bearing and the way he dresses. Such self-confidence often indicates the influence of strong family traditions of refinement and culture.

THIS YOUNG MAN WILL GO FAR

When BINNY'S started manufacturing their quality cloth nearly eighty years ago young men discovered a new standard in textiles, for there was variety in colour, design and texture undreamt of before. As the years passed, BINNY'S continued to pioneer new materials including anticrease suitings and union fabrics. Soon BINNY became a household word and buying BINNY'S a family tradition.

Today, more people are able to buy more cloth, but discerning people look for these reassuring BINNY'S trade marks on the cloth they buy:



BINNY'S

— a great name in textiles

The Buckingham & Carnatic Co. Ltd.
The Bangalore Woollen, Cotton & Silk Mills Co. Ltd.
Managing Agents: BINNY & CO (MADRAS) LTD., Madras

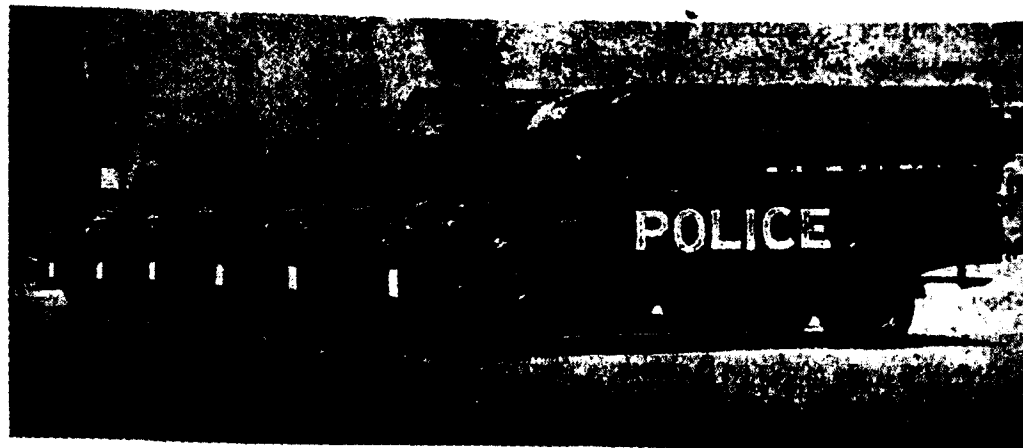


SRI RAMA VILAS SERVICE (PRIVATE) LTD

KUMBAKONAM

We always count upon the satisfaction of our Customers.

We construct bodies on chassis for Buses, Lorries and all kinds of special type Vans as for the Police Department according to specifications.



The Inspector-General of Police states :

"THE CONSTRUCTION OF TWENTY-ONE CLOSED TYPE VAN BODIES BY YOUR FIRM FOR THE POLICE DEPARTMENT WAS FOUND TO BE SATISFACTORY AND ACCORDING TO THE SPECIFICATIONS FOR POLICE USE."

Our modern shellubrication service station has recently commenced night servicing of cars to cope up with the increasing demand from the customers' side.

TRUTH STRANGER THAN FICTION

BY

SRI E. T. VEDAMUTHU,
(Deputy Superintendent of Police, Pudukkottai)

Truth at times appears hard to believe, and this is obviously so in an incident that occurred in Madras City many years ago.

A gang of 3 or 4 persons in the city approached rich businessmen and cleverly represented that one of them, a 'Thevar,' was the heir to a cash account of Rs. 47 lakhs deposited with the Imperial Bank of India (now the State Bank of India) and, to make them believe the representation, they produced some documents which showed that a pauper suit was filed by an individual who claimed the reversionary rights to some deposits with the Imperial Bank of India but this was not recognised or admitted. Certified copies of this rejected suit were made use of in making credulous men believe the representation and part with money in thousands in the hope of their getting a good share of the 47-lakhs account when it was paid to the 'Thevar.' The persons who embarked upon this trade got 'Thevar' to liberally promise donations to many schools and colleges and other public institutions in the city in which the persons whom they cheated were known to be interested. Thus the gang went about merrily in the city, making their fortune and swindling person after person, but somehow, no one whom they cheated came forward to complain to the police.

One of the victims of this gang was a retired Jamedar residing in Washermanpet. The Jamedar who had some money with him became avaricious when he was told that he would be made the guardian of the 'Thevar.' To convince the Jamedar of the existence of such a large sum with the bank, the culprits took him to the Madras Secretariat where two confederates of theirs were employed as Superintendents

of sections in the Public Works and Finance Departments. The Superintendents played their role so well that the victim took them for Assistant Secretaries of the Government and on the strength of the assertion of the Superintendents, he started advancing money in hundreds and thousands, to an aggregate of Rs. 6,000.

A wrongly calculated word uttered by one of the Superintendents in order to discourage the Jamedar from visiting the Secretariat, had an unexpected turn. To throw the blame on the Jamedar and make it appear that his absence at an hour had retarded his case, he told him that the Revenue Secretary of the Government of Madras had earlier called for him but finding him absent, had disposed of the file. This story put out the Jamedar so completely that, merely by way of making sure, he questioned the peon of the office and on being told that the version was true, waited at the office, telling the peon to inform him if the Secretary called him again. There was no call. When, therefore, the Secretary left the office that evening after his day's work, the Jamedar thought of meeting the Secretary at his residence and followed him to his bungalow and there managed to meet him. The Secretary who heard the story from the Jamedar could not make head or tail of what he said, but, nevertheless, he asked the individual to meet him the following morning at 11 o'clock at the Secretariat. Punctual to the minute the retired Jamedar appeared at the Secretariat and pointed out to the Section Superintendent who posed for Assistant Secretary, and his confederate (who was present), as the persons who told him about the bank balance of Rs. 47 lakhs. The

Revenue Secretary on being satisfied that there was some hoax played by the Superintendents and others, directed the individual to prefer a complaint to the police and in his turn, talked to the Commissioner of Police, Madras, over the phone about this.

Strangely, this complaint of the Jamedar was treated as a petition and some formal enquiries were conducted by subordinate police officials and the matter was allowed to pass into oblivion, with the papers lodged. The Revenue Secretary however would not rest without knowing the result of his complaint to the Commissioner of Police. He reminded him and the Commissioner, in his turn, called the Assistant Commissioner (Crimes) and asked for a report. The Assistant Commissioner asked the Administrative Inspector of Crime Branch, Madras City, to trace the paper and dispose of it according to law. A search was made for two days, without result. The third

day, the paper was traced, and forthwith a crime under Sections 120 (B) and 420 I.P.C. was registered in regard to this matter by the Administrative Inspector who also took up investigation himself.

To arrest the full gang which included two Superintendents of the Secretariat was not a difficult task. Carefully and methodically the investigation was conducted and several persons cheated by the gang were traced, examined and produced as witnesses. The case was hotly contested and one of the Superintendents of the Secretariat falsely alleged that the Presidency Magistrate who tried the case had not followed correct legal procedure and that this vitiated the proceedings. But all these proved useless, and the entire gang were convicted and sentenced to undergo imprisonment and the conviction was also upheld by the High Court in appeal.

The defense attorney was cross-examining the witness, a fetching blonde with two lovely big blue eyes. The lawyer leaned forward.

"Where were you," he thundered, "on Monday night?" The blonde smiled sweetly.

"Automobile riding," she replied.

"And where were you," bellowed the lawyer, "on Tuesday night?"

"Automobile riding," repeated the beautiful blonde.

The lawyer leaned still closer.

"And what," he murmured, "are you doing tomorrow night?"

The prosecuting attorney leaped from his chair.

"Your Honour," he protested, "I object to that question!"

The judge, a tolerant gentleman, shrugged his shoulders.

"And why do you object?" he inquired mildly.

The prosecuting attorney drew himself up in righteous indignation.

"Because," he snapped, "I asked her first!"

AN INTERESTING CASE OF COMPULSIVE NEUROSIS

(NOTE: Individuals are referred to as P.W. 1, P.W. 2, P.W. 3, etc., in the article, for preserving anonymity)

BY

SRI G. V. NARAYANAN, I.P.S.
(Principal, Police Training College, Vellore)

Parvathi, aged about 15 years, lived in Kodavasal village of Tanjore District (Madras State). She was a normally intelligent person, coherent in her expression and clean in her habits, and she slept and ate normally as others of her age-group did. A certain strangeness in her behaviour came to be noticed in September, 1958, when she was seen by P.W. 2 throwing a female child named Kalavathi, daughter of P.W. 10, into a well in the village. When P.W. 2 raised an alarm, P.W. 7 who was within earshot, rushed to the spot and rescued the child. Then again, in the third week of October, 1958, P.W. 2 witnessed another incident of the accused throwing a female child named Lalitha, of the same village, into the same well. Hearing the child's cries, P.W. 8 (mother of P.W. 7) ran up and was just on time to rescue her from death by drowning. Such a scare was aroused in the village by these occurrences that (as the learned Sessions Judge put it very graphically in his judgment) "the children were being kept inside their houses as fowls are kept," in order to have them protected from Parvathi. Other villagers lodged complaints with the village elders, and there was a panchayat at which Parvathi's father was fined and admonished to keep his daughter under proper control.

The elections to the Panchayat Board of the village took place on 4-11-1958. P.W. 2 went to the polling booth in order to exercise her franchise, and left her son, Gunasekharan, aged 3 years, in the house. When she returned home, it was about 11 a.m., and then her young

son wanted to go and play in the house of P.W. 10. She let him go. P.W. 10 saw Gunasekharan and other children playing on the "pial" of her house. By and by, Parvathi came there and started playing with Gunasekharan, giving him a guava fruit to eat. P.W. 10 saw these two standing under a guava tree near her house. P.W. 10 suspected nothing and went inside her house, to do the chores. After a few minutes she was startled to hear the cries of P.W. 1 (a lady of the neighbourhood) shouting that Parvathi was running after she had thrown Gunasekharan into a nearby pond. P.W. 1 resided three houses to the west of Parvathi's house, in the same street. She was in her backyard garden of her house, when, at about 11 a.m. she heard a splash from the direction of the pond, some thirty feet away from where she was. When she peeped over her fence, she saw Parvathi running from the fence of the pond towards her own house. P.W. 1 got suspicious, ran inside her house to see if her own child was safe—which it was—and then came outside and found after some enquiry that child Gunasekharan, son of P.W. 2, was missing. In the meanwhile P.W. 7 came there, hurrying, and P.W. 1 told him of what had happened. P.W. 7 dived into the pond at the place indicated by P.W. 1 and brought out the body of child Gunasekharan. Medical help was sought for, in the hope that the child might not be dead after all, but the doctor examined the child and pronounced him to be dead. The autopsy confirmed that death was due to drowning.

The Sessions Judge, East Tanjore Division, convicted Parvathi under Section 302 I.P.C. Inasmuch as she was 15 years old, under Section 22 of the Madras Children's Act, no sentence of death or transportation for life (now life imprisonment) or imprisonment could be passed on a child or young person, and under Section 27 of the said Act, if the convicting court was of the opinion that no punishment which, under the provisions of the Act it was authorised to inflict was sufficient, it should report the case for the orders of the State Government, and as this was a case where the punishment provided by the Madras Children's Act was insufficient, the learned Sessions Judge purported to sentence the accused to imprisonment for life and ordered her to be detained in the Women's Central Jail, Vellore, Madras State, and reported the case to the State Government for orders. While so, Parvathi preferred an appeal to the High Court and the Public Prosecutor filed a revision petition against the illegal sentence of life imprisonment.

Parvathi's appeal was couched in the following terms, and was full of rhetorical questions. "Why should I throw the child into the pond? The child did not do any harm to me. The child did not wear any jewel . . . There was a fence to a man's height around the pond. How could I cross the fence of a man's height, carrying the child? Since I had not gone to their houses to do work, they (parents of the deceased) wantonly foisted this false case on me and got me sentenced" During the trial in the Sessions Court, the plea put forward by the defence was that she was of unsound mind when she committed the offence and that this case would fall under Section 84, I.P.C. The Sessions Judge rejected this plea as he maintained that it had not been shown that at the time of committing the alleged offence, the accused was labouring under such a defect of reason, from disease of the mind, as not to know the nature and quality of the act she was doing, or, if she did know it, she did not know that she was doing what was wrong.

Parvathi was under observation in the District Headquarters Hospital, Tanjore, subsequent to her arrest, and there, as well as during the trial, she was found to answer questions intelligently and coherently, was clean in her habits and slept and ate normally. Of course these official observations were only subsequent to the offence. Therefore the Sessions Judge considered, when the plea of insanity was set up on her behalf, the circumstances which preceded, attended and followed the crime, and went into the questions whether there was deliberation and preparation for the act; whether it was done in a manner which showed a desire for concealment; whether, after the crime, the offender showed consciousness of guilt and made efforts to avoid detection; and whether after her arrest and thereafter she gave false excuses or made false statements. The antecedent incidents were also taken into consideration. Taking into account all these, the Judge came to the conclusion that Section 84 could not be applied to this case.

In the proceedings before the High Court, the counsel for defence (*amicus curiae*) took the stand that his client was suffering from unsoundness of mind and that the same consisted of an "irresistible impulse to drown children" and that unsoundness of mind lets out his client under Section 84, I.P.C.

After a brilliant analysis of the law relating to unsoundness of mind as a defence, Messrs. Ramaswamy and Ananthanarayanan, Judges of the Madras High Court, dismissed the appeal and allowed the revision. Mr. Justice Ramaswamy delivered the main judgment, with which his learned brother concurred.

The law relating to unsoundness of the mind as a defence was laid down in the M'Naghten answers in England (*vide* Kenny's Outlines of Criminal Law, 17th Edition, Page 76, etc.). M'Naghten was tried for the murder of a Mr. Drummond, Private Secretary to Sir Robert Peel, in 1843. He was acquitted after trial on grounds of insanity. This case, which roused much public comment at that time,

came to be debated in the House of Lords, and the Lords submitted to the Judges certain abstract questions respecting persons afflicted with insane delusions. The Judges, in their reply, propounded certain principles for guidance. Among them were (i) that every person is presumed to be sane until the contrary is proved to the satisfaction of the jury; (ii) that to establish a valid defence on the ground of insanity, it must be proved that at the time of committing the act the party accused was labouring under such a defect of reason, from disease of the mind, as not to know the nature and quality of the act he was doing, or, if he did know it, that he did not know he was doing what was wrong; (iii) that, if the accused was conscious that the act was one which he ought not to do and if that act was at the same time contrary to the law of the land, he is punishable; (iv) that where partial delusions existed, and the accused was not in other respects insane, responsibility should be assessed as if the facts with respect to which the delusions existed were real—that is, if under delusion he supposes another man to be in the act of taking away his life and he kills him, as he supposes, in self-defence, he is exempt from punishment; but, if the delusion was that the deceased had inflicted a serious injury to his character and fortune and killed him in revenge, he would be liable for punishment; (v) that the deed must be connected with the delusion directly—e.g., where a man, dreaming that he was struggling with a wild beast, killed his baby, he was acquitted, but where a man under the delusion that he was the lawful son of a well-known prince, obtained money by false pretence, he was convicted.

The M'Naghten rules prevailed till 1957 in spite of criticism by both the medical and the legal professions as inadequate. In *Rex vs Codere* (1916), 12 Cr.App.R. 21, the court refused to admit that the question should be decided by the standard of the accused person himself, but that, (a) an objective moral test is to be applied in such cases, the test being the ordinary standard adopted by reasonable

men; (b) that once it was clear that the appellant knew that the act was wrong in law, then he was conscious that it was an act which he could not do and that it was punishable by law.

The principles outlined in *Rex vs Codere* were applied in *Regina vs. Windle* (1952) by the Judges of the Queen's Bench (2 Q.B. 826).

In more recent years, a profound change came about in English Law as a result of the Report of the Atkin Committee on Insanity and Crime (command paper 2005) and the Report of the Royal Commission on Capital Punishment (1949-1953), published as command paper 8932. The defence of "diminished responsibility" which these papers advocated was recognised for many years in Scotland and is embodied as law in Section 2 of the Homicide Act, 1957, which reads, *inter alia*, that "where a person kills or is a party to the killing of another, he shall not be convicted of murder if he was suffering from such abnormality of mind (whether arising from a condition of arrested or retarded development of mind or any inherent causes or induced by disease or injury) as substantially impaired his mental responsibility for his acts and omissions in doing or being a party to the killing," and the section goes on to say that a person who but for this section, would be liable to be convicted for this section, would be liable to be convicted for murder, would be liable to be convicted for manslaughter, and also that this consideration does not apply to other parties in the killing who are not so covered by this section. This section, it would appear, applies to a case of irresistible impulse to kill—as distinct from a merely unresisted impulse to kill.

An analysis of cases of this description from Canadian, Australian, Irish, New Zealand and American Courts of law shows that certain basic points of agreement exist among these courts.

The courts—

- (i) agree that insane delusion or partial insanity, affecting the crime com-

mitted affords a defence where the imagined facts would have afforded justification had they been real, but disagree as to whether such delusion or insanity constitutes a defence where the imagined facts would not have justified the act even if they were real;

- (ii) agree that an insane irresistible impulse is a valid defence if accompanied by incapacity to distinguish the right from the wrong with relation to the particular act; but disagree as to whether there can be an insane irresistible impulse furnishing a valid defence in cases where the accused has the capacity to distinguish the right from the wrong.

The essence of Indian Case Law on the subject is that not every type of mental unsoundness will render a person irresponsible in the eye of law. This is probably because the question of mens rea is not left as a loose-knit principle in Indian Law, but the Indian Penal Code defines specifically the various conditions of the mind and makes out clear distinctions among such things as motive, intention, object, etc.—thus covering precisely the various states of the normal human mind. Thus only under certain circumstances will a person of unsound mind be exempted from criminal responsibility in Indian Law. To establish a defence on the ground of insanity, it must be proved that at the time of committing the alleged offence, the accused was labouring under such a defect of reason, from disease of the mind, as not to know the nature and quality of the act he was doing, or, if he did know it, he did not know that he was doing what was wrong. This approach limits non-liability to only those cases in which insanity affects the cognitive faculties, and leaves out the cases in which insanity affects only the emotions and will, subjecting the offender to impulses, but does not impair the cognitive

faculties. The accused, in the eyes of Indian Law, must be presumed to intend the consequences of the action he takes when his mental faculties of ratiocination are sufficiently unclouded for him to understand what he is doing.

This takes us to the distinction between "medical" insanity and "legal" insanity as our courts are apparently concerned with the legal and not the medical view. The medical man may say, for instance, that an act without motive is the act of a madman, but, for the lawyer, the motive is neither an important nor a recognised test of "legal" insanity. The question in criminal trials in India is, in short, not insanity but irresponsibility.

Irresistible impulse is no defence in India (Deorao vs. Emp. A.R.I. 1946 Nag. 321; *In re Rajagopala*, A.I.R. 1952 Madras 289) just as it was no defence in England before and is even now only a modified defence.

It has been repeatedly held in Indian cases that uncontrollable impulse, co-existing with the full possession of the reasoning power, is no defence in Law (Kader Nayer Shah 23 Cal. 604; Laxman Dagdu 10 Bom. 512; Venkataswami 12 Madras 459; etc.).

Obviously there is a case for reconsideration of the matter in the light of progressive thought in the rest of the world, but then it has to be remembered that though it is easy to copy the laws of other countries, these can be satisfactorily implemented only if we have necessary and adequate machinery for the reception, observation and reclamation of those of unsound mind who have to be assigned for institutional psychiatric treatment. The Bench and the Bar and police officers must also have proper grounding in penology, criminal psychology, criminal sociology and psychiatry if they are to become competent to judge, study and reform those mentally defective, psychoneurotic or insane persons whom they sometimes have to deal with in the course of their work.

HOME FOR THE DESTITUTE AND THE DISABLED

BY

SRI A. V. SRINIVASAN,
(Inspector of Police, Melpakkam)

"Among the first inmates of the Home was a woman with four children—the divorced wife of a Police Head Constable. She approached the police for employment. She was taken before a magistrate and committed to the Home for three months. She protested and asked for a longer sentence of one year so that she could live happily with her children in the Home."

—*"Indian Express"*, 15th March 1954

The story of the Government Care Camp, is the saga of a self-despising destitute turned into a self-respecting citizen.

The camp lies nestled amongst green paddy fields and plantain groves with a rivulet flowing in front, in a hamlet called Melpakkam in Chingleput district. It is a beautiful spot, sprawling over 8 acres of wooded grove.

The camp was started by the State Government in the year 1954. It is the first institution of its kind to be run by the Government under police management. It consists of 2 sections:

- (1) Care Home (for the disabled, infirm, diseased and old).
- (2) Work House (for the able-bodied).

To start with, it was intended to accommodate 500 persons of both sexes. The strength has gradually grown from 500 to 850 persons, 750 from Madras City and 100 from Kancheepuram and Mahabalipuram, the tourist centres of Chingleput District.

Religious mendicancy is practised on a large scale in India—the Sadhus, Bikshus and Fakirs command patronage and respect from the public. Though begging has been made an offence in Indian Law it remained for long a dead-letter,

as religious prejudices die hard. Begging still flourishes in places of congregation, like tourist and pilgrimage centres.

In addition to religious mendicancy, large numbers of persons take to begging for various reasons, like the lack of employment, unhappy domestic environment, etc. Begging damages self-respect, dulls self-confidence and kills the initiative of the individual. It is a means of spreading disease to the public and also has its nuisance value. It degrades our nation in the esteem of visitors from other countries. Formerly begging was an offence only in the Statute Book. The law relating to begging was never seriously enforced. It was only recently that the law relating to begging was put into good shape, by the addition of a new section, namely 71-A, to the City Police Act.

According to the new provision, a person found begging in a public place is produced before the Police Medical Officer, who certifies about his state of health. He is then produced before a magistrate, who, in turn, commits him to one of the Homes. In Madras City there are 3 other Homes besides the Government Care Camp, to which a beggar may be sent for detention by the courts, namely—

- (1) Daya Sadan, Otteri, Madras-12- ... For the disabled, old and infirm (both males and females). Run by a private committee
- (2) Child Welfare Home, Rayapuram. ... For Children ... Run by the Corporation of Madras.
- (3) Corporation Special Home, Krish-nampet. For the infirm and the diseased—mostly lepers. Do.

There are other charitable institutions also to which the destitutes go voluntarily for alms, e.g., Friend-in-Need Society.

The Government Care Camp is in the charge of an officer of the rank of Deputy Superintendent of Police. The camp is situated on the Avadi-Poonamallee Road, midway between Avadi and Poonamallee. For purposes of administration, it is attached to the City Police, though situated in Chingleput District. The Commissioner of Police is in overall charge and the Deputy Commissioner of Police (Crimes) is the direct supervising officer.

The Superintendent of the Camp is assisted by an executive staff consisting of 1 Inspector of Police, 2 Sub-Inspectors of Police, 5 Head Constables and 24 Police Constables and a ministerial staff consisting of 1 Accountant, 2 Lower Division Clerks and 1 Typist.

There is a dispensary in the camp. The Medical Officer is assisted by a Pharmacist, Male Nurse and Female Nursing Orderly. The Medical Officer looks after the health of the inmates and the sanitation of the camp. The Dispensary is well stocked with modern medicines and is provided with 4 beds. Complicated cases are referred to the Stanley Hospital for treatment by specialists.

The disabled persons are fed, clothed and housed comfortably. No work is extracted from them.

There are 5 industrial sections for the able-bodied inmates of both sexes.

- (1) Weaving and Tag making,
- (2) Pottery,
- (3) Carpentry,
- (4) Binding, and
- (5) Tailoring.

Each section is manned by a qualified instructor. Sections 1 to 4 are for males and Section 5 is for females. Yarn is purchased and woven into cloth. It is tailored in the camp into shirts, shorts and blouses for the inmates. The products of the Pottery and Carpentry Sections have won high encomium and they find a ready sale whenever they are displayed in exhibitions.

In the binding section, Police Gazettes and Crime and Occurrence sheets from the City, chief office, and the districts are bound into neat volumes.

There are also 5 barbers and 2 dhobies to attend to the needs of the inmates. The sanitary arrangements are quite good. There are 12 scavengers working round the clock by turns.

The female inmates are looked after by female warders (7 in number) and the male inmates by police personnel.

Penalty for misbehaviour is imposed in the shape of penal diet and the withholding of remission. But instances of misbehaviour are few and far between. Discipline is maintained, not by wielding the big stick—but by gentle yet firm handling.



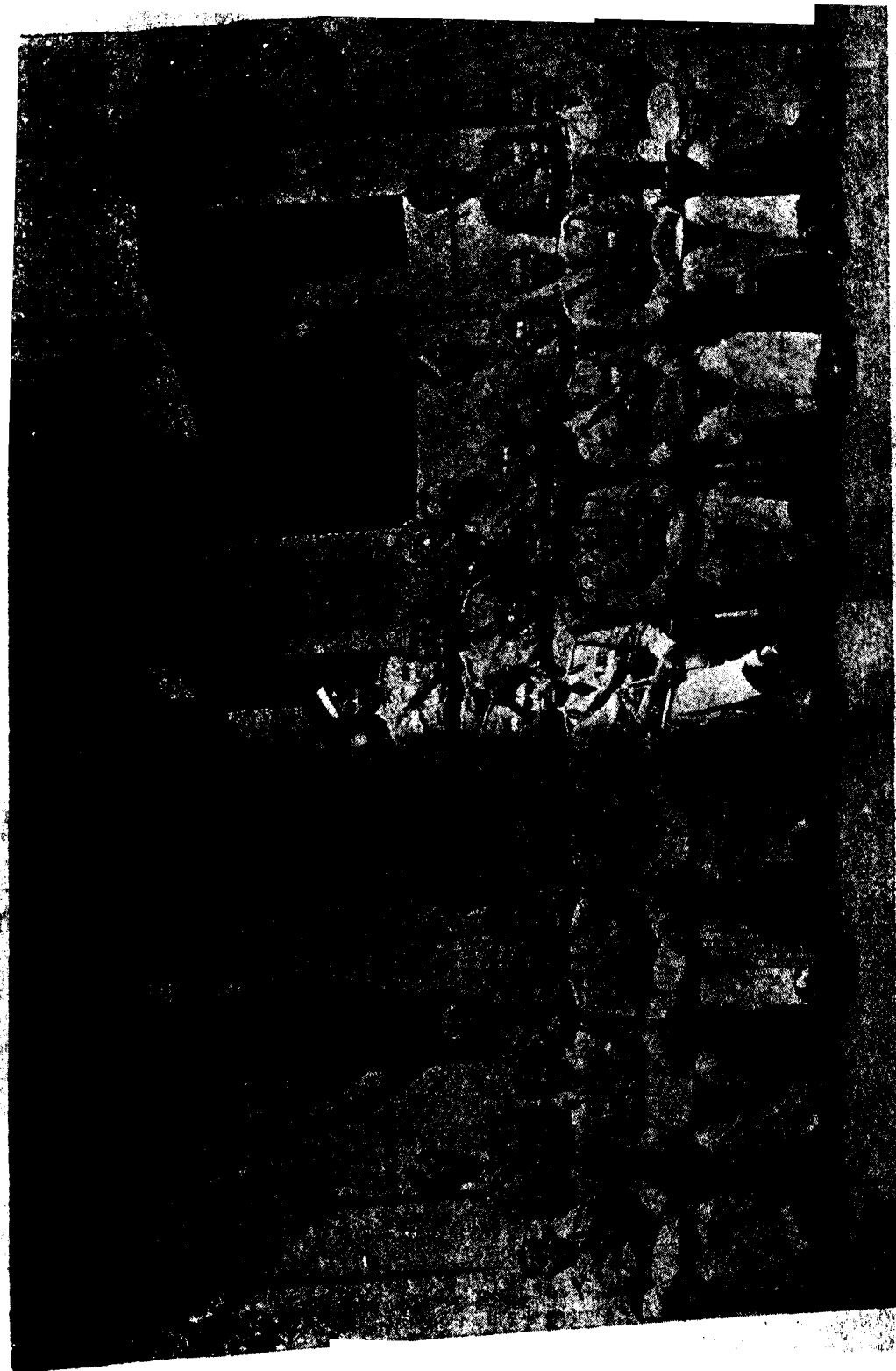
The Madras State Police Team for the Seventh All India Police Duty Meet were accorded a rousing reception at the Madras Central Station by the Commissioner of Police, Madras, and others, on arrival on 12th November, 1959, by the Howrah—Madras Mail.

S. I. Sri Dorai Singh of M. C. P. receiving the first prize in Revolver Shooting (Practice II) from Dr. Zakir Hussain, Governor of Bihar, on the conclusion of the Seventh All India Police Duty Meet, 1959.



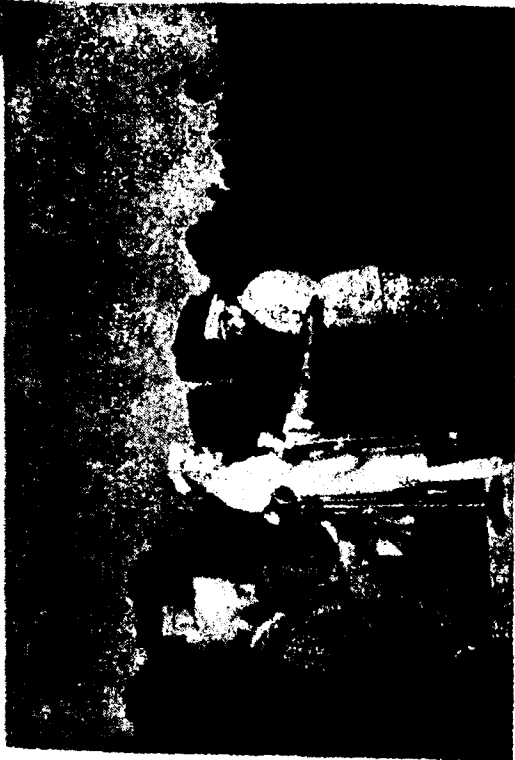


S. I. Dorai Singh of the M. C. P. receiving the trophy for the best revolver shot in the State, from the Governor of Madras, at the conclusion of the State Rifle and Revolver Shooting competitions.



Sitting: (L. to R.) Sri G. Pasupathi, S.P.; Sri R. K. Sukumaran, S.P. (Retd.); Sri P. Kuppuswami, I.P.S., D.I.G.; Sri O. L. Burrell, I.P., D.I.G.; Sri S. Balakrishna Shetty, B.Sc. (Hons.) I.P., Inspector-General of Police, Madras; Sri M. Balakrishna Menon, I.P., D.I.G.; Sri S. Bashi Ahmed, I.P.S., S.P. (Retd.) Security Officer, Southern Ry., Madras; Sri T. T. P. Abdullah, I.P.S., S.P.; Sri S. Nagalingam, S.P.
 Standing: First row—Sri P. J. Thangaswami, Inspector of Police; Sri A. V. Thangavelu, D.S.P.; Sri R. N. Krishnaswami, D.S.P.; Sri Ali Sultan, D.S.P.; Sri G. A. Ray, D.S.P.; Sri W. J. Hammond, D.S.P.; Sri S. Veeraswami, Inspector of Police; Sri V. S. Doraiswami, S.I. of Police (Retd.)
 Standing: Second row—H. C. No. 1159 Kumaran Nair; Sri N. Venkatarman, S.I.; H. C. No. 1177 G. Ethirajulu.

OCT.-DEC. '59]



S. I. Paramasivam of the Prohibition Intelligence Bureau (C.I.D.), Madras, receiving the first prize in Scientific Aids (Medicolegal) Competition, from the Governor of Bihar, at the conclusion of the VII All India Police Duty Meet.



Photographer Mr. K. V. S. N.



Head Constable Krishnaswamy of the Coimbatore Armed Reserve, receiving a prize in the Rifle competitions, at the time of the prize distribution for VII All India Police Duty Meet at Patna, from the Governor of Bihar, Dr. Zakir Hussain.



Subedar Ramachandra Menon of the S.A.P. receiving a prize in the revolver competitions, at the conclusion of the VII All India Police Duty Meet at Patna, from Dr. Zakir Hussain, Governor of Bihar.

The recreational amenities have not been forgotten either. There are 2 Ring Tennis Courts and 2 Volley Ball Courts. The younger amongst the inmates of both sexes readily take to games, which helps to inculcate in them bonhomie and camaraderie. The staff freely mix with them in the games.

There is a Radio receiver for the benefit and delectation of the inmates of the camp. The Radio is switched on while the sections are not working, i.e., from 12 noon to 1 p.m. and after 5 p.m. everyday.

There is a reading room in the camp. The dailies and magazines are read with avidity. There is a temple in the camp dedicated to Lord Vinayaka. An inmate officiates as priest and carries on daily pooja. There is a school in the camp, wherein the 3 R's are taught. There are vegetable gardens and a fish pond in the camp. The vegetables from the garden and fish from the pond meet part of the requirements of the inmates.

The inmates are taken out in large numbers under the supervision of a single Police Constable

to lay roads, construct buildings and clear silt in the tanks. The Maternity Home and School in Nazarethpet and Harijan Colony at Kattupakkam and the roads in Paruthipet and Mettupalayam stand out as monuments of the excellent work turned out by the men. There are no electric lights in the camp nor is there a high fencing round it. Yet the number of escapes is insignificant considering the opportunities for escapes. This speaks volumes about the personal care and kindness bestowed on the inmates by the staff. The camp is really fortunate in that it has been conceived, nurtured and developed by a succession of distinguished officers, encouraged and supported by the benign Government at every stage. The camp is a feather in the cap of the police administration which has just completed and celebrated the Centenary of its dedicated service to the public. It is a noble example of high endeavour and symbolises the police motto "Always at your service." It is worth a visit by every one who is interested in the transformation of the self-despising destitute into a self-respecting citizen.

On begging for beggars

"In proposing the vote of thanks, the Police Commissioner of Madras solicited donations for the Home. The Chief Minister, Mr. C. Rajagopalachari exclaimed, "We have got the infection!"

—Hindu, 15th March, 1954

THE SEVENTH ALL INDIA POLICE DUTY MEET, 1959

The Madras State Police Team for the Seventh All-India Duty Meet held at Patna this year consisted of the following :

Rifle Team :

(1) Hav. 840	Kanniappan	...	S.A.P.
(2) NK. 797	Kannan	...	North Arcot District.
(3) NK. 1262	Mailvaganam	...	Madurai Urban.
(4) P.C. 1004	Rathinam	...	Madurai Urban.
(5) H.C. 1213	Sourirajan	...	Tiruchi.
(6) P. C. 1620	Ganapathy	...	S.A.P.
(7) H.C. 1278	Krishnaswamy	...	Coimbatore District.
(8) P.C. 149	Raman	...	S.A.P.
(9) Jdr.	K. B. Nair	...	S.A.P. (Reserve).

Revolver Team :

(1) Subedar Major Ramachandra Menon	...	S.A.P.
(2) Sergeant Rathinam	...	M.C.P.
(3) S.I. Doraisingh	...	M.C.P.
(4) Sgt. Waheb	...	Coimbatore (Reserve).
(5) Armourer Hav. Rajabushanam	...	S.A.P.

Scientific Aids Team :

(1) Insp. Rupert David	...	P.I.B., Madras.
(2) S.I. A. Vasudevan	...	S.B., C.I.D., Madras.
(3) S.I. Paramasivam	...	P.I.B., Madras.
(4) H.C. 790 Raghuvcceraraman	...	Madurai Urban.
(5) P.C. 708 Sanjeeviramanujam	...	Do.

First-aid Team :

(1) P.C. 3591	S. Marimuthu	...	M.C.P.
(2) P.C. 1399	P. Chelliah	...	M.C.P.
(3) P.C. 3613	T. Marimuthu	...	M.C.P.
(4) P.C. 942	M. Adaikalam	...	M.C.P.
(5) P.C. 3784	Jayaraman	...	M.C.P. (Reserve).

OCT.-DEC. '59]

THE MADRAS POLICE JOURNAL

53

Wireless Team :

(1) Inspector Sanjeeva	...	P.R. Office, Madras.
(2) Supervisor V. S. Sreenivasan	...	Do.
(3) Nk. 79 Shanmugham	...	Do.
(4) Nk. 59 Pitchayyan	...	Do.
(5) L.Nk. 171 Krishnan	...	Do.
(6) L.Nk. 186 Anthony	...	Do.
(7) Nk. 1157 R. Dorairaj	...	Do.
(8) L.Nk. 118 Sivasankaran	...	Do.

Police Photography :

(1) C.I.D. Photographer Babu Kumarasen	...	C.I.D. Office.
Team Captain: Sri G. V. Narayanan, I.P.S.,	Principal, Police Training College, Vellore.	

All the above teams (except those for the Wireless Transmission, Receiving and Mechanics, and Police Photography) were selected from among the successful participants at this year's State Police Duty Meet. The departure this year from the usual practice was that we selected about twice the number required and summoned them to Madras on 1-10-59 and 25-10-59 for competitive tests on the same lines as in a regular All-India Police Duty Meet. The teams were finalised on the basis of the performance at those tests. I may be permitted to add in this connection the thanks of the State Police Sports Committee to the Chemical Examiner to Government, the State Examiner of Questioned Documents, the Professor of Forensic Medicine, the Deputy Commissioner of Police, Crimes, the Deputy Commissioner of Police, Headquarters, the Commandant S.A.P., Avadi, the Superintendent of Police, Chingleput, the C.I.D. Photographer, the Foot Print Expert of the Police Laboratory, the Superintendent and the Assistant Superintendent of the Finger Print Bureau, Sri P. V. Karunakaran Nair, Subedar Major, S.A.P. and the Assistant Commissioner of Police, Law and Order, Western Range, for conducting these tests and for coaching the competitors.

All the persons selected in the first instance after the State Police Duty Meet were assembled on 1-10-59 for the tests referred to and were coached for one month, viz., till 25-10-59 when they were tested again preliminary to the final

selection. The training was very effective as the results showed but I submit that we could improve upon the training still further. My suggestions for this are given separately. But I beg leave to stress a point. A certain degree of specialisation is very essential before we can bag more prizes at the All-India Police Duty Meet. Certainly our winning five prizes at this year's Meet (two first prizes, one second and two third prizes) was the best show we have so far put up in the All-India Police Duty Meet. But, having seen the members of the other teams at first hand and studied their method of training, I am quite certain that our men are capable of easily beating them all in every event, if put in training sufficiently early and on a sufficiently intensive basis.

The team left Madras by the Madras-Howrah Mail on the night of 31-10-59. Deepavali concession tickets were provided for the members of the team and this resulted in a saving of expenditure on the trip. The team carried its own kitchen equipments and provisions for cooking and cooks and helpers. The men were given advances of money for expenditure on food during the journey. We arrived at Howrah on 2-11-59 at 12 noon and left Howrah by the Howrah-Delhi Express (11 Up) leaving Howrah at 8-55 p.m. on 2-11-59. We reached Patna on the 3rd morning at 7-30 a.m. The long journey was spent profitably with each team studying and practising under the guidance of the officers accompanying the team. The

members of the team were in excellent shape physically on arrival at Patna. Arrangements had been made for our reception and transport from Patna Junction to the headquarters of the V Battalion, Bihar Military Police, Phulwari Shariff at Patna, about 4 miles away from the station. The camp at Phulwari Shariff afforded barracks accommodation for the J.Os. and men (who were given a cot each by the host state). The Gazetted Officers were given tents to stay in near their teams. Pucca kitchens were provided separately for each team and there was a provision store run in the camp where the teams could buy their requirements of grocery articles, rations, etc.

There was a meeting of team captains and the working committee on the 3rd evening. As a result of a snap decision taken at this meeting, other meetings of the sub-committees for the various events with the captains for the individual items were announced—to be held immediately after the working committee meeting—and at these sub-committee meetings, rules were explained to the captains.

On the morning of the 4th November 1959, the Revolver Shooting events were inaugurated by Dr. Sri Krishna Sinha, Chief Minister, Bihar. In the absence of the Inspector-General of Police, Bihar, Sri Varma, Sri M. K. Sinha, I.P., Inspector-General of Police on special duty and Additional Secretary to Government, received Dr. Sri Krishna Sinha, Chief Minister of Bihar, and spoke welcoming the teams from all over India, stating that meetings such as this not only served to improve general efficiency competitively but that they also gave a shape to the ideal of the Unity of India and fostered brotherhood and co-operation among policemen of all ranks of all the States. Dr. Sri Krishna Sinha replied suitably, stressing that the Police Force was there to serve the citizens efficiently, honestly and resourcefully and that there was constant need to raise the standards of technique from better to still better, from year to year. Dr. Sri Krishna Sinha also added words of welcome to the teams on behalf of his Government and himself. He congratulated the Bihar

Police on building an excellent Revolver Range by means of Shramdan and inaugurated the Meet by firing a shot which opened the petals of a beautiful big paper lotus fixed on the stop butt. Dr. S. K. Sinha shook hands with all the team captains and watched the first day's competition for a short while.

Revolver Practices I and IV were conducted on the 4th morning. In the evening, the same day, the Scientific Aids Competitions in Finger Prints and Foot Prints and the Observation Test for P.Cs. and H.Cs. were conducted in the camp in different places. The Police Photography Competition was also conducted in the evening. Sri Babu Kumaresan of the C.I.D. Madras, came second in this competition.

The Governor of Bihar, Dr. Zakir Hussain, invited all visiting teams to tea at the Raj Bhavan in the evening.

On the 5th November 1959 Revolver Practices II and III were conducted in the morning. In the Second Practice, S. I. Doraisingh of Madras City came first and Subedar Ramachandra Menon of the S.A.P. came third. The Scientific Aids Competition in lifting, packing and labelling and the photography competition for non-specialists were conducted in different places. The First Aid Competition was also conducted in the morning.

In the photographic competition for non-specialists, the Chief Judge, Sri Chakraborti, Deputy Director, Central Intelligence Bureau ruled that only private owned cameras should be used and disqualified two of our competitors who had cameras given to them from the C.I.D. stock.

In the evening on 5-11-59 the Chief Minister of Bihar invited all the members of the teams to Tea at his residence.

On the 6th morning, the Rifle Shooting Competition was conducted at the Military Range at Dinapore at a distance of about 7 miles from the main camp. Practices 1 to 3 were held. At the same time, in the camp,

the Medico Legal (oral) test was conducted. In this S. I. Paramasivam of the P.I.B., Madras, came out with a first prize. In the evening, the police portraits competition and the test in First Aid (Theory) were conducted in the camp.

The Wireless Competition was held in the camp in the morning on this date.

In the night, the officers of the Bihar Police gave a dinner to the visiting officers at the Bankipur Club, Patna.

Cultural entertainments were provided for the teams in the camp on the nights of 4, 5, 6 and 7-11-59 by professional as well as police artistes.

On the 7th November 1959, morning, Rifle Practice No. IV was conducted. In this, our representative, H.C. 1278 Krishnaswami of Coimbatore District, came third.

The results of the various competitions organised at this year's All India Police Duty Meet were as follows :—

Rifle Shooting

Practice No. I—(Application—100 Yards Standing).	(1) Insp. Biswas Rao ... Madhya Pradesh. (2) H.C. Man Bahadur Pradhan. West Bengal. (3) Nk. Ujagir Singh C.R.P.
Practice No. II—(200 Yards Kneeling position).	(1) Inspector D. Venner ... West Bengal. (2) P.C. Tashrif Ahmed ... Uttar Pradesh. (3) Hav. C. R. Rokha ... Orissa.
Practice No. III—(Application—300 Yards Prone position).	(1) Jdr. Sheikh Saiban ... Orissa. (2) Const. Chandra Bahadur Gurung. West Bengal. (3) Insp. A. A. Khan ... Madhya Pradesh.
Practice No. IV—(300 Yards Snap shooting).	(1) Jdr. B. K. Mahanthi ... Orissa. (2) Jdr. Koshwar Singh ... C.R.P. (3) H.C. Krishnaswamy ... Madras.

Revolver Shooting

Practice No. I—(Application—25 Yards).	(1) Jdr. S. Gurung ... West Bengal. (2) S.I. J. N. Limboo ... West Bengal. (3) S.I. Niranjana Singh ... Punjab.
Practice No. II—(Attack—30 Yards) ...	(1) S.I. Doraisingh ... Madras. (2) Insp. Parsu Ram Dewan. West Bengal. (3) Cmt. M. E. DeCunha ... Uttar Pradesh.
Practice No. III—(Rapid Firing—15 Yards).	(1) Sgt. H. B. Bay ... Bihar. (2) A.C.O. A. W. Swing ... Uttar Pradesh. (3) Subedar Ramachandran ... Madras.
Practice No. IV—(Application—50 Yards).	(1) R.I. Md. Asha Khan ... Uttar Pradesh. (2) Dy.S.P. L. J. Hall ... C.R.P. (3) S.I. Niranjana Singh ... Punjab.
Best Shot (Revolver)	... Jdr. S. Gurung ... West Bengal.

First Aid and Ambulance Drill

- (1) Uttar Pradesh.
- (2) Punjab.
- (3) West Bengal.

Wireless Transmission, Receiving and Mechanics

- (1) Uttar Pradesh.
- (2) Andhra Pradesh.
- (3) Rajasthan.

Scientific Aids to Investigation—Medico Legal

- (1) S.I. Paramasivam ... Madras.
- (2) Insp. Nicova Pillai ... Andhra Pradesh.
- (3) S.I. Sishir Das Gupta ... West Bengal.

Finger Prints

- (1) S.I. Sishir Das Gupta ... West Bengal.
- (2) S.I. K. B. Varma ... Bihar.
- (3) S.I. P. Ramamurthy ... Andhra Pradesh.

Foot Prints

- (1) S.I. K. B. Varma ... Bihar.
- (2) S.I. I. L. Acharya ... Andhra Pradesh.
- (3) S.I. D. A. Patil ... Bombay.

Observation Test

- (1) Const. Devraj ... Delhi.
- (2) Const. Swaminath Tiwari ... Uttar Pradesh.
- (3) A.S.I. Krishna Gopal ... Delhi.

Police Portraits

- (1) H.C. D. S. Shrivarkar ... Bombay.
- (2) Const. Devraj ... Delhi.
- (3) A.S.I. Poornananda Mohanthi ... Orissa.

Police Photography—Amateur

- (1) Insp. K. P. Sinha ... Bihar.
- (2) S.I. K. B. Varma ... Bihar.
- (3) S.I. Sishir Das Gupta ... West Bengal.

Lifting and Packing Exhibits

- (1) S.I. R. S. Kunar ... Bihar.
- (2) S.I. G. S. Pradhan ... Orissa.
- (3) S.I. Sishir Das Gupta ... West Bengal.

Scientific Aids Competition Trophy for the teams standing 1st, 2nd and 3rd :—

- (1) Andhra Pradesh.
- (2) West Bengal.
- (3) Bihar.

Police Photographers

- (1) J. P. Tarafdar ... West Bengal.
- (2) E. Kumaresan ... Madras.
- (3) R. K. Moorthy ... Andhra Pradesh.

The following is an abstract of the number of prizes won by the various States :—

Name of States	Number of First Prizes	Number of Second Prizes	Number of Third Prizes
Madras	2	1	2
Mysore	...	...	1
Madhya Pradesh	1	...	2
Orissa	2	...	1
Bombay	1	...	...
Bihar	4	2	...
West Bengal	4	4	4
Rajasthan	...	...	1
Uttar Pradesh	3	3	1
C.R.P. Neemuch	...	2	1
Delhi	1	1	1
Kerala	...	...	...
Jammu and Kashmir	...	...	...
Tripura	...	1	2
Punjab	...	...	...
Assam	...	3	2
Andhra Pradesh	...	...	...
Andaman and Nicobar	...	...	...

The Meet concluded on the 7th evening at an impressive function attended by the elite of Patna Society. The evening's programme commenced when the Governor of Bihar arrived and mounted the dais. He was flanked by the Director of the Intelligence Bureau, New Delhi, and Mr. Mithilesh Kumar Sinha, Inspector-General of Police (Special) Bihar, on his right and left respectively. The Governor of Bihar was presented with a Guard of Honour. Thereafter the Director welcomed the Governor and other guests in a speech in which he explained the history and purpose of the Police Duty Meet. He also stated how, under difficult circumstances, the police were guarding the 2500 mile-long northern frontier of India. He paid glowing tributes to the Policemen who gave up their lives in Ladakh while protecting the frontier of our country. All present then stood up in silence for two minutes in memory of those who died at the hands of the Chinese. The Armed Guards reversed their arms to honour the memory of the brave policemen while the last post was being sounded. It was a solemn sight which moved the audience. Thereafter the reveille was sounded and the Guard of Honour presented arms to the men who died on duty. After this the Governor presented the Prime Minister's Medals for Live Saving to a number of policemen from different States. Prizes secured at the competitions were then distributed by the Governor. This was followed by a display by the Mounted Police, Bihar. The function was rounded off with a Tea Party in the camp.

In the night there was a Barakhana attended by the members of all the teams and local invitees. This was followed by a camp-fire concert.

The members of our team were taken on an excursion to Nalanda and Rajgir on the 8th and around Patna on the 9th morning. The local officers kindly placed at our disposal necessary transport for this, free of charge. The Inspector-General of Police (Special), Patna, Sri M. K. Sinha, was particularly considerate and kind towards our team and to him we owe much for the facilities afforded. I beg leave to place on record in this report my respectful thanks to Sri M. K. Sinha, I.P., in my capacity as team captain.

The team left Patna by the Delhi Howrah Mail on the 9th and reached Madras on the 12th morning. They were given a great reception at Madras Central Station by the Commissioner of Police, the Deputy Commissioner of Police, the A.I.G., the Commandant S.A.P. and other gazetted and non-gazetted officers of the City Police and were later entertained to tea in the evening at Lutteral Gardens, Kilpauk. The D.I.G., C.I.D. also attended the tea in addition to the other officers. On behalf of the members of the victorious team I place on record our grateful thanks to the Commissioner of Police, Madras, and the D.I.G. C.I.D. for the very kind and affectionate welcome accorded to us on our return. The trip to Patna was a glorious success, indeed.

போலீஸ் நூற்றாண்டு விழா

தங்கமே தங்கம்!

BY

(A. BALAMBAL, Music Mistress, St. Mary's, Devakottai)

—O—

- (1) போலீஸ் நூற்றாண்டு விழா தங்கமே தங்கம்
பொது மக்களின் கொண்டாட்டமாம் தங்கமே தங்கம்
- (2) அந்நியர்கள் ஆட்சியிலே தங்கமே தங்கம்
மக்கள் போலீசைக் கண்டு பயந்துநின்றார் தங்கமே தங்கம்
- (3) மக்களின் ஆட்சியிலே தங்கமே தங்கம்
மக்களுடன் உறவு கொண்டார் தங்கமே தங்கம்
- (4) ஆர்வமுள்ள போலீசாரின் தங்கமே தங்கம்
ஆற்றலைப் புகழ்ந்திடுவோம் தங்கமே தங்கம்
- (5) அச்சமின்றி மக்கள் வாழ தங்கமே தங்கம்
அரிய சேவை புரிந்திடுவார் தங்கமே தங்கம்
- (6) சுதந்திர நாட்டினிலே தங்கமே தங்கம்
சுபிட்சமாய் வாழ்ந்திடவே தங்கமே தங்கம்
- (7) அச்சத்தை அகற்றியே தங்கமே தங்கம்
அமைதியை நிலைநாட்டி தங்கமே தங்கம்
- (8) கள்ளர் கூட்டத்தைச் சிறையிலிட்டுத் தங்கமே தங்கம்
கொள்ளைக் கூட்டத்தை ஒழித்தும் தங்கமே தங்கம்
- (9) துப்புகள் பல துலக்கியும் தங்கமே தங்கம்
துன்பங்களைப் போக்கியும் தங்கமே தங்கம்
- (10) பந்தோபஸ்து புரிந்தனர் தங்கமே தங்கம்
போக்கு வரத்தையும் சீர்ப்படுத்தினர் தங்கமே தங்கம்.

NEW 24

DIAMOND

MANUFACTURERS
OF
SURGICAL INSTRUMENTS
AND
MOON BRAND
(Surgical Instruments)
Stainless Steel
Goods



mithila metallic
Industries
KUMBAKONAM.

LEGAL CAUSERIE

SUPREME COURT

(1)

Cr. App. No. 67 of 1958—May 5, 1959

BHUVANESHWAR PRASAD SINHA, SYED JAFER IMAM, J. L. KAPUR,
A. K. SARKAR, K. SUBBA RAO AND M. HIDAYATULLAH, JJ.
Tahsildar Singh and another ... Appellant.

The State of U.P. ... Respondent.

[Cr.P.C. (V of 1898), S. 162, Proviso—Scope of Evidence Act, S. 145].

Per Bhuvaneshwar Prasad Sinha, J. L. Kapur, A. K. Sarkar and K. Subba Rao, JJ.

Obiter : (1) A statement in writing made by a witness before the police in the course of investigation can be used only to contradict his statement in the witness-box and for no other purpose ; (2) statements not reduced in writing by the police officer cannot be used for contradiction ; (3) though a particular statement is not expressly recorded, a statement that can be deemed to be part of that expressly recorded can be used for contradiction, not because it is an omission strictly so called, but because it is deemed to form part of the recorded statement ; (4) such a fiction is permissible by construction in the following three cases : (i) when a recital is necessarily implied from the recital or recitals found in the statement ; (ii) a negative aspect of a positive recital in a statement ; and (iii) when the statement before the police and before the court cannot stand together. It is for the trial court to decide in each case after comparing the part or parts of the statement recorded by the police with that made in the witness-box to give a ruling having regard to the above principles whether the recital intended to be used for contradiction satisfies the requirements of law.

The object of Section 162 Cr.P.C. is to impose a general ban against the use of statements made before the police and no statement made by any person to a police officer or any record thereof or any part of such statement or record can be used to any purpose. The proviso engrafts an exception on the general prohibition, and that is the said statement in writing may be used to contradict a witness in the

manner provided by Section 145, Evidence Act. Section 145, Evidence Act is in two parts the first part deals with cross-examination other than by way of contradiction and the second with cross-examination by way of contradiction only. The proviso to Section 162 Cr.P.C. only enables the accused to make use of such statement to contradict a witness in the manner provided by Section 145, Evidence Act. I would be doing violence to the language of the proviso if the said statement be allowed to be used for the purpose of cross-examining a witness within the meaning of the first part of Section 145, Evidence Act.

Section 162 while confining the right to the accused to cross-examine the witness by contradicting the witness by referring him to those parts of the writing which are inconsistent with the present evidence enables the prosecution to re-examine the witness to explain the matters referred to in the cross-examination. This enables the prosecution to explain the alleged contradiction by pointing out that if a part of the statement used to contradict be read in the context of any other part it would give a different meaning and if so read it would explain away the alleged contradiction. The word 'cross-examination' in the last line of the first proviso to Section 162, Cr.P.C. cannot be understood to mean the entire gamut of cross-examination without reference to the limited scope of the proviso, but should be confined only to the cross-examination by contradiction allowed by the proviso.

MADRAS HIGH COURT

(II)

Crl. R. Case No. 919 of 1958 (Crl. R. Petn. No. 880 of 1958)—November 4, 1958 (Kartika 13, 1880)

RAMASWAMI, J.

Rajabather alias Bather V.

vs.

State

Cr.P.C. (V of 1898), S. 103—Search witness—‘Respectable’, of the ‘locality’—Prohibition Act (X of 1937), S. 32 as amended—Non-compliance—Effect—Sample to Chemical Examiner.

The words ‘of the locality’ do not mean that they should be living within a stone’s throw of the place of search. Nor are the words restricted to mean the same quarter. They are comprehensive and include places even within three or four miles of the place of search. But the fact that the witnesses are from a different locality will not necessarily make the search invalid or make the evidence of such witnesses inadmissible. The mere fact that the witnesses are taken from another locality should not be looked upon as a factor militating against their respectability. The emphasis is on the word ‘respectable’ and

not on the word ‘locality’. The fact that the search witness has been a prosecution witness before is not sufficient to deprive him of his respectability.

Non-compliance with the express provisions of Section 32, Prohibition Act as amended by Section 16 Madras Act VIII of 1958 will not vitiate the trial and conviction when the other evidence in the case had brought home the offences to the accused beyond all reasonable doubt.

It is not necessary to send the sample of every kind of wash seized to the Chemical Examiner in order to find out whether it was only a mixture of water and saccharine materials etc.

SUPREME COURT

(III)

Cr. App. No. 32 of 1958—September 3, 1959

SYED JAFER IMAM AND K. N. WANCHOO, JJ.

Vishwanath

vs

The State of Uttar Pradesh

Penal Code (XLV of 1860), S. 100, Fifthly—Abducting—Meaning of—Mere abduction not an offence under Penal Code—Right of private defence

When the word ‘abducting’ is used in the fifth clause to Section 100 I.P.C. that word by itself need not be an offence in order that that clause may be taken advantage of by or on behalf of a person who is assaulted with intent to abduct. All that clause requires is that there should be an assault which is an offence against the human body and that assault should be with the intention of abducting and whenever these elements are present the clause will be applicable.

Where the appellant’s sister was being abducted even though by her husband and there was an assault on her and she was being compelled by force to go away from her father’s place the appellant would have the right of private defence of the body of his sister against the assault with the intention of abducting her by force and that right would extend to the causing of death.

MADRAS HIGH COURT

(IV)

Cr.R.C. No. 738 of 1958 (Cr.R.A. No. 706 of 1958)—April 24, 1959 (Vaisakha 4, 1881)

SOMASUNDARAM, J.

N. K. Thirupathi Chettiar and others

vs

State

Madras Gaming Act (III of 1930), S. 6—Presumption under—When available

Any police officer having power to issue a Warrant under sub-section (1) of Section 5, Madras Gaming Act, may instead of doing so, himself exercise all or any of the powers exercisable under such warrant, i.e., he can go to a common gaming house, arrest the persons and seize the instruments and under Section 6 the instruments of gaming which are seized would be evidence if all the conditions of

Section 5 are satisfied; that is to say, the officer must be satisfied or must have reason to believe that the place in question is used as a common gaming house.

The presumption under Section 6 is not available when the officer does not say in his evidence that he was satisfied or he had reason to believe the information given to him that the place was used as a common gaming house.

MADRAS HIGH COURT

(V)

Cr. App. No. 281 of 1959—September 22, 1959 (Bhadra, 31, 1881).

RAMASWAMI AND ANANTANARAYANAN, JJ.

Naina Mohamed

vs

State

Penal Code (XLV of 1860), S. 302—Murder of infant child—Wrong sense of family honour—Motive—Offence—Sentence—Criminal Trial—Circumstantial evidence—Evidence Act, S. 106.

Where the facts established were that the accused disappeared with the deceased, a fifteen days’ old infant, that night and that he was seen carrying the infant sometime before the murder, at or about the locality of offence and further that his blood-stained dhoti was later recovered from the scene of offence.

Held, that the guilt of the accused is fully established.

Where the offence was brutal and callous and there is no suggestion of insanity or mental imbalance amounting to such a state the penalty of death should be awarded.

Perverted sense of family honour which actuated the accused to commit the crime cannot be regarded as a mitigating circumstance.

The accused is entitled to hold his tongue; but if he is in a position to explain the only alternative theory to his guilt the absence of such an explanation must be taken into account.

In a case where the various links in the chain of evidence have been satisfactorily made out

and the circumstances point to the accused as the probable assailant with reasonable definiteness and in proximity to the deceased as regards time and situation and he offers no explanation which if accepted, though not proved, would afford a reasonable basis for a conclusion on the entire case consistent with his innocence such absence of explanation or false explanation would itself be an additional link which completes the chain.

Section 106, Evidence Act cannot apply to shift the burden of proof in a criminal case where the onus lies upon the prosecution throughout to establish the guilt of the accused beyond reasonable doubt. Section 106 does not cast any burden upon an accused in a criminal trial but where the accused throws no light at all upon facts which ought to be especially within his knowledge and which could support any theory or hypothesis compatible with his innocence, the court can also consider his failure to adduce any explanation.

69358
NSN

Crime for the Quarter ending 30-9-1959 in Madras State

Serial No.	Name of District	Area in sq. miles	Population	Total number of crimes	Offences relating to coins	Offences relating to currency and bank notes	Murder	Kidnaping	Dacoity and preparation for dacoity	Robbery	House-breaking	Theft, ordinary and cattle	Criminal Assault	Total number of juveniles concerned	Police men for 10,000 of population
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)	(11)	(12)	(13)	(14)	(15)	(16)
1	Madras City	49.4	14 lakhs.	1,546	1	...	7	8	...	2	2	846	71	51	26
2	Tiruchirapalli Rly. Dist.	2,451.5	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	1	3	246	...	28	...
3	Chingleput	3,294.03	18,94,912	2,597	...	...	30	11	2	11	51	523	173	37	9.7
4	South Arcot	4,208	27,90,651	1,692	...	...	18	11	...	7	338	539	103	19	6
5	Tanjore	3,742.01	28,82,670	713	...	...	10	...	...	5	252	446	...	27	7
6	Tiruchirapalli	5,571.13	26,95,071	1,092	...	2	14	9	3	1	177	642	18	3	8
7	Madurai Urban	1,769.76	12,68,828	675	...	1	17	3	...	6	58	394	143	4	12
8	Madurai North	...	...	817	...	1	13	3	...	6	75	305	3	10	6
9	Ramanathapuram	5,919	23,09,938	3,323	...	...	26	11	3	10	106	495	43	17	8
10	Tirunelveli	4,337	24,45,967	794	...	...	13	...	...	12	185	30	65	52	7
11	Kanyakumari	646	8,24,000	765	...	1	6	1	2	2	92	175	109	52	8
12	Coimbatore	6,024	31,54,296	1,893	...	8	86	30	10	20	596	993	85	56	6
13	Nilgiris	1,098.14	2,79,359	95	...	...	...	1	...	...	36	47	11	12	13.1
14	North Arcot	4,654	28,65,235	1,145	...	...	...	4	...	3	230	128	...	40	5.3
15	Salem	6,894.8	30,97,220	2,338	3	1	105	35	1	13	619	1698	...	91	6

V K S

THE GLAMOUR NAME IN SWEETS AND BISCUITS

Phone 23

Manufacturer :

V. K. SAMY

CONFECTIONS AND BISCUITS WORKS
Usilampatty S. R. MADURAI (District)

Contractors to the Indian Army, Police & Railways
P. GANU RAO & SONS

Manufacturers and Suppliers of

**ARMY
&
POLICE**

- 1 FOOT-WEAR (Leather, Black Ammunition Boots, Shoes etc.)
- 2 LEATHER EQUIPMENTS (Belts, Pouches etc.)
- 3 HEAD-WEAR
- 3 BODY-WEAR } Clothing Equipments
- 3 LEG-WEAR }
- 4 BADGES OF ALL RANKS

Office : 12 DERA VENKATASWAMY NAIDU STREET
TRIPPLICANE, MADRAS 5

Factory : MADRAS AND PALLAVARAM

கனம் அமைச்சர் உயர்நீரு. பக்தவத்சலம் அவர்களுக்கு

ஸ்ரீமதி பாலாம்பாள் இயற்றிய

வ ர வே ற் பு கீ த ம்

16-11-58

வருக ! வருக ! வருக ! வருக !
எங்கள் அமைச்சர் கனம் பக்தவத்சலம் வருகவே !

(1) அறிவு மிக்க அமைச்சரே வருக !
ஆற்றல் மிக்க அண்ணலே வருக !
ஆலய அறப்பணி அமைச்சரே வருக !
அருமை மிக்க எங்கள் பக்தவத்சலம்

(வருக !)

(2) மக்கள் பசியைப் போக்கிடவும்
உணவு உற்பத்தி பெருக்கிடவும்
நவீன யந்திர சாதனங்களை அளித்தே
விவசாயிகளுக்கு ஊக்க மளித்திட்ட
எங்கள் பக்தவத்சலம்

(வருக !)

(3) சிறைச் சாலைகளைச் சீர்ப்படுத்தி
மதுவிலக்கை அமல் நடத்தி
காதி விற்பனையைப் பெருக்கி
குடிசைத் தொழிலுக் காக்கமனித்த
அமைச்சர் பக்தவத்சலம்

(வருக !)

(4) போலீசின் நிர்வாகத்தைத்
திறம்பட நடத்தியும்
மாபெரும் சாதனங்கள் பல
ஐந்தாண்டு திட்டத்தில் வகுத்திட்டீர்
எங்கள் அன்புமிக்க அமைச்சர்

(வருக !)

(5) நாளும் உங்கள் புகழ் ஓங்கி
நாடும் நன்றாய்ச் செழித்திடவே
நாங்கள் வாழ்த்துவோம்
இறைவனைப் போற்றுவோம் ! !

(வருக !)

Telephone : No. 41

Telegram : "MYDEENCO"

Always Use Mydeen Tobacco

E. S. MYDEEN & CO
KUMBAKONAM





Printed by M. G. Daniel at Thompson & Co Private Ltd (Minerva Press) 33 Broadway Madras 1
and Edited and Published by C. V. Narayanan, M.A., I.P.S., Principal, Police Training College, Vellore.